

Emirati Studies

All copyrights are reserved
for the Ministry of Higher Education and Scientific Research
First Edition –Abu-Dhabi-2014

Disclaimer: The thoughts and opinions expressed in this book are those of the individual contributors alone and do not necessarily reflect the views of the publisher.

ISBN 978-9948-22-512-6

1. Contemporary Emirati Society.
2. Social Development in the United Arab Emirates.
3. Economic and Cultural Growth in The United Arab Emirates.
4. Domestic and Foreign Policy of The United Arab Emirates.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, distributed, or transmitted in any form or by any means, including photocopying, recording, or other electronic or mechanical methods, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

Ministry of Higher Education and Scientific Research
United Arab Emirates - Abu Dhabi - Alkarama Street – Alburj Aldowali - The 16th Floor
Phone : 00971 2 6990000 – Fax : 00971 2 4455442
P.O. Box : 45253 – Email : mothers.gov.ae

Emirati Studies

Revised and Edited by

Dr. Aqil Kazim

Dr. Ali AlGhafli

Under the Supervision of

Professor Mohamed Abdullah Albaili

Ministry of Higher Education and Scientific Research

Contents

Preface : HE. Sheikh Hamdan bin Mubarak Al Nahyan	1
Introduction : Professor Mohamed Abdulla Al Baili	4
Chapter one : Comprehensive Development in the UAE Dr. Ali Ahmed Al Ghaffi	12
Sheikh Zayed : The Founder of the UAE	13
The Process of Development Contributions	17
The Major Characteristics of the Development Process in the UAE	20
Human Beings Constitute the Top Priority of UAE Leadership	27
The Young Emirati Generation	33
Conclusion : The UAE is Confident about the Future	39
Chapter Two : The History of the UAE Prof. Hassan Al Naboudah	48
Historical Origins	49
Arabic and Islamic Origins	55
European Expansion in the Indian Ocean	61
The Al Qawasim Coalition	64
The Bani Yas Alliance	71
The Foundation of the UAE Federation and the National, Regional and International Contributions	87
Chapter Three : The Main Geographical Features of the UAE Dr. Saif Al Qaydi	104
The Geographical Location of the UAE	104
The Political Borders of the UAE	105
The Physical Characteristics of the UAE	108
Climatic Conditions	109
Summary of the UAE Economic Geography	125
The Importance of the Contribution of Natural, Economic and Human Resources in the Economic Stability of the UAE	138
	141
Chapter Four : The UAE Domestic Policy Dr. Nasrin Murad	150
Basic Constitutional Principles	152
The Development and the Emergence of the State	156
Membership in the Political Community	156
Political Institutions / Federal Authorities	161
The Relations between the Federal Government and the Local Governments	176

Chapter Five : UAE Foreign Policy Dr. Mohamed bin Hwaiden	118
The Definition of Foreign Policy	188
The Goals of the UAE's Foreign Policy	192
Constructing the UAE's Foreign Policy	193
Determinants Influencing the Making of Foreign Policy	195
The UAE Foreign Policy Toward Key Issues	198
UAE Foreign Aid	212
The UAE's Position in Global Indicators	215
Chapter Six : Social Systems in the Emirati Contemporary and Traditional Society 224	
Dr. Maitha Salem Al Shamsi	
Social Systems in the UAE Traditional Society	224
The Traditional Family System	225
The Tribal System	237
Communication and Social Cohesion System	243
The Social Solidarity System	249
The Transformation of Social Systems	253
Transformations in the Tribal System	254
Alterations in the Family System	256
Changes in the System of Social Solidarity	265
Changes in the Social Communication System	266
Chapter Seven : Social Development in the UAE Dr. Salama AlRohomi	274
The Meaning of Social Development and Social Services	274
Man is the end and the means of social development	274
The Concept of Social Development and Social Services	276
Responsibilities of Social Solidarity	280
Social Welfare	285
Social Development	294
Women's Empowerment	298
Support and Care for Young People	304
Government Housing Services	309
Health Safety	312
Caring for New Muslims	315
Volunteer Work in the UAE Society	316
Human Development indicators of the UAE	318

Chapter Eight : Population and Urban Regions in the UAE Dr. Aqil Kazim	328
Population in the UAE Society	329
Population Size	331
Population Growth	335
Population Growth Factors	340
Characteristics of the Demographic Structure in the UAE	354
Demographic Diversity in the UAE	362
Urbanization : The Development of Cities in the UAE	368
Factors of City Development	368
Stages of City Development	371
The Characteristics of the Cities in the UAE	376
The Competitiveness of the UAE Cities on the Global Scale	378
Chapter Nine : Economic Development in the UAE Dr. Fatma Alshamsi	396
Stages of Economic Development	399
The Economic Policy of the UAE	402
The Oil and Gas Sector	407
Development of Infrastructure	409
Development in the Production and Services Sectors	412
The Contribution of Economic Sectors in the Gross Domestic Production - GDP	415
The Evolving UAE Companies and their Status in the Global Economy	422
Chapter Ten : Energy in the United Arab Emirates Dr. Abdulla Abdul-Aziz Alnajjar	436
Clean Energy in the United Arab Emirates	438
Definition of Energy, its Forms and International Status	438
The United Arab Emirates as Platform for Renewable and Clean Energy	441
The Efforts of the UAE in the Development and Use of Clean Energy	444
Masdar City	444
Zayed Future Energy Award	447
The UAE Hosts the International Renewable Energy Agency “Irena” Headquarters	448
The UAE Ecological Footprint	449
Diversification of Energy Sources	451
Sustainable Cities	459
Green Economy Initiative	459
Sustainable Buildings	460
Models for Sustainable Cities	462

Chapter Eleven : Future Visions Dr. Mohamed Salim Al Mazrouei	478
The Rules and Basics of Future Visions	481
The Philosophy of the Emirates Vision 2021:	481
The Philosophy of the Abu Dhabi Vision 2030	483
The Prospects of Future Visions (State Development):	487
Frameworks of the State Development in the Two Visions:	493
Pillars of the Future Visions	499
The Emirates Vision 2021	499
The Abu Dhabi Vision 2030	502

Preface

Since the foundation of the UAE Federation, the United Arab Emirates has taken enormous leaps forward in both development and growth. In record time, the UAE has transformed from an emerging state into a country that has stunned the world with its groundbreaking economic, social, cultural, political, environmental, and humanistic achievements. Undoubtedly, these profound contributions ostensibly epitomize the visions of the founding pioneers, who laid the cornerstones of the state. These miraculous accomplishments are remarkable manifestations of the commitments of a pioneering generation who made tremendous efforts to achieve prosperity for their nation. Subsequently, the Emirati people have perpetually expressed their gratitude for these sacrifices by their uncompromising dedication to their country, as well as through their impressive contributions to the developmental process. Today, under the leadership of the second-generation pioneers, the UAE continues to fulfill the dream that originally captured the imagination of the founding fathers. The wise leadership of the UAE is relentlessly dedicated to continuing the sustainable development of their country, shoulder-to-shoulder with their people, to achieve superiority in all fields, regionally and globally.

The UAE has a glorious past, one deeply rooted in a memorable civilization based on Islamic religion and authentic Arab traditions. As a great nation looking forward toward the future, the UAE is a unique example of the intersection between past and present, as well as the amalgamation of domestic heritage and national ethics. The UAE is an incarnation of cultural hybridity, where indigenous conventions are blended with contemporary attitudes. Today, the UAE is extensively involved in global civilization by advocating unprecedented initiatives in several economic, cultural, political, ecological and humanistic fields.

Within this context, the following book aims to introduce a wide spectrum of detailed and comprehensive studies focused on the UAE. Its aim is to reinforce identity and national affiliation, as well as to underscore and enhance national achievements. The book also aims to identify the major social issues integral to UAE society, and to augment national unity. To these ends, the book will explore the most significant aspects of the comprehensive development indispensable to UAE society, subsequently highlighting the efforts of wise leaders in promoting the advancement of the nation. Moreover, the book will illustrate the contributions of Emirati citizens to the process of development, and emphasize the vital and pioneering role of the UAE in all spheres of global competition.

The chapters of this book combine topics endorsing Emirati identity and those exploring aspects of excellence and distinctions achieved by the UAE in the process of economic development. Additionally, this project is designed as a textbook for pedagogical purposes. It aims to provide professors, teachers, and students with a rich variety of in-depth and extensive studies on Emirati society in order to push the boundaries of the educational process in the UAE. Capturing the impressive achievements of the UAE is a multifaceted and complex process encompassing sentimental, intellectual, and epistemological trajectories deeply entrenched in the UAE collective consciousness.

It is quite impossible to fully encapsulate the unlimited scope of knowledge, information, contributions, and aspirations of the UAE in a single book. Therefore, teachers and students are invited to take the book as a point of departure toward studying the historical achievements of the UAE. Academically, the book is a breakthrough in Emirati studies, incorporating a balanced curriculum that combines

epistemological knowledge with emotional values and norms. There is no doubt that educators are fully aware of the importance of engaging their students in school and university curriculums that incorporate the knowledge and aspirations shaping the UAE in its past, present, and future.

This book provides a platform for teachers, instructors, and students, opening new horizons of scientific investigation in the area of Emirati studies. As an interdisciplinary study, the book explores new research in a multiplicity of academic specializations. The book is designed to encourage students to conduct further analysis in related areas of study essential to the UAE. As an integral part of the social fabric of the country, Emirati students have been engaged in on-going dialogues to promote an intimate sense of belonging to their nation. The book also underscores the significance of enhancing national identity and the insatiable spirit of the Union, highlighting successful national contributions on all levels. This book also captures the distinctive achievements of the UAE worldwide. Unquestionably, Emirati students who study the book will feel proud of the massive contributions of their country and its leadership.

Finally, let me express my sincere thanks to the distinguished Emirati professors who participated in the writing of this book. I am confident that the book will fulfill its emotional goals by strengthening a feeling of national belonging and an appreciation for national contributions. The book will also accomplish its epistemological goals by incorporating serious studies, disseminating social, political, cultural, economic, historical, and geographical knowledge essential to the process of development in the UAE.

HE. Sheikh Hamdan bin Mubarak Al Nahyan
Minister of Higher Education and Scientific Research
Chancellor of UAE University

Introduction

This book consists of eleven chapters written by an array of distinguished academicians and specialists in Emirati studies. In the first chapter, Dr. Ali Al Ghafli outlines the overall scope and focus of the book. It explores the comprehensive development of the UAE by spotlighting the historical role of the founding father, Sheikh Zayed Bin Sultan Al Nahyan, in implementing long-range developmental policies on both national and international levels. The opening chapter also outlines the public fields underpinning the all-encompassing advancement process in the UAE, shedding light on the civilized and ethical characteristics latent in the contributions toward development in the country. Within this context, the chapter argues that the Emirati citizen occupies the primary focus of attention of the government due to the insightful vision of the wise leadership of the UAE. Furthermore, this chapter concentrates on the importance of raising political and social awareness among the youth of the UAE. Finally, the chapter analyzes the brilliant policies advocated by the political leadership of the UAE in negotiating the major factors crucial to the enhancement of national awareness among the young people.

The second chapter, written by Professor Hasan Al Nabouda, traces the development of Emirati history since the establishment of the UAE Federation under the leadership of Sheikh Zayed and the rulers of the Emirates. This chapter examines domestic history from different perspectives in order to underscore the nobility of human existence deeply rooted in the soil of the UAE, and draws attention to the major historical upheavals that led to the rise of modern Emirati society.

In the third chapter, Professor Saif Al Qaydi investigates the UAE as a unique geographic and political location through an extensive analysis of its terrain and political borders. Professor Saif Al Qaydi describes the UAE in three main parts: the coastline, the mountainous area, and the interior desert region. In a related context, this chapter discusses the climatic conditions of and fresh-water resources available in the country. Finally, the chapter probes the economic impact of the UAE's location, underscoring the immense importance of the Emirati islands as part and parcel of national geography and domestic terrains.

The fourth chapter, written by Dr. Nasrin Murad, deals with the domestic policy of the UAE. This chapter identifies the substantial political dimensions of the UAE's governing policies, policies that incarnate represent a unique political experience in the Arab world. The chapter also pinpoints the basic constitutional rules elemental to the UAE, arguing that the concept of citizenship is inseparable from individual membership in the political community. Furthermore, this chapter briefly illustrates the genesis and evolution of the UAE Federation, exploring significant issues essential to the Federal political system in the UAE. Finally, the chapter explores the relationships between the Federal government and its local counterparts, accentuating the legislative, judicial and executive roles of the political institutions.

In Chapter Five, Dr. Mohamed Bin Huweiden focuses on the interactive relationship between the UAE and central players in the international political arena, foregrounding the prominent position of the UAE in the global context. Consequently, this chapter examines the foundations and points of departure fundamental to UAE foreign policy, exploring regional and international paradigms. Moreover, this chapter outlines the efforts of the UAE in consolidating security

and welfare for its people and the people of other countries by demonstrating the UAE's stance toward national, regional, and global issues. The chapter also refers to the omnipresent position of the UAE on the global level in the light of related indicators and statistical accounts. Finally, the chapter delves into the occupied Emirati islands, emphasizing the relentless efforts to settle this problem, which is considered as a national priority issue.

The sixth chapter, written by Dr. Maitha Al Shamsi, discusses the construction of social systems in the UAE on the levels of the family and the tribe, in addition to the traditional social solidarity system exemplified by well-known local practices such as al-faza', ash-shofah, al-ejarah, and ad-dakhlah. The chapter also explores the role of institutions contributing to social communication and social cohesion in the UAE such as almasjid and almajlis. Furthermore, the chapter elucidates the issues that influenced the role of traditional social institutions since the foundation of the UAE Federation, capturing the impact of such transformations on modern-day social life.

In Chapter Seven, Dr. Salama Al Rahoumi examines issues related to social development in the UAE. The chapter brings to focus aspects of social growth in modern Emirati society. According to Dr. Al Rahoumi, social development comprises social services created for individuals to fulfill their basic material and spiritual needs. It also includes development of the people through productive training and empowerment in order to help them compete successfully in the work place. Approaching human beings as simultaneously the ends and the means of development, this chapter underscores the role of the state in fulfilling the basic requirements of the unprivileged sectors in society, such as people with special needs, people in remote

areas, and low-income families. The chapter also refers to the success of the state in empowering women and youth. Finally, the chapter illuminates the competitive position attributed to the UAE worldwide, particularly in the health sector, according to several social development indicators.

The eighth chapter, written by Dr. Aqil Kadhem, prioritizes the issue of demography and urbanization in the UAE. Targeting demographical and urban development in the UAE, this chapter is divided into two parts: the first part discusses key demographical aspects integral to UAE society, while the second part traces urban development in the country. Negotiating a corpus of demographical data, this chapter provides insight into related demographical variants contingent upon the economic, social, and cultural development of the UAE. In the same scenario, the chapter investigates significant factors buttressing urban development in the country in addition to providing a meticulous analysis of the peculiar features characterizing Emirati cities. Spotlighting the modernity of UAE cities, the chapter describes an ultra-modern pattern of sophisticated infrastructure that underpins Emirati cities, where basic services and means of luxury and comfort are widely available. According to Dr. Kadhem, Emirati cities vigorously compete with other global cities since the former are equipped with cutting-edge telecommunication technology in addition to a network of modern transportation.

In Chapter Nine, Dr. Fatema Al Shamsi investigates the most important stages of economic development in the UAE, illustrating key economic sectors in the country and their contribution to the UAE's gross domestic production. Additionally, the chapter discusses various dimensions related to operative domestic economic development in the areas of production and services. The chapter also examines the momentous role

of leading authorities and governmental institutions on the local and federal levels in securing an environment that facilitates economic development by establishing a solid infrastructure nationwide. This chapter clarifies the on-going contributions of the UAE to the global economy, highlighting the vital economic engagement of UAE companies in mega-projects all over the world. Finally, the chapter refers to the distinctive status achieved by UAE companies in terms of economic competition on the global stage.

The tenth chapter, written by Dr. Ahmed Al Najjar, is concerned with energy issues in the UAE. This chapter approaches several concepts and applications related to clean and sustainable energy in the UAE, revealing available technological alternatives in the domain of energy generation. The chapter discusses the efforts and initiatives of the UAE in using clean and renewable energy. Additionally, the chapter demonstrates the pioneering initiatives of the UAE, both nationally or through cooperation with international partners, that aim to confront current and future ecological challenges. Moreover, the chapter refers to the practical applications implemented by the UAE in the area of energy, emphasizing the importance of the establishment of sustainable cities.

Finally, in Chapter Eleven, Dr. Mohamed Al Mazroui concludes the vivid argument of this book by exploring the future vision of the UAE. The chapter primarily studies the means of achieving the aims of the UAE's future vision in the light of planned governmental activities in the coming years, and within the framework of the targeted contributions and resources that will be secured by local and federal institutions. The chapter also analyzes the federal government's vision (2021) in addition to the vision of Abu-Dhabi (2030), exploring the philosophy

and development processes these two visions aim to achieve. Furthermore, the chapter spotlights the joint and extended efforts of governmental institutions in the implementation of scientific strategic planning to realize the aims of prosperity, stability, and welfare for the future generations.

Professor Mohamed Abdulla Al Baili
Deputy Vice Chancellor for Academic Affairs
United Arab Emirates
Chair of Emirati Studies Course Committee

Chapter one

Comprehensive Development in the United Arab Emirates

A large, abstract graphic element occupies the bottom half of the page. It consists of several overlapping diagonal bands in shades of gray and white. The bands are oriented from the top-left towards the bottom-right. The darkest band is positioned centrally, with lighter bands layering over it. This graphic creates a sense of depth and movement at the base of the page.

Chapter One

Comprehensive Development in the United Arab Emirates

Dr. Ali Ahmed Al Ghafli

Introduction

The United Arab Emirates was established on the second of December, 1971, and it was subsequently acknowledged by the entire world as a sovereign nation state. In the aftermath of the declaration of the UAE as a self-governing autonomous state, the seven Emirates comprising the constitutional federation were not separate entities anymore. The seven Emirates were now inseparably united by a national constitution underpinning the political structure of the country, delineating the contours of the relationship of the seven Emirates and the federal government, and outlining the authorities of the federal government. Furthermore, the UAE constitution delineates the political community living within the confines of the state. It also lays the foundations of domestic stability by identifying the responsibilities and terms of reference for the government in relation to individual rights and duties.

The UAE owns all basic state symbols, such as the national flag, distinguished by its expressive colors, the national anthem, characterized by its solid musical rhythms, and the falcon symbol, which constitutes the official logo of the country. These audio-visual symbols crystallize the meanings of national pride and cohesion, giving a vivid expression of the Emirati state as a strong and integrated entity. Unequivocally, the UAE national symbols embody the sentimental and moral dimensions related to the state in a concrete manner. They address the emotions of the Emirati citizens, constantly reminding them of their national belonging to a strong state and independent nation. Additionally, these national symbols constitute a profound image of the UAE,

recognized by the people of other countries.

This chapter investigates the comprehensive development in the UAE by exploring the following topics: the significance of the contributions of the founding father of the country, Sheikh Zayed Bin Sultan Al Nahyan, to the comprehensive growth of the UAE and other countries world-wide; the key fields integral to the comprehensive development processes in the UAE; the interests and welfare of the UAE citizen as a governmental priority; the wise policies of the political leadership; the importance of youth-awareness of the affairs of both society and state in combination with the pivotal factors empowering the national awareness of the Emirati youth.

Sheikh Zayed : The Founder of the UAE

The more the reader knows about Sheikh Zayed, the more s/he knows about the UAE. Sheikh Zayed bin Suktan Al Nahyan is the founding father of the UAE. Sheikh Zayed ruled the county for thirty-three years. Until his death on the second of November 2004, the Emirati people had not known any other ruler of their country. The UAE is the creation of the genius and theoretical innovation of Sheikh Zayed. Due to his diligent efforts, the federal state was established and grew into a prosperous nation state. He provided the nation state with its symbols, symbols which endlessly generate national feelings of pride and belonging.

The UAE is a successful and enduring state due to the efforts of Sheikh Zayed, who established its federal institutions. The Emirati people are indebted to the founding father for his unprecedented efforts in the nation-building process and for the feelings of pride he infused in them. As a historical figure, Sheikh Zayed has no equal among the great political leaders all over the world. Overshadowing all memorable

leaders everywhere, Sheikh Zayed was the embodiment of glory and generosity. In the political arena, he effectively contributed with his relentless efforts and brilliant initiatives. There are several levels of analysis we can make of the multi-layered political performance of Shaikh Zayed. Each layer of performance is determined by a parallel level of leadership peculiar to his great personality. The multi-dimensions of his inimitable talent vary according to the multiplicity of concerns embraced by his matchless genius. The charismatic personality of Sheikh Zayed is a unique blend of sincere faith, social prestige, cognitive experience, mental capabilities and emotional intelligence forming an unparalleled example of political leadership.

On the domestic level, Sheikh Zayed gave priority to the establishment of the modern federal state institutions. He was aware of the importance of building federal institutions as a constitutional link unifying the citizens of the seven Emirates. He realized the positive consequences of establishing the federal structure on the present and future of the Emirati people regionally and internationally. Sheikh Zayed vigorously led the UAE, thrusting the country into an accelerating and accumulative developmental track. He also disparaged the factors which would undermine the federal state. Moreover, Sheikh Zayed laid the foundations of a domestic free economy, diversifying the sources of national income. He also aimed to push the boundaries of public policy sectors to encompass all the services required by the citizens and the non-Emirati population. This included enhancing the role of the government in fulfilling local social needs and confronting social problems in the sectors of education, health, housing, transportation, telecommunication and other vital service sectors. In the light of these efforts, the federal state has achieved tremendous success on the domestic and foreign fronts since its establishment.

The founding father also encouraged the emergence and expansion of new elite groups in the growing Emirati society in order to work side-by-side with the government. These elite groups included qualified and specialized cadres of professionals such as teachers, doctors, diplomats, engineers, and university professors, in addition to experienced administrators and executives. As a leader with insightful vision, Sheikh Zayed encouraged competent national cadres to be involved in activities which supported the emerging nation. Under his leadership, educated Emirati personnel and professional experts strenuously participated in the nation-building process. The effective and exuberant participation of the Emirati elite groups in different social domains and their undeniable role in achieving the aims of comprehensive development is a testimony of the far-reaching and robust vision of the founding father.

On the regional level, Sheikh Zayed performed a dynamic role in settling several Arab-Arab conflicts and disagreements. Thanks to his wisdom, the Emirati political leadership built bridges of cooperation with regional partners, offering humanitarian assistance and supporting relief to neighboring countries to alleviate misery and suffering. Under the leadership of Sheikh Zayed, the Emirati political leadership struggled to implement the pillars of peace and mutual understanding among conflicting nations in the region, consolidating coalitions between Arab and Islamic countries which share the same religion and language. Along with his penetrating vision, Sheikh Zayed was known for his courageous initiatives which were respected all over the Arabic-Islamic world.

On the global level, Sheikh Zayed occupies a lofty status as an example of outstanding political leadership. His wise policies were admired by the leaders

of pivotal countries across the globe. His extraordinary political positions toward major security and humanitarian issues were highly esteemed by key decision-makers all over the world. His monumental efforts in stabilizing world security are illustrated in different ways, including unlimited political support and financial assistance.

The humanitarian and intellectual contributions of Sheikh Zayed transcended the boundaries of the Arabic-Islamic world to encompass the entire population of the globe. Due to his initiatives to alleviate poverty and protect the environment, Sheikh Zayed was offered prominent international awards¹. In appreciation of his efforts in establishing trans-civilizational dialogues between East and West, he was given medals bestowed by important institutions with global prominence.

During his time, Sheikh Zayed encountered enormous challenges on the domestic, regional and international levels. He courageously and relentlessly confronted several security and economic problems destabilizing the Arabic-Islamic world. He also struggled to find solutions for eminent developmental issues disrupting the world economy. As a leader with universal vision and an example to be emulated, Sheikh Zayed always supported any efforts resulting in the achievement of development, prosperity and welfare for humanity. He called for overcoming differences and coordinating efforts leading to security and peace. Thanks to the leadership of Sheikh Zayed, the UAE enjoys a bright record of contributions and a legacy of achievements in all fields. Until the present day, the Emiratis, the Arabs and the Muslim people still remember Sheikh Zayed, the legendary leader and the sage of the Arabs who showered the world with his bounties. He is truly Zayed alkhayr, the Zayed of Goodness.

The Process of Development Contributions

Since the establishment of the UAE in 1971, the country has embarked on a momentous long-term development process which it has miraculously carried out on all levels. The results of development in the UAE are unrivalled compared with similar growth plans in other countries. The ground-breaking contributions of the UAE are essential to the building of a modernized national state. On the domestic level, the extended developmental process is operative in all fields, including the political, social, economic, educational, cultural and health sectors. Further, global excellence indicators show that the UAE has broken records in the domain of development and progress throughout the world.

Narrating the story of the successful developmental plans pertaining to the UAE in the preceding four decades is a complicated procedure due to its vast achievements in the domestic and international arenas. In short, the development and growth process in the UAE targets all aspects of human existence, primarily aiming to accomplish prosperity and welfare for all citizens. Some of the contributions inherent in the process of development include the following:

Political Stability

The issue of political stability is vital and crucial to the state, homeland and citizens because it positively contributes to national security and reflects the capability of society to co-exist in a homogenous and productive environment. Political stability in the UAE is an indicator of the robust political thought advocated by the leadership of the country. It also personifies the strength of domestic political structures, enabling the government to construct and implement policies which run the affairs of both society and state. According to a recent report published by Foreign Policy Magazine²

on the issue of security and political stability, the UAE occupies position number 37 among 178 countries, which is considered as a breakthrough on the regional and global levels.

The Rule of Law

The rule of law advocated by the UAE is an integral part of the development process in the country. The implementation of the rule of law reveals the existence of official structures, specialized in legislation and enforcement of law nationwide. This process entails the unfaltering imposition of law in order to ensure people's rights, avoid any weaknesses in accounting for negligence, and eschew any abuse of law regarding the rights of others. Ultimately, the sovereignty of law in the UAE aims to secure public order and maintain justice for all sectors of society. Thanks to the rule of law in the UAE, the individuals, the companies, and other institutions in society are able to co-exist in a secure environment and an atmosphere of mutual trust. Driven by their commitments, and confident of the rule of law in a society which secures their rights, people in the UAE enjoy a safe and stable life.

Societal Agreement

Another manifestation of the continuing development process is captured in the area of societal agreement in the UAE. Due to the dominant spirit of moderation and tolerance peculiar to UAE culture, both citizens and expats coexist peacefully and cooperatively.³ The UAE hosts millions of people from all over the world who stay and work in the country. Despite the wide variations between the indigenous Emirati culture and those brought into the country by foreign expats, the UAE has witnessed an unusual harmony between both sides. As a multi-cultural, multi-lingual and cosmopolitan country, the UAE is an exceptional example of tolerance

among diverse communities coming from the four corners of the globe. Thanks to the genius of the political leadership, both Emiratis and expats have cooperated in expanding the boundaries of development in order to create increasing prosperity and enhance living standards for all.

Economic Wealth

The economic wealth attained by the UAE is considered world-wide as a paradigmatic shift in the process of development. It is a testimony to the national contributions effected by the state. The UAE economy has increased rapidly since the foundation of the federal state. In fact, gross domestic production reached 1.4 trillion Dirhams in 2013.⁴ On this basis, the UAE economy evolved into one of the biggest and most influential economies in the world,⁵ occupying the second position among Arab economies. Moreover, the UAE's economic achievements are apparent on both a qualitative and quantitative basis. The UAE possesses a solid national economy with a diversity of innovative and pertinent sectors and top-ranking companies which succeeded in infiltrating frontier markets in the regional and international arenas. Moreover, the UAE has become the favorite location for international companies searching for investments in the Middle East.

The contributions of development in the UAE are an expression of the phenomenal shift characterizing all walks of life in the country. Unquestionably, these developmental transformations, which left their imprints on the political, economic, educational, service and health sectors in the UAE, have significantly improved the living circumstances of all people in the country. By virtue of development, people in the UAE are able to live under a stable political system constructed on deeply-seated institutions in terms of structures and assigned missions. Both Emiratis and expats have reaped the fruits of a thriving

economy, buttressed by an ultra-modern infrastructure, and created in accordance to universal standards. In such an environment, families are empowered to bring up their children within healthy and safe circumstances. Ostensibly, all residents of UAE have access to health and educational facilities in addition to enjoying modern technological innovations. Conclusively, the ramifications of the successful developmental process in the UAE have made its citizens among the happiest people in the world. Thereupon, both the UAE government and people feel proud of the contributions of their country and work toward more advancement in the future.

The Major Characteristics of the Development Process in the UAE

The key characteristics of the development process in the UAE can be approached from two perspectives. The first perspective is contingent on an identification of general civilizational dimensions underpinning the progressive contributions in the country. The second perspective entails an emphasis on the most significant Emirati traditions and values triggered by the comprehensive development in the UAE.

The Civilizational Dimensions of Development in the UAE

The process of development pursued by the UAE for more than four decades not only reflects a record of quantitative growth and qualitative advancement in the political, economic, social and cultural sectors, but also crystallizes a civilizational breakthrough that should be emphasized. **The most important dimensions of development in the UAE are summarized as follows:**

- The overall process of development in the UAE, which started in the seventies, resulted into the establishment of a robust state, opening new opportunities for the Emirati people. Owing to this powerful state, the Emirati people have enjoyed the privileges of modern civilization, privileges

which have eclipsed their equivalents in other highly advanced countries. In the light of the World Happiness Report issued by the United Nations, the people of the UAE are the happiest citizens in the Arab world. Further, the UAE occupies the fifth position in the ranking of happiness on the global level according to the same report. In this respect, the UAE outranked other Western countries.⁶

- The contributions of development in the UAE provided a brilliant example to be emulated by other Arab and Islamic countries which have the fortitude to replicate the Emirati experience in their motherlands. The UAE experience with total development has attracted the attention of Arabs and Muslims from all over the world who feel proud of the Emirati achievements. The development process in the UAE enabled the Emirati people to confront the challenges of a world that only recognizes the powerful and the outstanding. It succeeded on overcoming the difficult problem of combining inherited traditions with modern advancements. Subsequently, the impressive and unchallengeable successes of Dubai in all fields, thanks to the leadership of His Highness, Sheikh Mohamed Bin Rashid Al Maktoum, have been considered as a source of inspiration for other countries, which have attempted to emulate the innovations of the Dubai government.⁷ Truly, the incontestable success of the developmental process relentlessly pursued by the Emirati leadership has opened extensive vistas of hope for other nations determined to duplicate the process of development witnessed in the UAE.
- The Emirati developmental process constitutes a tangible contribution to modern human civilization. The outcomes of development were not

restricted to the interests of the Emirati citizens, but also aimed to improve the living conditions of other people through economic partnerships with international companies. The UAE has an honorable record in this respect, and the country has continuously participated with generous donation to assist under-developed countries. Moreover, the UAE presented important initiatives which aimed to finance the developmental sectors in poor countries. In 2013, the UAE occupied the top position all over the world as a donor country for development assistance (constituting a ratio of the gross national product) according to a report issued by the Organization of Economic Cooperation and Development (OECD).⁸ In alignment with this policy, the UAE introduced other civilized contributions with universal proportions, including innovative products used for facilitating communication between the people and their leadership. Other products introduced aim to enhance the performance capacity in governmental institutions and activate international commerce transactions. Finally, the UAE offered initiatives to utilize the applications of smart technology in improving the conditions of urban life in order to enable people to find the highest standards of prosperity and happiness.

The process of development in the UAE is a momentous achievement according to all measurements, and the Emirati people deserve it. Additionally, there is no doubt that the Arab and Islamic countries who witnessed the success brought about by the process of development are proud of the Emirati project. Therefore, Emirati citizens are committed to continue the developmental process in the future. Finally, it is noteworthy to acknowledge that the Emirati developmental process

has gained the admiration of the entire world as a vivid example of excellence and distinction in improving standards of living and modernizing methods of production and administration.

The Emirati Values

The civilized development in the UAE is determined by a construct of essential values, shaping salient features which grant the UAE a special national character. The contributions of progress and prosperity in the UAE are not just financial booms improving the standards of living and quality of life. These contributions include crucial moral and emotional values personifying the thoughts and collective memory of both people and leadership. This network of values enabled the society to identify the developmental goals to be consummated, select the appropriate means for implementation, and set the limits that should be adhered to in the process of progress and advancement. Emirati values are fundamental philosophical principles which guided and enhanced the formation of both the driving forces and paths of development in the UAE during the last few decades. The same values will continue to define the salient features of the national personality peculiar to the UAE and reinforce the intellectual and moral pillars of development in the future. **These values are summarized as follows:**

■ Conservatism

Conservatism is considered a remarkably ancient school in the history of human thought, encompassing social, political and economic domains. According to the conservative school, societies should depend on practices and institutions which were gradually developed with the passage of time.⁹ The roots of the Emirati conservative society are entrenched in domestic heritage and traditions. The Emirati society

is proud of the Arab cultural heritage, and has a firm belief in Islamic teachings. Ultimately, the modern Emirati society is still influenced by inherited traditions and local values. In modern Emirati society, ancestral conventions and local values still have a tremendous impact on individual and collective life-styles. In an era of rapid economic and social development, the Emirati people succeeded in maintaining a balance between their attachment to inherited conservative traditions and their passion for modernization and progress. The Emirati society was able to employ modern mechanisms to reaffirm ancient heritage and consolidate inherited values.

■ **The Federal State**

On the constitutional level, the UAE is distinguished by the federal structure inherent in its foundation.¹⁰ State sovereignty in the UAE is distributed between two levels of government. The first level includes the federal government, which is concerned with certain authorities and terms of reference,¹¹ whereas the second level includes the governments of the seven Emirates, comprising the federation.¹² The federation constitutes the fundamental national value for the UAE. On the domestic level, the federation is latent in the collective consciousness of the Emirati people and it is recognized by all countries across the globe. Thus, the comprehensive development in the UAE is implemented within the boundaries of the federal state. The federal institutions operate as a mechanism conveying the fruits of the UAE's development to the seven Emirates. Along with the preceding debate, the Emiratis established an analogy between the foundation of the federal state and the developmental renaissance in the country. Therefore, the Emirati citizens consider the concept of the federation, the leaders of the federation, and the federal institutions as essential aspects of

their national identity and belonging to their motherland.

■ National Cohesion

The Emirati people were truly inspired by the famous phrase articulated by Sheikh Mohamed bin Zayed (2012), crown prince and deputy supreme commander of the armed forces: “We are in good condition as long as the House is united”. The Emirati people view this as a call for national unity.¹³ The Emirati people constitute a homogenous social fabric, united by strong relationships and enduring ties. These indispensable ties are an essential part of the conservative philosophy grounding the domestic social fabric. The conservative components of Emirati culture prioritize family and humanitarian efforts. By the same token, the conservative philosophy also provides momentum to national unity by inspiring allegiance to the nation state. The Emirati people highly value their country, considering it their most precious possession in the world. Thus, they constantly express their intentions to offer great sacrifice to protect their homeland. The Emirati people support their government because they realize the leadership’s importance to the security and prosperity of the state. The Emirati citizens think of national cohesion as a fundamental value, one reinforced by the gains witnessed through the comprehensive development of the UAE.

■ Interdependence and Humanitarian Tolerance

Modern societies are characterized by the principle of interdependence, that is people are interconnected by a subtle network of mutual influence determining negatively or positively their capability to realize their goals.¹⁴ Likewise, many countries have attempted to create equilibrium between national independence and interdependence through obligations. In this respect, the UAE succeeded to a great extent in achieving

the required balance. The UAE advocated the concept of interdependence as a key factor in human societies; therefore, it realized that the ability of countries to pursue their development enterprises largely depend on fruitful cooperation with others. In the same vein, equal competition with others should not lead to antagonism or hostility. Thus, the spirit of tolerance embraced by the UAE is the result of advocating the principle of interdependence. The UAE people and government are engaged in important relationships with other nations all over the world. The display of tolerance by the Emirati people consistently attracts the attention of millions of people to come to the UAE for security, peace, tourism, work and long-term residence. Countless people have participated in the process of development and reaped its gains together with the Emirati citizens.

■ Governance

The concept of governance has a multiplicity of definitions. However, in its basic form, governance includes the management of public affairs and state revenues by government institutions in order to accomplish the goals of development.¹⁵ Governance comprises a cluster of meanings involving political stability, the control of violence, accountability, the rule of law, regulatory quality and counter-corruption campaigns in addition to government competence, partnership between the public and private sectors and the government's ability to confront risks and crises. In fact, governance standards fundamentally determine the fate of efforts to develop a country. In order to invigorate the developmental process, the various dimensions of governance should be taken into account as they enable the government to execute the aims of development. The absence of the governance criteria will inevitably result in the squandering of state resources and the disabling of the public affairs which

will culminate in the collapse of the developmental process. The available data on six of the global governance indicators in 2012 revealed that the UAE has applied advanced levels of governance, surpassing Middle East standards and matching their counterparts in advanced countries.¹⁶ The success of the UAE's efforts in achieving comprehensive development are attributed to the systematic application of governance standards. In other words, the comprehensive development of the UAE was primarily realized due to high standards deeply rooted in governance practices which ensured the effectiveness and efficiency of the development process.

Human Beings Constitute the Top Priority of UAE Leadership

In the UAE, human interests are the focus of attention of the government. The aims of the nation-building process and the objectives of development are centered on human welfare and prosperity. The Emirati people and the multitudes of expat communities in the UAE, enjoy living in a stable and safe society. By virtue of the rule of law implemented in the UAE, people are protected against all forms of coercion and violence. The people living in the UAE make use of the positive opportunities intrinsic in a multi-cultural and multi-ethnic society, where relations of interconnectedness prevail. The economic wealth secured by the state expanded horizons for people living in the UAE. People from all walks of life have the opportunity to engage in the free market of the UAE. The residents of the UAE have the privilege of investing in any commercial projects in an atmosphere which encourages the ease of capital movement. In the same vein, most of the financial revenues allocated by the UAE federal budget are aimed to improve human conditions. The UAE's leadership and the government institutions concentrate on fulfilling

the interests of the people. In this environment, the Emirati citizens are prioritized by the government in terms of welfare, and enjoy the lion's share of the developmental process. However, the other expat communities in the country are also given a great deal of attention by the political leadership.¹⁷

Theoretically, any country has the ability to initiate its own developmental goals, but the implementation of these goals require a construct of capabilities and executive tools. The enactment of the goals of development are accomplished by several elements; nevertheless, the human factor is indispensable to this process. Without the incorporation of the human potential, the financial revenues dedicated to the development process will fall short from realizing their goals. The success of the development process in any country is only guaranteed if the colossal tasks are attributed to a wise leadership well-versed in political, social, administrative, economic and professional affairs.

The UAE has developed its own indigenous and unique tradition of selecting its leaders and assigning tasks to top-ranking politicians. This conservative system was implemented in the seven Emirates, and practiced by generations of ancestors for centuries prior to the establishment of the federal state. The legitimacy of the system is completely supported by the citizens of the UAE, meaning that new generations of modern Emiratis strongly believe in the conservative traditions endorsed by their ancestors.¹⁸

The Emirati people adopt a conservative ideology as a way of living because it has proved its value throughout history. Constructed on a foundation of experience, the conservative approach has constantly enabled policies of advancement, triggered progressive practices, and secured the promised continuation of development in

the future. Throughout centuries, the Emirati people have reaffirmed their belief in conservative traditions, supporting successive generations of reliable leaders who were able to further the aspirations of their nation and realize the goals of development.

Clearly, the UAE's conservative philosophy has historically proven its vitality because it is deeply rooted in genuine Emirati traditions. This system has also led to the current state of stability, prosperity and development accomplished by the UAE in all walks of life. The political system in the UAE has its deep origins in an official national constitution, identifying the roles and responsibilities of all institutions in the country. Likewise, the provisions of the UAE constitution determine the elements inherent in the federal structure of the state, the authorities of both the federal and domestic governments, and individual rights and duties.

The interconnections between the constitutional system, the conservative traditions and the wise leadership of the UAE enabled the country to move ahead, giving priority to the comprehensive development of the country. This policy strengthened the relationship between the Emirati people and their leadership. Thanks to the insightful vision and successful administration of the UAE leadership, the country was able to confront the challenges of comprehensive development. On top of that, the UAE leadership worked persistently toward achieving the goals of development, opening horizons for innovations that have no limits. In short, the UAE leadership made every effort to realize the aspirations of the Emirati people, utilizing all potential resources and available revenues.

Certainly, the UAE's accomplishments in all spheres since the foundation of the federal state can be attributed to the intelligent initiatives of the political leadership. The innovative breakthroughs in the seventies, initiated by the

ceaseless efforts of the founding father, Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan Al Nahyan and Sheikh Rashid bin Said Al Maktoum in cooperation with the leaders of the other Emirates, enabled the UAE to transcend domestic and foreign challenges, thrusting the country into monumental development.

The current president of the UAE, His Highness Sheikh Khalifa Bin Zayed Al Nahyan, His Highness, the vice president, Sheikh Mohamed Bin Rashid Al Maktoum and their counterparts, the rulers of other Emirates in addition to Sheikh Mohamed Bin Zayed, the crowned prince of Abu-Dhabi and the crowned princes of the other Emirates, collectively participated in pushing the developmental process toward more diversified and extensive spheres of innovation and progress. Identifying available potentialities, the UAE's leaders aimed to open a new civilized realm of development for the Emirati citizens. Further, the present leadership is keen to explore new areas of development within the parameters of well-studied strategic plans and in response to the requirements of the current stage in order to maintain the developmental process.

The Emirati people highly value the continued efforts of the leadership in accomplishing the developmental goals while preserving prosperity and security in their country. Indeed, international reports confirm the trust given by the Emirati people to their leadership and the government institutions of the country. According to the Edelman Trust Barometer Indicator in 2014, the Emirati government obtained the highest rate (88%) world-wide with regard to the trust given by citizens to their governments. In fact the UAE's trust rate in 2014 is six times higher than 2013 in light of ETBI. The trust in the Emirati economy hits the highest rate (82%)¹⁹ globally. These indicators explicitly emphasize the mutual trust between the people of the UAE and their government. Clearly, the government's strategies and the outcomes of the development

process meet the requirements of people and attain their support and satisfaction.

The developmental efforts have required the contributions of Emirati men and women specializing in different areas. Motivated by their national commitments and guided by the instructions of the leadership, the Emirati people play a key role in the accomplishment of the developmental goals. In the light of the vision of the leadership, the UAE has succeeded in realizing the goals of comprehensive development. Nevertheless, these goals could not be consummated without the diligent efforts of the Emirati elite groups occupying leading positions in the administrative, economic, social, educational, and cultural fields. The UAE government was concerned with the creation of a young, educated generation of trained Emirati leaders, equipped with professional skills, in order to participate in the process of development. These young leaders were prepared by specialists in extensive training programs designed for this task. A closer look at the essential aspects of the comprehensive development in the UAE will shed light on the **advantages of the framework and style of leadership advocated by the state:**

- The style of the wise leadership in the UAE is a personification of the will of the people, because the goals and contributions of development implemented by the leadership are compatible with the desires of the Emirati people. They secure the goals of advancement for the current and coming generations. Hence, the style of leadership and the achieved development simultaneously personify the general will of the Emirati people.
- The style of leadership is also based on a logical construct emanating from conservative Emirati traditions, and incarnating the inseparable union between the people and their leadership. In this context, the ruler of the country is

willingly responsible for warranting prosperity and progress for his subjects. In their turn, the subjects deal with the ruler as their father and custodian who will run the affairs of the state and society.

- Leadership does not mean the act of assuming leading positions. In fact this is a simplification of the complicated concept of leadership. In the UAE, leadership entails the strength and power to effect change resulting in the fulfillment of the interests of the people, ensuring the availability of developmental requirements, and furthering plans for progress.
- The style of the state leadership is consistent with indigenous cultural heritage and never attempted to impose alien traditions on the Emirati people. The developmental process did not violate the basic elements of the mainstream culture in the UAE. In this sense, the comprehensive development is congruent with Islamic ethics and Arabic traditions. In this sense, the UAE leadership has created a balance between the prerequisites of change inherent in the total development process and the preservation of the conservative domestic culture.
- The UAE leadership is concerned with tackling the challenges affiliated with the process of comprehensive development. The difficult journey of the UAE over the course of development triggered several challenges, challenges that were settled using suitable policies, including the initiative to preserve national identity. These actions entailed maintaining balance in the markets, securing job vacancies and promoting partnerships between the public and private sectors, as well as empowering women and supporting the Emirati youth. Additionally, there were initiatives dealing with national issues. For example, the Federal Demographic Council was established in 2009 to

achieve demographic balance in the UAE.²⁰

His Highness, Sheikh Mohamed Bin Rashid Al Maktoum, summarized the role of the government, affirming that “**We are an authority for people, not over people, and the word (impossible) does not exist in our lexicon**”.²¹ In the UAE, human beings are the agents and goals of the developmental process. People are dedicated to carry out the aims of progress pursued by the nation, and they gain the fruits of welfare and prosperity emanating from their contributions. Thus, the Emirati citizens have continually expressed their affiliation and commitment to their leadership and homeland by participating in the development of their society.

The Young Emirati Generation

Of course, the UAE is an extremely young nation. Established in 1971, it is a new country compared with its counterparts. Further, most of the Emirati people are less than thirty-five years-old. This means that the Emirati society has a wealth of human resources. Clearly, the Emirati society is moving toward a glorious future, exploring new horizons of prosperity due to the vitality and innovation of the state institutions and administrative structure, and the society abounds with a young generation equipped with professional skills, skills required for the future stages of development and progress.

The UAE continuously invests in the energies and potentialities of the young generation who will shoulder the responsibilities of innovation and progress both now and in the future. The young Emirati citizens are encouraged to gain knowledge about their society in order to participate in the developmental policies enforced by the government. Thus, the Emirati youth should be aware of the significance

of their role in the comprehensive developmental process. They should be aware of the major policies and goals pursued by their government and the massive contributions needed by their country.

The young Emirati generation should be acquainted with the knowledge of the uniqueness behind the genesis and foundation of the UAE. The young generation should also be aware of the greatness of Emirati history and the peculiar geographic location of the UAE. They should be aware of the mechanism and responsibility of the government in running the affairs of the people; subsequently, they will appreciate the importance of the federal state and the uniqueness of its political reality. They should also have knowledge of the sophisticated methods used by the political institutions in administrating the affairs of the state and the society, and their role in promulgating social peace and realizing the goals of development and motivate people to play productive roles by pursuing welfare and prosperity. They should be provided with the rich information and details affiliated with the domestic and social reality in the UAE. Above all, they should be familiarized with the various aspects of the social, economic, demographic, cultural, and educational structures underpinning the federal state. The young Emirati generation should realize the important policies which enabled the UAE to occupy a prominent position globally. They should also be acquainted with the pioneering developmental goals pursued by the government in the current stage as well as the national development plans for the future.

The UAE is more than simply an area of consumptive living and hunting opportunities. For this reason, the Emirati people are eager to become good citizens. They accomplish this by their attachment to domestic culture and indigenous social traditions. Truly, the accomplishment of developmental goals in the future is

enormously contingent upon the young Emirati people's awareness of the historical, geographical, political, economic, social and educational aspects of their country. We are confident that most of the young Emirati generation have a high level of national consciousness which will give momentum to the state in continuing the development process in the future.

Within the framework of illuminating the necessity of national awareness on the part of the young Emirati generation, it is noteworthy to refer to some national virtues affiliated with the interests of the state, the homeland, and society which are inseparable from the issue of national consciousness. **These virtues can be summarized as follows:**

- The marvelous journey of the UAE toward comprehensive development deserves to be appreciated by the young Emirati generation. Cognitive and emotional awareness of the magnanimity of this journey will help young Emiratis to understand the geopolitical and socio-economic aspects of their country in order to enhance their commitment to their government for continued progress.
- The membership of the youth in the UAE's political process is extremely important because they are an important part of the citizenry. In consequence, the increasing awareness of the state affairs on the part of the young people in the UAE will inevitably consolidate their national belonging and their sense of citizenship.
- More attention should be paid to the young Emirati generation in order to help them understand the reasons behind the success and distinction of their country. Initiating a mutual dialogue with the young Emiratis

will undoubtedly help them formulate correct attitudes toward their country and clear any ambiguities about the construction of Emirati identity in the past and at present.

- Constructing national awareness on the part of the young people will help them carry the burden of responsibility toward their own people and solidify their belonging and attachment to their country. Embodying a great political past and a driving power toward national advancement, the young Emiratis will act as a cross-generational mechanism linking a prosperous present with a glorious future.

In this scenario, it may be argued that different sectors and institutions are responsible for empowering the young Emirati generation. Reinforcing the national awareness of the Emirati youth regarding the affairs of their country will be achieved by the involvement of the youth in reading, and contemplating on everything related to their country. Alternately, the enhancement of the national awareness of the Emirati youth will be enacted by state institutions concerned with raising the awareness of the young people. This process is decisive and crucial to the UAE and it should be implemented with a high level of efficiency. The accomplishment of this national goal in a sustainable manner depends largely on the policies applied in this respect.

The young Emirati people deserve genuine assistance in order to construct a perfect national awareness which enables them to probe the affairs of their society and state. Considerable attention should be given to the manner in which the government institutions deal with the construction of youth national awareness. During this process the young people should be enlightened on the dynamic and

genuine national perspective underpinning their present, and paving the way toward the accomplishment of their noble aspirations in the future. **The most important elements which determine the preceding national perspective can be summarized as follows:**

- The Emirati people adhered to their national identity exemplified by their indigenous cultural heritage and inherited Emirati customs, comprising their mother tongue and Islamic religion. The UAE is concerned with development while conserving the genuine Emirati traditions and domestic heritage in order to counterbalance the new changes and innovations taking place in different sectors. The initiative of His Highness Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed Al Nahyan to make 2013 a national identity year is an excellent example of such an effort. According to him, “**those who have no identity have no place at present or in the future**”.
- The UAE relied on the energies of its youth in executing the goals of comprehensive development. The youth welfare initiatives were not only restricted to the sports sector, but they were widened to include cultural, social, educational, scientific and protective activities which helped young people to invest their spare time in useful hobbies. Moreover, these activities aimed to nurture young people to love the virtues of moderation and good citizenship empowering them to play key roles in the comprehensive developmental process. The government has incessantly supported young people, allocating huge funds for their training, and equipping them with knowledge and professional skills in all fields. The Emirati government steadily encouraged the young generation to be engaged in the spheres of development, investment

and voluntary work. The UAE leadership expected the young generation to participate effectively in promoting the developmental process. For this reason, extensive attention was ceaselessly given by the government to the awareness campaigns which targeted young people. In the same connection lies the national strategy for the empowerment of youth in the UAE, supervised by the Ministry of Culture, Youth and Community Development and the General Authority of Youth and Sports Welfare.

- The process of promoting the national awareness of the young people aims to widen their political horizons. Therefore, two forums titled “Constructing the Political Awareness of the University Students” were held in the United Arab Emirates University in 2012 and 2013 in collaboration with The Ministry of State for the Federal National Council Affairs. Hence the national awareness of the goals and affairs of both state and society is part and parcel of the Emirati youth value system. This process should be tackled within the parameters of the requirements of the stages of empowerment and political participation inaugurated by His Highness, the UAE president, in his 2005 speech on the occasion of the thirty-fourth anniversary of the foundation of the state.
- The fathers and ancestors have labored for ages in order construct the state and develop it in all fields. It is now the turn of the young Emirati generation to continue the developmental process by shouldering the enormous task of preserving the gains of development and protecting their homeland against any external aggressions. For this purpose, His Highness, the UAE president, issued a federal law on compulsory national and reserve service in 2014 in order to prepare the young generation to bear the national responsibility of

defending their country. The same law aims to acquaint young Emiratis with the values of discipline, self-reliance, loyalty and national belonging. It also enhances the leadership potential of the youth by providing them with an opportunity to receive military training and attend specialized classes in the same venue.

The UAE relied heavily on the energies and talents of the young generation in order to proceed with achieving the goals of comprehensive development. The leadership and the government institutions pay substantial attention to the young people of both sexes and ensure the delivery of services which reinforce their capabilities and provide the means for them to take part in national development. The UAE has become the favorite destination of Arab youth looking for residence, among the other twenty countries throughout the world. The Arab youth consider the UAE to be a successful country that should be emulated on the regional and global stage. Due to the financial opportunities and high standard of living, the UAE has surpassed many Western countries in several fields in 2013 and 2014 respectively. The UAE derives its confidence in a safe and prosperous future from a generation fully aware of their responsibilities toward the preservation and expansion of the advancement initiatives taking place in all fields in the Emirati society. The government is confident that the young Emiratis will be committed to their national identity and will remain loyal to their country, safeguarding its achievements and protecting it against foreign assaults.

Conclusion : The UAE is Confident about the Future

This chapter explored the comprehensive development accomplished in the UAE by emphasizing the leading role of the founding father, Sheikh Zayed, and illuminating various aspects of his massive efforts in the field of development in the domestic and

global spheres. This chapter also examined the most feasible aspects of development in the public domains and captured the civilized values characterizing the contributions of development in the UAE. The chapter argued that the UAE government prioritizes the interests of the Emirati citizen over any other considerations. The chapter also spotlighted the most significant aspects of the style of leadership in the UAE. Further, the chapter discussed the possible means of enhancing national awareness on the part of the young Emiratis in order to capacitate them as a generation who will take the responsibility of pushing the boundaries of development in the future. Additionally, the chapter traced the genesis and foundation of the federal state, arguing that the UAE was constructed on solid historical and political grounds. The UAE is a growing, advanced country achieving monumental progress at present and moving forward with stability toward a glorious and safe future. The UAE will remain a great country, achieving miracles in all realms of development.

The journey toward the future is always fraught with challenges, but the UAE is armed with all necessary capabilities which will enable the country to reach the farthest and most distant frontiers of development and prosperity. Ambiguity and uncertainty constitute the most perilous dangers to a bright future. **The UAE is equipped with all knowledge and resources which will help the country overcome the risks and perils brought by an ambiguous and uncertain future.**

The conservative philosophy sanctioned by the UAE constitutes **the first mechanism** which will help the country to overcome future challenges. This philosophy enables the country to move toward a prosperous future, driven by the forces of a past firmly entrenched in Islamic heritage and inherited cultural traditions. Across the path of comprehensive development, the UAE has remained committed

to domestic political and social conventions deeply rooted in history. Clearly, the country has succeeded in maintaining the balance between the requirements of change accompanying the development process and the preservation of domestic culture inseparable from inherited traditions. Ultimately, the UAE was able to utilize the skill of counterbalancing between modernism and tradition in serving the purposes of development in the future.

The second mechanism which will empower the UAE to transcend the uncertainty of the future is personified in the wise leadership of the country. Since the foundation of the federal state, the Emirati leadership has kept a clear vision of the national goals and the required dynamics which will turn these goals into reality. The leadership has skillfully identified the ideal methods of implementation regulating the goals of development according to their priorities. Furthermore, the leadership concentrated on training domestic human capabilities and qualified Emirati cadres in order to prepare them to participate in the process of comprehensive development. The Emirati people are certain that their leadership, who succeeded in achieving momentous development, will continue the process of development in the coming future.

The third vital mechanism lies in the national strategic plans prepared by the government to achieve the goals of growth and proceed with comprehensive development toward the future. In the last decades, the rigorous strategic plans orchestrated by the government were able to transform national dreams and aspirations into reality. The government is certain that systematic and scientific developmental plans will achieve its purposes in the future, resulting in the implementation of the leadership vision and fulfilling the aspirations of the Emirati citizens.

The fourth mechanism draws on national affiliation and emotional commitment to the UAE as a homeland. This mechanism invests the loyalty and dedication of the Emirati people, triggered by their social cohesion and awareness of the affairs of their country, and their unwavering confidence in the political leadership. The current Emirati generation is totally aware of the enormous sacrifices introduced by their ancestors in order to effectuate domestic development and advancement during the preceding decades. Additionally, the current Emirati generation is certain that national belonging and loyalty to their leadership, along with the initiative to bear responsibilities, constitute the essence of the developmental roadmap which will lead the UAE toward a glorious future.

Notes

- ^{1.} For further information about the global awards and medals of honors won by Sheikh Zayed, see the UAE Electronic Encyclopedia : <http://www.uaepedia.ae/index.php>.
- ^{2.} Fragile States Index. (2014). Foreign Policy, <http://www.foreignpolicy.com/fragile-states-2014>.
- ^{3.} Mohamed AlSheryani. Lecture titled “ Cultural Identities and Peaceful Coexistence.” AlEttehad Newspaper, 7January 2010. <http://www.alittihad.ae/details.php?id=1263&y=2010>
- ^{4.} The UAE National Center For Statistics.(2014). Annual Statistical Report. Economic, Social, Agricultural and Environmental Indicators. (2013)
- ^{5.} Time News Bulletin / Nashret Akhbar Assaa. (2014). ssued by Emirates Center for Strategic Studies and Research. “The UAE : An Effective Global Center”. Volume 20, No.5351, 13 March.
- ^{6.} <http://www.earth.columbia.edu/sitefiles/file/Sachs%20Writing/2012/World%20Happiness%20Report.pdf>
- ^{7.} Ehab Fekri. The Capital of Administration. <http://www.elwatannews.com/news/details/381959>
- ^{8.} Organization for Economic Cooperation and Development (OECD) Report, <http://www.oecd.org/newsroom/aid-to-developing-countries-rebounds-in-2013-to-reach-an-all-time-high.htm>
- ^{9.} <http://global.britannica.com/EBchecked/topic/133435/conservatism>
- ^{10.} UAE Constitution, article no. 1.
- ^{11.} UAE Constitution, article no. 2.
- ^{12.} UAE Constitution, article no. 3.
- ^{13.} The Electronic Website of “ The House is United / albaytmitwahid Society”. <https://www.albaytmitwahid.ae/ar-ae/Pages/Campaign.aspx>
- ^{14.} Johnson, D. W., and Johnson R. (1989). Cooperation and Competition: Theory and Research. Edina, MN: Interaction Book Company,
- ^{15.} For more details on governance, see The International Center For Parliamentary Studies. <http://www.parlicentre.org/Governance.php>
- ^{16.} <http://www.parlicentre.org/Governance.php>
- ^{17.} Time News Bulletin / Nashret Akhbar Assaa. (2012). Issued by Emirates Center for Strategic Studies and Research. “ The Federal Budget Ensured that the Citizen is the Focus of the Leadership’s Attention.” Volume 19, No. 4961, 1 November.
- ^{18.} Max Weber, the top-ranking thinker in the twentieth century in the fields of Sociology, Politics,

Public Administration and Political Sociology classified legitimate authority into three major categories : Charismatic, traditional and rational-legal. For further details on the theories of Max Weber, see Titunik, Regina F. (2005). “Democracy, Domination, and Legitimacy in Max Weber’s Political Thought”. In Max Weber’s Economy and Society: A critical companion, Camic, Charles, et.al. Stanford: Stanford University Press.

19. <http://www.slideshare.net/fullscreen/EdelmanInsights/2014-edelman-trust-barometer/23>
20. “Mohamed bin Rashid has approved a resolution establishing the Federal Demographics Council”. (2009). AlEttihad Newspaper, 11 November
21. “Mohamed Bin Rashid : we are an authority for people not over people and the word (impossible) does not exist in our lexicon”. AlEttihad Newspaper, 12 February, 2013.

References

- AlSheryani, Mohamed. (2010). Lecture titled “ Cultural Identities and Peaceful Coexistence.” AlEttehad Newspaper, 7January.
- The UAE National Center For Statistics. (2014). Annual Statistical Report. Economic, Social, Agricultural and Environmental Indicators. (2013).
- Time News Bulletin / Nashret Akhbar Assaa. (2014). Issued by Emirates Center for Strategic Studies and Research. “The UAE : An Effective Global Center”. Volume 20, No.5351, 13 March.
- Time News Bulletin / Nashret Akhbar Assaa. (2012). Issued by Emirates Center for Strategic Studies and Research. “ The Federal Budget Ensured that the Citizen is the Focus of the Leadership’s Attention.” Volume 19, No. 4961, 1 November.
- The UAE Constitution.
- AlEttehad Newspaper. (2010). Mohamed AlSheryani. Lecture titled “ Cultural Identities and Peaceful Coexistence”, 7January.
- AlEttehad Newspaper. (2013). “Mohamed Bin Rashid : we are an authority for people not over people and the word (impossible) does not exist in our lexicon”, 12 February.
- Johnson, D. W., and Johnson R. (1989). Cooperation and Competition: Theory and Research. Edina, MN: Interaction Book Company.
- Titunik, Regina F. (2005). “Democracy, Domination, and Legitimacy in Max Weber’s Political Thought” In Max Weber’s Economy and Society: A critical companion, Camic, Charles, et.al. Stanford: Stanford University Press.

- <http://www.uaepedia.ae/index.php>
- Fragile States Index. (2014). Foreign Policy, <http://www.foreignpolicy.com/fragile-states-2014>
- <http://www.uaepresident.ae/AR/NationalUndertakings/Pages/NationalUndertakings.aspx>
- <http://www.uaensr.ae/?page=0>
- www.slideshare.net/BMGlobalNews/the-bursonmarstelle-arab-youth-survey- 2014

Chapter Two

The History of the UAE



Chapter Two

The History of the UAE

Prof. Hassan Al Naboudah

Introduction

Exploring the historical dimension of the Emirati society, this chapter illuminates the originality and nobility of UAE history. The chapter also scrutinizes the genesis of Emirati history and the civilized aspects of human existence in the region including the establishment of ancient settlements and their locations in addition to their connections with ancient civilizations in different parts of the world. Furthermore, the chapter illustrates the developments that took place in ancient Emirati society particularly after Arab immigration in the Arabian Gulf region when Arabs settled on seashores and inside the oases in the region. In a related scenario, the chapter throws light on cultural, social, and economic aspects of life in the pre-Islamic Era. Similarly, the spread of Islam in the eastern parts of the Arabian Peninsula and the importance of the Arabian Gulf in the early Islamic ages will be investigated. The chapter argues that economic life in the UAE at that time heavily depended on marine navigation, trade, and pearl-fishing in addition to agriculture and grazing in the inland areas.

In regards to the history of the modern era in the UAE, the chapter briefly discusses Portuguese colonization of the Arabian Gulf and counter Arab resistance that resulted in the withdrawal of the Portuguese. Moreover, the chapter will refer to the attempt of the Dutch to reach the waters of the Arabian Gulf as well as British occupation of the Emirati shores, leading to the subsequent colonization of the Arabian Gulf region. Equally, the pivotal events punctuating Arabian Gulf history in the nineteenth century will be analyzed. In like manner, contemporary and modern Emirati history will be

monitored to illuminate the significant roles of the Emirati leadership throughout the nineteenth and twentieth centuries.

The last section of this chapter sheds light on the foundation of the federal state by underscoring the role of Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan, in collaboration with Sheikh Rashid bin Said and the ruling sheikhs of other emirates, in laying the foundation of the UAE federation. Sheikh Zayed's role from the time when he was a representative of the Abu-Dhabi emirate in Alain city until he became ruler of Abu-Dhabi will be studied. The unionist thought of Sheikh Zayed in addition to his efforts in the establishment and development of the federal state and its institutions will be demonstrated in order to spotlight national achievements in the modern era..

Historical Origins

The Bronze Age: Hafeet Mountain Epoch (2500-3200 BC)

The epoch was given this name after the excavation of the Hafeet mountain cemeteries in Alain city, which included small mass graves that could be traced to a time when copper industry flourished in the region. The most important archaeological excavations besides the cemeteries in the Hafeet foothills that date back to the bronze age are the Hilli settlement and the sites found in Emlih and Albahis¹ mountains.

Umm Ennar Epoch (2000-2500 BC)

The epoch acquired this name due to the discovery of cemeteries and historic monuments in Umm Ennar island, which are witnesses of the presence of trading relationships between the Abu-Dhabi region and the civilizations of the ancient world, particularly in Mesopotamia and the Indus Valley. The most important manifestations of this epoch include the huge mass graves, especially the oval cemetery in the Hilli area, which was reconstructed [when was this reconstructed? In the past?].²

The most important archeological discoveries related to this epoch are the monuments and cemeteries of Umm Ennar as well as the historic sites in Hilli, Shaml, Kalbaa city and the Albadia region in Al Fujaira. According to recent archeological research, the Umm Ennar region was most likely a commercial harbor playing a vital role in the development of navigation and trade in the period from 2200 to 2700 BC.³

Major Characteristics of the Umm Ennar Epoch

- The discovery and manufactures of the copper metal. The evolving copper industry contributed to the stability of the population in the region, giving rise to local mining enterprises including fusing and exporting the cooper metal.
- Laying the foundations of a stable community dependent on agriculture that used indigenous irrigation mechanisms, resulting in the discovery of the traditional Aflaj system.⁴ Porcelain pottery ceramics
- As indicated by the extensive historic monument unearthed in Hilli and Umm Ennar, the local citizens were exporting copper and importing pottery and ceramics via a commercial harbor located on the seashore of Abu-Dhabi Emirate.⁵
- The huge rocks used in the construction of the Hilli cemeteries in Alain are manifestations of the existence of a flourishing and rich society that basically relied on mining and cooper trade revenues. However, the society also participated in the development of agriculture and livestock production.⁶
- The Umm Ennar community participated in the metal-works and textiles industries. The residents were engaged in mutual relationships with other inland communities as well as the external world.⁷

From the Souq Valley / Wadi Souq Epoch to The Iron Age (Approximately from 300 to 2000 BC)

The epoch extracts its name from a site in the Souq Valley (Wadi Souq) located between Alain and the Omani shores of Sohar. The key historic locations integral to this epoch entail the archaeological sites in the Khet / Ghleila region, Albathna/Qadfaa (AlFujairah), Alqoussais (Dubai), Alqattara area and Qarn bint Saud in (Alain).⁸

Major Characteristics of the Preceding Epoch

- Archaeological discoveries testify to the continuation of foreign trade activities.⁹
- The epoch witnessed the beginning of fishing and pearl diving activities on the shores of Abu-Dhabi.
- Burial ceremonies and religious rituals were altered. In addition, changes in the potteries and designs associated with the cemeteries occurred.¹⁰
- Gold metal was disseminated. Well-designed golden necklaces in the shapes of goats or mythical animals appeared. These necklaces, which were excavated from identical cemeteries in Alqattara (Alain), Albadia (AlFujairah) and Shaml (Ras AlKhaimah), were interwoven in series made of round beads of garnets.¹¹
- Widespread proliferation in the use of spears, knives, short swords with sheaths, heads of arrowheads and pots made of stones, pottery, and bronze occurred.¹²
- The presence of human settlements in different locations in Dubai, such as the cemeteries of Alqoussais and Umm Saqeem, in addition to the coasts of

Sharijah, Umm Alquwain and Ras Al Khaima, which provides evidence of the existence of large scale foreign trade.¹³

- Studies examining the human skeletons dug out from the Hilli graveyards confirm that they belong to tall people who depended on agriculture and copper mining and that they had skills in manufacturing pottery pots, rings and necklaces.¹⁴
- The historic monuments affiliated with this epoch, which were excavated from Bahis mountain in Sharjah, indicate a change in religious customs and funeral rituals.
- Archeological finds dating back to the Souq Valley / Wadi Souq epoch testify to the extended presence of buildings in the northern Emirates where water sources and agriculture are available. This period also witnessed the appearance of defensive fortifications in highly populated areas such as the big building that was discovered in Mleeha.¹⁵
- Archeological discoveries of this epoch also reveal important information with regards to development in the methods used in the manufacturing of pottery, swords, bows, arrows and spearheads. This information is a sign of a great shift in the industry and methods of mining and smelting of metals. Related information also connotes that people in the designated region became more organized and disciplined in terms of their daily activities at that time.¹⁶
- Moreover the archaeological finds attest to the construction of a viable and developed irrigation system which preserved water and conveyed it through covered underground watercourses. Additionally, remains of agricultural products such as grains were found in the sites which suggests some kind

of development in agricultural methods throughout this epoch.¹⁷

The Iron Age Epoch

Approximately, the epoch of the Iron Age started in UAE in the year 1300 BC when the iron metal was used in different places coupled with an extended use of Alafaj as an irrigation system. The first Aflaj networks were found in Hilli and Qarn bint Saud in Alain in addition to the Almadam area in Sharjah. This period also witnessed the establishment of forts and high buildings based on the hillsides and cliffs denoting that these fortifications were constructed for defensive purposes. The fort found in the Hilli region is an example of these buildings. These manifestations signify social and urban development at that time.¹⁸

A peculiar characteristic essential to the Iron Age is the use of stamps made of stones, which refers to the evolution of some sort of writing at that time. Equally, other Iron Age stamps used for political and economic purposes were discovered in historic sites.¹⁹ In the same context, bronze statues in the form of small snakes and pottery pots decorated with different paintings were found in a variety of sites including Albahis Mountain and the Alqoussais area currently located near Dubai airport. These statutes indicate the religious beliefs held by the population of the region in the Iron Age.²⁰ The settlement pattern during the Iron Age provides evidence about an increasing population growth and a life style relying on agriculture and camel-riding to move from one place to another in the UAE region. One also could deduce that the local population developed new mechanisms in agriculture and in their daily life. Significantly, a study of the Iron Age would prove the construction of mutual relationships between the people of the UAE and the societies in the southern parts of the Arabian peninsula.

This assumption is reinforced by historical Arab narratives about recurrent immigrations from Yemen to the Arabian Gulf area.²¹

The Pre-Islamic Era (Approximately from 300 BC to 630 AD)

The pre-Islamic era was greatly influenced by the key historical events that took place in the Arabian peninsula after the Roman annexation of the Levant and Egypt resulting into the establishment of trading connections which partook of the flourishing of navigation movement in the Red Sea, the Indian Ocean and the Arabian Gulf. The proliferation of minted coins had a tremendous impact on the development of the local administrative system in the UAE region at that time.²²

The archaeological finds of this period unmasked the following:

- People of the UAE at that time were interested in manufacturing weapons, constructing multiple-floor buildings and minting domestic coins, which reveals that the local residents were aware of some advanced administrative systems.²³
- Excavated coins show that a form of writing was available and well-known at that time since the names of kings, local chieftains and deities were engraved on the coins.²⁴
- The inscriptions pinpoint that the Aramaic language had found its way to the region and had spread among the citizens after the appearance of Christianity.²⁵
- During this era, the Addor region located between the emirates of Sharjah and Umm Alquwain was transformed into a commercial center after the appearance of Christianity. Glass pots manufactured in Rome as well as iron swords and daggers carrying the Mediterranean-basin

style were found in the region.²⁶

- Monuments discovered in Delma island and other places in the Emirate of Abu-Dhabi imply that life was prosperous in the area during this epoch.
- The Christian monastery discovered in the Seer Bani Yas island is considered to be one of the most important graveyards dating back to the pre-Islamic era. It constitutes evidence about the existence of Christianity in this area.²⁷
- Historically, it is well-known that Christianity spread among Arab tribes such as the Abdul-Qais, Bakr Bin Wael and Tamim located in Eastern Arabia in the pre-Islamic era.²⁸
- In the same vein, early Arabic sources provide information about the importance of Eastern Emirati towns and their contributions to the navigation and trading movements in the pre-Islamic era, particularly Deba.

Arabic and Islamic Origins

There were many historical connections linking the UAE with the communities in the Arabian Gulf and peninsula. In the pre-Islamic era and long time prior to the rise of Islam, a number of Arab tribes such as the Alazd, Abdul-Qais, Bakr bin Wael and Tamim immigrated from Western and Southern Arabia and settled in the Eastern parts of the peninsula. After the ascent of Islam, these tribes spread across the region extending from Muscat to Baghdad and had mutual relations with other Arab tribes in neighboring areas. Christian rituals, religious traditions and other related social practices were endorsed by these tribes. In a related context, the Muslim Arab tribes in the Gulf region were engaged in the religious rites affiliated with the Haj season. However, the Arabs of the Gulf from all religions participated in mutual trading activities with Najd and Hejaz.²⁹

In the aftermath of the rise of Islam in Hejaz, Prophet Mohamed (PBUH) sent messengers to preach Islam in the Arabian Gulf and other destinations in the Arabian peninsula. These messengers met with tribal chiefs and introduced them to Islam. For example, the prophet sent Alalaa Alhadrami to the people of Bahrain – asking them to take Islam as their religion- where he met with Almunther bin Sawi Al Tamimi. He also sent Abu Zaid Al Ansari and Amru bin Al Aas to the people of Oman- calling them to embrace Islam- where he met with Jeefer and Abd, the two sons of the late AlJalandi who descended from Azadi origins. Prior to the death of the prophet the Arabs of the Gulf went several times to Madina and met with the prophet in order to be familiarized with Islamic teachings. The visits included two major delegations representing the Abdul-Qais tribe and the Azadi people of Oman.³⁰

After the death of the prophet, some protest movements led by local tribal chiefs and supported by the Sasanian Empire in Iran erupted in the eastern parts of the Arabian peninsula. In consequence, Abu-Bakr AlSeddiqe, the first caliph who succeeded the prophet in power, sent two armies to fight these apostates who refused to pay their Zakat. The first army, led by Alalaa bin Alhadrami, was engaged in war with the rebels in Alahsaa and Bahrain. The second army, under the leadership of Huthaifa bin Mohssen and Arfaja Albareqi, was able to defeat the insurgencies in Oman and Belad Almahra. Together, the two armies succeeded in subjugating the rebellion and reunify the lands of the Arabian Peninsula under the banner of Islam.

All along the era of Islamic invasions, the Arabs of the Gulf supported the troops mobilized in the Arabian peninsula in their military campaigns to spread Islam in the Levant and Iraq. The Arabs of the Gulf participated in the fighting waged by the Muslim

armies against the Sasanian Empire in Iraq, particularly in the battles of Alqadessiya and Nahawand. After the conquest of Iraq, the Muslim troops established military bases in the region. Moreover the second caliph, Omar Bin Alkhattab, gave orders to the leaders of the army to build the cities of Kofa and Basra in Southern Iraq. Using these two cities as a point of departure to achieve more expansion, the Muslim armies were able to conquer the entire territories under Sasanian rule. At the zenith of the wars with the Sasanian Empire, troops from the Gulf region crossed the sea via the eastern peninsula harbors and joined the armies operating from Basra.³¹

The Gulf region came under the administration of Damascus in the Umayyad era and the Gulf people were part and parcel of all of the political upheavals during this epoch.³² At the time of the Abbasid empire (750- 1258 AD), the Gulf region was afflicted with economic and political disasters mostly attributed to the dissident rebellions of the Zanj and the Qaramites.³³ In 1103 AD, Abdulla Bin Ali Aloyuni succeeded in uprooting the Qaramites and establishing an emirate in the eastern part of the Arabian peninsula which lasted for more than one and a half centuries. Afterwards, the Banu Aamer tribes competed with the Aloyunis for control of Bahrain. With the passage of time, the Banu Aamers became stronger and inevitably were able to annihilate the Aloyuni Emirate. After the collapse of the Aloyuni Emirate, a branch of the Banu Aamer tribes founded the first Emirate of Banu Asfour, which lasted for more than one and a half centuries. Following the collapse of the Banu Asfour Emirate, another branch of the Banu Aamer tribes established the second Emirate of Banu Jabr (Alaqiliyya), which existed for more than one and a half centuries until it collapsed at the hands of Portuguese troops.

Major Characteristics of the Islamic Era

- Continued movement of trade and navigation across the Emirati coasts. In this respect, the discovered monuments consist of huge numbers of ceramic pieces and pots made of blue Chinese pottery and others imported from East Asia.³⁴
- The emergence of Julphar located between the Annedoud and Almataf regions in Ras Al Khaima as a throbbing commercial hub at the outset of the fourteenth century. At the same time, the Arab kingdom of Hormuz was erected on the other bank of the Arabian Gulf and played a pivotal role in facilitating international trade at that time.³⁵
- In the sixteenth century, the Portuguese writer Duarte Barbosa described Julphar as a center for pearl fishing where respectable citizens, skillful sailors and wholesale merchants lived.
- The monumental discoveries of that time also refer to settlement activities sweeping the northern and eastern parts of the Emirates. The same conclusion was reached by archaeological examination of forts and towers in more than seventy sites dating back to the pre-Portuguese conquest era.³⁶
- Albathna fort is one of the most ancient archeological sites in UAE. It is located on the Ham Valley/ Wadi Ham road. Likewise, AlFujaira castle dates back to the Islamic era. There were other small forts and towers scattering cross the eastern Emirati coast. These historical sites were originally established for defensive purposes in addition to protecting the agricultural areas.³⁷
- Masjid Albadia, with its four domes, which is located on the road between Khorfakan and Daba, is considered the most ancient mosque in the UAE. This

historic mosque was probably built by the end of the fifteenth century.³⁸

- Throughout different Islamic ages, the city of Alain maintained its importance as a center of the caravan trade and a desert crossroads. The city was also the main source of agricultural wealth owing to the abundance of water and the use of a developed irrigation system (Aflaj). Islamic history books include references to the oases of Hafeet and Tawam in addition to the agricultural products grown in these regions and exported to neighboring areas. This argument is augmented by archaeological discoveries found in different places in Alain including housewares, colored pots and ceramics dating back to various Islamic eras.³⁹
- In the pre-Portuguese invasion period, the island of Delma played a crucial role as a pearl fishing center in the region according to Albakri's study of the pearl diving destinations in the Arabian Gulf. Albakri identified the regions located between Oman and Qatar as the most famous locations in this connection. Apparently Albakri meant the UAE coast, particularly the seashores of Abu-Dhabi. Albakri's conclusion was reinforced by related details found in the British Archive in addition to existing archeological evidence exemplified by colored pots and ceramics traceable to this age.⁴⁰
- The famous Venetian traveler Gasparo Balbi, who made a tour of the Arabian Gulf in 1580, composed the most ancient report on the names of Emirati cities, islands and other geographical locations such as Daas (Das island), Emegorcenon (Qarnayn Island), Anzevie (Arzanah island), Zerecho (Zirku Island), Delmephialmas (Delma island), Sirbeiaast (Seer Bani Yas Island),

Aldanna (Aldhana mountain), and Qirqishan-Cheriza (Qirqishan), which is the name of a creek located in the southwestern part of Abu-Dhabi island. Balbi also referred to other cities such as Dibei (Dubai), Sarba (Sharjah), Agiman (Ajman), Emigovein (Umm Alquwain) and Rasaelchime (Ras Al Khaima).⁴¹

Ahmed bin Majed

Ahmed bin Majed, the famous navigator and cartographer, was born in 1412 in Julphar (UAE) and spent most of his life in traveling from port to port across the coasts of the Arabian Gulf, the Arabian Sea, the Red Sea, the eastern seashores of Africa, and the coasts of India and China. Thanks to his knowledge of the sciences of astronomy and navigation, bin Majed studied the locations and measurements of the stars. He also revised preceding studies in these fields and scrutinized the geographical references of Ptolemy and the books of Arab geographers. As a result, he established the foundations of marine navigation as a new science at that time by applying the rules of astronomy to navigation. His astronomical navigation studies identified the positions of the sun and the moon and how to use them as guidelines during sea navigation. He also calculated the dates of the rising and setting of the sun and the moon according to the solar year system. He left behind him a legacy of works and poems and related verses known as the tricks of bin Majed.⁴²

The works of bin Majed gained universal reputation in the course of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries and were translated in eastern and western languages such as Turkish, Russian, English, French and Portuguese. During modern times his books were thoroughly examined by Orientalists and Gulf studies specialists. For example,

the French orientalist, Gabriel Ferrand, who studied the works of bin Majed, points out that the book titled “The Benefits / Alfawaed” is a meticulous survey of navigation science during its time and on this basis the book can be considered as a breakthrough in the area of modern navigational guidance”.⁴³

Some European scholars argue that the overwhelming reputation of bin Majed is attributed to his meeting with Vasco da Gama, who consulted bin Majed about the sea routes that led him to the Indian coast.⁴⁴ This controversial issue is frequently raised in different academic circles where people support or deny the narrative. However, there is no doubt that da Gama made use of the navigation books of bin Majed and he also sought the assistance of well-verses sailors who were aware of the navigation routes in the Indian Ocean. Nevertheless, the appearance of da Gama ushered in the beginning of a new era of European discoveries in Asia and the Indian Ocean and marked the end of Arab omnipresence in the area of navigation.⁴⁵

European Expansion in the Indian Ocean

Obviously, Portugal was the first European country which succeeded in reaching the coasts of the Indian Ocean after the voyage of Vasco da Gama, who discovered the Cape of Good Hope route in 1498. In 1407, the Portuguese invaded the coasts of the Arabian Gulf under the leadership of Alfonso de Albuquerque, who attacked the Hormuz kingdom for the first time then withdrew his forces from the region. Afterwards he laid siege around the kingdom in 1515 and was able to occupy it together with all the southern coasts of the Gulf.⁴⁶ In the coming years the Portuguese bolstered their presence in the Gulf by establishing several garrisons. By tightening their control over navigation in the region, the Portuguese remained the lords of the Gulf until the end of the sixteenth century.⁴⁷

At the start of the seventeenth century the Portuguese influence in the Gulf region began to weaken and gradually subsided due to the following reasons:

1. In 1580, Portugal joined the Spanish Union and was engaged in the wars between Spain and the Netherlands. Further, the Spanish gave priorities to their wars in North and South America.
2. The fierce Arab resistance in the Gulf against the Portuguese accelerated the Portuguese evacuation and departure.
3. The conflict of interests among European nations, particularly the Dutch, the British, the French and the Portuguese, which was triggered by their imperialistic impulses to colonize the coasts of the Indian ocean.⁴⁸

The Expansion of the British Influence

In 1600, the East Indian Company was established,⁴⁹ culminating in cooperation between the British and the Persians and providing momentum for British colonial expansion in the Arabian Gulf. The British and Persian forces launched an attack on Hormuz in 1622 and defeated the Portuguese troops.⁵⁰ In 1625 an alliance between the Dutch and British forces led to the defeat of the Portuguese navy in the southern Arabian Gulf region. Simultaneously, an army led by Nasir bin Murshid Al Ya'aribi, the founder of the Ya'ariba dynasty, was able to inflict a series of defeats on the Portuguese and destabilize their military bases across the Omani coasts. The Nasir's army in alliance with other troops succeeded in liberating Sohar in 1643 and Muscat in 1650 from Portuguese rule. It also achieved stunning victories over the Portuguese troops in all of the occupied Omani cities, chasing the remnants of their navy to the Indian coast. The fighting between the two sides extended to the shores of Africa. Owing to the power of

their navy, the Ya'arabis imposed their influence on all of the shores of Oman. Under the reign of Balarab bin Sultan bin Saif Al Ya'aribi, the dynasty extended its political and military influence to the Eastern African coast. It developed a sophisticated administrative system and a viable economic mechanism dependent on the trade movement across the coasts of Africa, India and the Arabian Gulf.⁵¹

During the first half of the eighteenth century the Ya'ariba state started to disintegrate due to internal conflicts, insurgencies and wars. After the death of Imam Sultan bin Saif Al Ya'aribi in 1718, many Omani factions opposed the appointment of his son (Saif bin Suktan) due to his young age. The conflict over leadership resulted into the division of the Ya'ariba state into two political parties: Al Ghafria, led by Mohamed bin Nasir Al Ghafri, who was settled in AlRustaq region, and Al Hanawiyya, led by Khalaf bin Mubarak Al Hanaei, who used Muscat as his headquarters. In 1728, civil war erupted between the two rivals and both of them were killed in the battles, bringing about the inevitable collapse of the dynasty. Moreover, the civil war resulted in the restructuring of tribal alliances according to political circumstances.⁵²

The Persians, under the monarchy of Nader Shah, exploited the fragmentation of the Ya'ariba state and invaded Oman. Accordingly, they occupied Muscat, penetrating across the Omani inland until they reached Al Buraimi. The Persian invading army demolished the forts and castles, spreading havoc in the region. Nevertheless, they were forced to withdraw and return to Iran because they encountered relentless resistance in Al Buraimi. The Persians conquered Oman again in 1738 and occupied the country. They remained there until Ahmed bin Said succeeded in unifying resistance forces and inevitably crushed the Persians in 1743. His army liberated the Sohar and Al Batina regions and the Persians were driven out of Oman forever.

In 1749, a pledge of allegiance was taken and Ahmed bin Said was selected as an Imam, a process which ushered in a new era in Oman.⁵³ At that time the UAE region witnessed the emergence of two alliances simultaneously : the Al Qawasem coalition, constituting a marine force, and the Bani Yas alliance, comprising ground troops.

The Al Qawasim Coalition

The coalition of Al Qawasim consisted of the Arab tribes who lived in the region extending from Ras Musandam to Dubai and pledged allegiance to the sheikh of Al Qawasim, who used Ras Al Khaima as his headquarters.⁵⁴ The economy of the Al Qawasim alliance depended on navigation and marine trade and their ships sailed to India and East Africa.⁵⁵ In the second half of the eighteenth century, Al Qawasim emerged as the most powerful Arab force in the region, extending their influence to several cities on the eastern coast of the Arabian Gulf. By reason of their power, they had the upper hand in the Gulf, controlling navigation in the strait of Hormuz. The essence of their economy depended on marine trade, which formed the main source of their financial revenues. Since their trade with India was crucial to their economy, the Al Qawasim were not comfortable with British marine activities in the Indian ocean, which jeopardized their commercial ties with India. Therefore they dealt with the British as their competitors.⁵⁶

On the other hand, the British were not satisfied with the navigational presence of Al Qawasim in the Indian Ocean. After tightening their grip on the Indian harbors, the British imposed restrictions on the ships which frequented these harbors as a pretext to control navigation movement across the Indian Ocean and neighboring regions. Therefore, the British did not allow any ships to anchor in Indian harbors without their permission in an attempt to restrict the commercial activities of Al

Qawasin in the Indian Ocean. Hence, the East Indian Company, owned by the British government, started to fabricate pretexts by intentionally accusing Al Qawasim of committing certain practices, which resulted in the destabilization of navigation in the Indian Ocean. Accordingly, the British promoted rumors about acts of violence perpetrated by Al Qawasim against British commercial ships. The rumor-mongering process aimed to stiffen the hold of the British on the navigation routes in the Indian Ocean as a prerequisite to the imposition of their hegemony on the Arabian Gulf.⁵⁷

In a related context, the East Indian Company signed several trade agreements with the Sultan of Muscat in 1798. These treaties contained various articles, among them some commitments on the part of the Sultan to remove the French out of the Omani territories and provide assistance to the British if war erupted in the region.⁵⁸ The British also succeeded in securing various treaties with Iran in 1801, which reinforced their presence in the Gulf, and were able to expel the French out of the region.⁵⁹

Regardless of their successful attempts to reach the warm waters of the Gulf by the end of the eighteenth century, the British confronted ferocious resistance from Al Qawasim, who continued to control the movement of navigation in the region. The commercial interests of development collided with the British policies of imperialism and hegemony. Failing to undermine the trading activities of Al Qawasim in the Gulf, the British authorities decided to use military force against them. Orders were given to the British political resident, David Seton, Captain David Ross, the commander of the Royal Navy Warship, and Captain Gilmour, commander of the warship Mornington, to attack the commercial ships of Al Qawasim.⁶⁰

The navy campaign succeeded in seizing some islands and command posts in the southern parts of the Arabian Gulf in 1805. Afterwards talks were held between the two

sides and negotiations led to the signing of a treaty between the British and Al Qawasim in 1806. The treaty included terms and provisions which attempted to seek general solutions for the conflict in the Gulf including the security and protection of the British ships.⁶¹

The military confrontations in the Gulf and their ramifications prove that the British exploited some incidents to impose their hegemony on the region and colonize the Gulf. In fact, Al Qawasim did not intend to attack the British ships but they looked forward to regaining trading activities inherited from their ancestors. They wanted their ships to sail in the Gulf and the Indian Ocean without the interrogation of the British navy. In September 1809, the British revealed their real intentions of disabling Al Qawasim, who formed the most powerful Arab alliance at that time. By mobilizing the navy to launch an assault against Ras Al Khaima, the British colonizers decided to burn all the ships anchored in the harbor.⁶²

The sea battle started at dawn on the 12th of November 1809. The British navy confronted valiant resistance from Al Qawasim and the local residents. Nevertheless, Al Qawasim were stricken with heavy losses as a result of the use of fire arms and extensive artillery shelling by the British forces. According to historical reports, the British campaign did not achieve its military goals because Al Qawasim, in spite of the defeat, were able to reorganize their troops and save most of their ships from destruction.⁶³

In 1814, Al Qawasim and the British authorities, represented by the Eastern Indian Company, signed a treaty which emphasized the desire of the two parties to initiate relations of friendship. The provisions and terms of the treaty focused on the necessity of achieving peace in the region and securing the freedom of trade for both parties. The two parties also pledged to respect the flag of each other and they

agreed to open the harbors for all ships owned by both of them.⁶⁴ However, this treaty did not last for a long time due to the strict policies adopted by the new British ruler of Bombay, who plotted to use violence once more against Al Qawasim under the allegation of restoring peace to the Gulf. The real motives for the intended campaign were driven by British imperialistic desires to occupy the entire Gulf region.

Due to instructions issued by the British Governor-General of India, the Bombay government ordered the British resident in Iraq, Captain Robert Tailor, to prepare a report including details about the harbors under the control of Al Qawasim, an evaluation of their military power and a list of the tribes in alliance with them. The report was submitted in the summer of 1818.⁶⁵ It became apparent that the British authorities in India planned to wage war against the strongholds of Al Qawasim in order to uproot their military forces. The British proceeded with their aggressive assault, ignoring all the recurrent attempts of Al Qawasim to reach a lasting and durable peace agreement with them.

The British Military Campaign Against Al Qawasim (1819-1820)

Under an extensive cover of artillery fire, British warships attacked Ras Al Khaima on the 3rd of December 1819. Ignoring the high rate of victims and casualties, the imperialistic forces escalated their assault, which continued for several days. On their part, Al Qawasim and the local citizens waged heroic battles against the aggressors but the lack of ammunition and the intensity of the navy fire compelled them toward a conditional surrender. The subsequent negotiations between the two sides aimed to reach a peaceful settlement of the conflict. The negotiations started after the release of Hasan bin Rahma, the Sheikh of Ras Al Khaima and the rest of the ruling leaders of the troops.⁶⁶

In January 1820, the commander of the military campaign held negotiations with a number of Emirati sheikhs including Sultan bin Saqr, the Sheikh of Al Qawasim, Shakhbut bin Dhiyab, the Sheikh of Abu-Dhabi, and Hasan bin Rahma, the Sheikh of Ras Al Khaima. The negotiations led to a preliminary agreement in preparation for endorsing a General Peace Treaty which was inevitably signed by all the Sheikhs of the UAE and Bahrain in the period between the 8th of January and the 15th of March 1820. This treaty was considered as a watershed in the history of the Arabian Gulf. The British used the treaty as a starting point to enforce their economic and political hegemony on the entire Gulf region.⁶⁷

The General Peace Treaty comprises eleven articles which gave authority to the British to interfere in all the disputes in the Gulf and work them out according to their vision. The treaty also sanctioned decrees to appoint a British resident and establish a permanent military base in the region.⁶⁸ In 1823, a British political agent was appointed in Sharjah. His task was to write detailed reports about all events and send them to the British resident in the Arabian Gulf. He also operated as a link between the British authorities and the Emirati sheikhs.⁶⁹

The Permanent Maritime Peace Treaty

In 1835 and according to the suggestion of the British Resident (Mr. Hennell), an interim Maritime Truce Agreement was signed between the British and the Emirati Sheikhs to safeguard security in the Gulf. The truce was signed under the premise that it will be renewed on annual basis. In 1843, a long term Maritime Truce agreement was consummated in the presence of Mr. Hennel, the British Resident, and signed by Sheikh Khalifa bin Shakhbut, the governor of Abu-Dhabi, Sultan bin Saqr, the Sheikh of Al Qawasim, Sheikh Maktoum bin Buti, the governor of Dubai and Sheikh

Abdul-Aziz bin Rashid, the governor of Ajman.⁷⁰ According to the agreement, the truce agreement would continue for ten years only.

In May 1853, a permanent Maritime Peace Treaty was signed between the British and the Emirati sheikhs which had negative consequences on the region. The treaty gave the British an opportunity to tighten their control on the Gulf and interfere in domestic affairs. After the implementation of the treaty, the British changed the name of the region, labeling it “The Trucial Coast”.⁷¹ The treaty also placed obstacles in front of Al Qawasim and prevented them from engaging in their maritime business, which engendered disruption in the navigation and trade movement. The recurrent recessions in imports and exports devastated the local economy and the entire commercial navy of Al Qawasim was paralyzed and rendered useless.⁷²

In 1858, the Eastern Indian Company was terminated and replaced by The India Office, which operated under the Department of State and was affiliated with the British Administration in the Gulf. Meanwhile, the British Resident was promoted to the position of Political Resident in the Gulf. His representatives were classified as British Political Agents and operated administratively under the authority of the Governor-General in the Gulf and the deputy of Queen Victoria in India.⁷³

By the end of the nineteenth century other colonial powers such as the French, the Germans and the Ottomans attempted to extend their influence to the Arabian Gulf by establishing relationships with the Gulf region’s rulers. In response, the British took preemptive steps and signed a treaty with the Gulf sheikhs in 1892 called “the Prevention Treaty”. The sheikhs gave guarantees to the British that they or their successors will not sign any treaties with other countries except for Britain.⁷⁴ They pledged to maintain good terms with Great Britain and abandon any alliances with

other colonial powers. The treaty authorized Britain to monopolize the domestic policy of the Trucial Coast Emirates and represent the Emirati in international forums. This unfair treaty prevented the Emiratis from initiating any communications or relationships with other foreign countries without asking permission from the British. It also prevented them from importing any weapons for fear of rebellion against British colonization authorities.⁷⁵

However, the governor of Abu-Dhabi, Sheikh Zayed bin Khalifa (1855-1909), strived to confront the coercive British powers by regulating authority and consolidating domestic administration of the Emirate. He attempted to unify all of the Emirates under his leadership and initiated strong connections with neighboring countries.⁷⁶ But the tumultuous developments of the First World War provided a golden opportunity for the British to inflict their hegemony on the Gulf following the defeat of Germany, the collapse of the Ottomans and the outbreak of the Bolshevik revolution in Russia. Further, the British were able to win the right to enforce their mandate on Iraq. Eventually, the British imperialistic authority extended from the Shat Al Arab region in the north to the Bay of Oman in the south.

The discovery of oil in the Gulf accelerated amazing advancements in the air traffic industry and expansion in the use of vehicles. Because of this, the British were concerned with gaining concessions for oil exploration. They operated airlines linking London with British colonies in the Middle East, India and the Far East.

With the ushering in of the oil exploration era, the distinguished geographical location of the Gulf region functioned as a link between Europe on one hand and India, East Asia and Australia on the other. The Aviation Agreement of 1932 was signed in July by Sheikh Sultan bin Saqr Al Qasimi, the governor of Sharjah, and the

British government. In October 1932 the Sharjah airport witnessed the landing of the first Empire Airlines plane on its way to India. Other airports were founded in Seer Bani Yas Island in 1935 and in Dubai and Ras Al Khaimsa simultaneously in 1937.⁷⁷

In the period from 1936 to 1939 and prior to the flare-up of WWII, the British government established a company to develop petrol production in the region (Petroleum Development of Trucial Coast Limited), which signed long-term agreements with all the Emirati sheikhs to secure oil exploration concessions. The agreements prolonged British monopoly of oil exploration in the region for 75 years, blocking access in advance of other competing companies seeking to obtain the same license.⁷⁸ As the Second World War was raging, the British promulgated severe economic restraints on the Gulf in fear of external interference from rival countries such as Germany. In consequence, it was very difficult for the Gulf region to import or export commodities, including oil products. The British government identified few foreign outlets from which the region could get their imports. This policy devastated the economy of the region, bringing about the collapse of the pearl trade in addition to catastrophic deterioration in the oil exploration industry.

The Bani Yas Alliance

The Bani Yas people constitute one of most well-established tribes in the Arabian peninsula. The first reference to Bani Yas was found in the historical archives of the Venetian traveller Balbi, who made a tour of the region in 1580 and mentioned Seer Bani Yas Island.⁷⁹ After half a century, the Omani historian Abdullah bin Khalfan bin Qaisar also referred to the tribe of Bani Yas in his book titled “The Biography of Imam Nasir bin Murshid”. He alluded to Bani Yas in the context of his

Illumination of the major events that took place at the time of Imam Nasir bin

Murshid Al Al Ya’aribi (1624-1649). He mentioned the strongholds of Bani Yas in the Al Dhafra desert and the oasis of Liwa. He describes them as “ people with severe power and determination”. They had strong ties with the Hilalis from bani Saqr in Alahsaa which indicated that the Bani Yas tribe had been in the region for centuries prior to that epoch.⁸⁰ The Bani Yas Alliance initially included a number of Arab tribes and clans under the leadership of Al Nahyan, affiliated with the tribe of Al Bu Falah.⁸¹ The Al Bu Falasa tribe also descended from Bani Yas and most of them settled in the Emirate of Dubai, including the Al Maktoum branch.⁸²

The Bani Yas tribe primarily settled in Al Dhafra and Liwa where they erected several towers. The remnants of these historical sites still exist. Several branches of the tribe roamed the inland and coastal regions but they settled in Abu-Dhabi after the discovery of fresh water in the Emirate in 1761. Sheikh Dhiyab bin Eisa used Abu-Dhabi as his headquarters, where he started to assume his political and administrative authorities.⁸³

Throughout the rule of Sheikh Shakhbut bin Dhiyab (1793-1816), the Abu-Dhabi island became the capital and the command center of the Emirate. In 1795, the island became the permanent headquarters of Sheikh Shakhbut, where he constructed his palace and restored his tower originally built of mud. The tower was developed into a fortified post to protect the entrance to the island.⁸⁴ Under the leadership of Sheikh Shakhbut, Abu-Dhabi passed through successive waves of development and prosperity. At that time, fishing, navigation and pearl trade flourished in the Emirate according to the report of the British traveler “Buchingham,” who visited the island in 1816. Buchingham pointed out that the city had a harbor and it was a commercial hub.⁸⁵

The vital role of Sheikh Shakhbut bin Dhiyab in cementing and strengthening the ties among the tribes of Abu-Dhabi was instrumental to the development of the Emirate. He linked the coast region with the inland areas and magnified the political influence of the Bani Yas tribe, empowering the human potential of the tribe. Thanks to the efforts of Sheikh Shakhbut, the economic conditions of Abu-Dhabi were improved as a result of the expansion of different activities in the fields of agriculture (particularly the cultivation of palm trees), fishing, pearling, diving and grazing. Due to the thriving pearl cultivation industry in Abu-Dhabi, in the beginning of the nineteenth century, the Emirate became the most important economic center in the region. Accordingly, the Emirate attracted substantial numbers of people who worked in several trade sectors. The Emirate also established strong connections with India, which was a key center for the pearl trade, particularly after the improvement of means of transportation. Afterwards, the island of Delma became the main center for the pearl trade in the southern part of the Arabian Gulf, attracting merchants from India and the neighboring regions. The flourishing economy of Abu-Dhabi contributed to the expansion of the pearl trade in Delma.⁸⁶

Under the rule of Shakhbut, Alain provided Abu-Dhabi with vegetables, fruits, dates and grains. Since ancient times, Alain was considered as an essential economic hub and a meeting point for trade (camel) caravans. The Sheikhs of Al Nahyan used Alain as a summer resort due to its multiple resources in addition to its mild weather and abundant fresh water. While Al Dhafra and Liwa were extensions of Abu-Dhabi in the west, Alain served as a strategic expansion of Abu-Dhabi in the eastern region.⁸⁷ In the same vein, the strong ties among the clans of Abu-Dhabi promoted domestic stability and reinforced tribal political cohesion in addition to enhancing the leading

role of the tribes of Bani Yas and Al Nahyan.⁸⁸

In a related scenario, the relationships between Abu-Dhabi and neighboring countries, particularly Oman, were galvanized under the administration of Sheikh Shakhbut. The Shakhbut decades witnessed remarkable mutual trading activities between the two sides. It is noteworthy to express that in the beginning of the nineteenth century Abu-Dhabi was transformed into a famous harbor which attracted steamers and merchant ships.⁸⁹

Throughout the nineteenth century, the Al Nahyan rulers, beginning with Sheikh Shakhbut bin Dhiyab to Sheikh Zayed bin Khalifa, were able to transform Abu-Dhabi into a regional power center in the Arabian Gulf **by virtue of the following:**⁹⁰

- The continuation of the sovereignty of the Bu Falah tribe under the leadership of Al Nahyan and the alliance of the other tribes in Abu-Dhabi with the Bu Falah, particularly in times of war and turbulence.
- The success of Sheikh Shakhbu in establishing a balanced foreign policy based on respect and mutual economic relations as well as the protection of joint interests.
- The success of Sheikh Shakhbut in transforming Abu-Dhabi into a capital for the Emirate due to its strategic position.
- The success of the governors of Abu-Dhabi in maintaining their treaties with the British and their ability to fix any violations of the treaties.
- The success of the governors of Abu-Dhabi in establishing strong relations of mutual cooperation with the British after realizing that Great Britain was the only colonial force in the region.

- The foreign policy founded by Sheikh Shakhbut and followed by his successors, which was based on mutual cooperation with colonial powers and neighboring countries, played a significant role in stabilizing security in the region.

Sheikh Tahnoun bin Shakhbut (1818-1833)

As a governor of Abu-Dhabi, Sheikh Tahnoun bin Shakhbut played a key role in consolidating his rule, which coincided with signing the General Treaty with the British government in 1820. His distinguished political performance was accomplished through his conflict resolution policy, which he skillfully manipulated to negotiate disputes with neighboring countries. Using negotiations as a diplomatic dynamic to overcome differences and approximate viewpoints among conflicting parties, he sent his emissaries in peaceful missions to local chiefs in order to maintain tribal unities.⁹¹ At the time of his dominion, Abu-Dhabi flourished economically⁹² and the pearl fishing navy of the island was expanded to contain 300 ships and boats. In fact, Sheikh Tahnoun was concerned with improving the economic conditions of the Abu-Dhabi citizens by encouraging them to utilize the marine resources available in the Emirate particularly with regard to pearl diving and cultivation activities. The economic boom at his time was fundamental to the growth of the Emirate's economy and the spiral flourishing of the fishing boats industry. Sheikh Tahnoun was described as a powerful and influential adventurous personality who owned a well-equipped force including 400 armed men.⁹³

Sheikh Khalifa bin Shakbut (1833-1845)

All over the dominion of Sheikh Khalifa bin Shakbut, the rulers of the Gulf region signed a series of marine treaties with the British government in the period from

1845 to 1843, leading to the aggrandizing of the trade movement and the broadening of the pearl industry across the coasts of Abu-Dhabi. The number of fishing ships at that time increased and in 1840 the Emirate had 217 boats. Owing to the rising revenues attained from the pearl trade, the economic resources of Abu-Dhabi swelled all through the reign of Sheikh Khalifa and there was a surge in the number of rich merchants. There was also growth in the flow of commodities imported from abroad, particularly food products and clothes. Equally the Emirate witnessed a noticeable increase in the local population.

The British administration acknowledged the prominent status of Sheikh Khalifa among domestic tribal leaders, praising his successful efforts in enforcing his power and authority over the Emirate's territories. One of the British testimonies in this regard affirmed the valor, firmness and wisdom of Sheikh Khalifa as one of the most influential and leading personalities in the coastal and inland communities in the Gulf.⁹⁴ By virtue of the courageous leadership of Sheikh Khalifa, the region enjoyed eras of security and stability.

Sheikh Said bin Tahnoun (1845-1855)

In his early twenties, Sheikh Said bin Tahnoun became the governor of Abu-Dhabi. He was known for his governance skills and diplomatic potentialities. He possessed the qualities of a courageous ruler and he did not hesitate to make decisive decisions. The British authorities highly estimated the political performance of Sheikh Said and aggrandized all kinds of support for him in his confrontation with domestic and external challenges. In terms of the regional political arena, he participated in achieving stability in the Gulf through signing the Permanent Peace Treaties. At the time of his tenure as a governor, the Peace Treaty with the British government was

renewed in 1853.⁹⁵

Sheikh Zayed bin Khalifa (1855-1909)

Sheikh Zayed bin Khalifa, or Zayed the First, succeeded Sheikh Said bin Tahnoun in ruling Abu-Dhabi. Sheikh Zayed inherited a throbbing Emirate with a remarkable legacy epitomized by a vibrant economy and rigorous political power. From the start of his reign, Sheikh Zayed bin Khalifa played a path-breaking role in confronting domestic and foreign obstacles. This early confrontation gave him more experience in the matters of governance in the coming years. Zayed the First was famous for his wisdom, strong personality, future vision and skills in the administration of diplomatic risks. Throughout his rule, he received the ceaseless and unquestionable support of his people in addition to the trust of the British, who signed a peace agreement with him.

Throughout the fifty four yeas duration of his rule, the Abu-Dhabi Emirate reached the zenith of its political position as maintained a well-established regional power. Zayed the First perpetuated solid relationships among the rulers of the tribes in Abu-Dhabi and the governors of the other emirates. He called for meetings to discuss domestic issues and study foreign challenges.⁹⁶ All tribal leaders in the UAE attended these periodic meetings which magnified the ties between Abu-Dhabi and the other emirates in the region. Likewise Zayed the First promoted the mutual relationships between Abu-Dhabi and surrounding countries, especially Oman. In fact he had a special brotherly connection with the Sultan of Oman.⁹⁷ Under the leadership of Zayed the First, Abu-Dhabi witnessed an upsurge in the number of pearl-fishing boats. The Emirate's possession of 400 ships is a manifestation of an economic boom

which generated substantial revenues, enabling the governor to construct a sophisticated military force. The army of the Emirate was responsible for imposing security and stability on the coastal and inland areas.⁹⁸ In 1898, Zayed the First constructed Al Jahili Fort in Alain city, using it as a headquarters and a command center. In 1896, he took the initiative of establishing diplomatic relations with France. His political vision and strategic plans aimed to unify all Emirates in one state in order to mitigate the impact of British interference in the region and liberate the UAE from the chains of the unfair treaties signed with the British, which only served the interests of the colonizers.⁹⁹

Zayed the First was succeeded by four of his sons – Tahnoun bin Zayed, Hamdan bin Zayed, Sultan bin Zayed, and Saqr bin Zayed, - who took over authority in the period between 1909 and 1928. Throughout this time, **the Trucial States witnessed a number of regional achievements that could be summarized as follows:**

- Signing a pearl-fishing treaty between Britain and the Trucial States.
- Maintaining solid relations between Abu-Dhabi and neighboring countries, particularly Oman.
- Continuing cooperation and mutual coordination among all Emirates, solving all disputes peacefully.
- Maintaining security and stability in Abu-Dhabi and exploiting the Emirate's emerging natural resources, particularly oil.
- Signing an agreement in 1922 between the rulers of the Emirates and the British government which authorized Britain to start oil exploration activities in the region.¹⁰⁰

Sheikh Shakbut bin Sultan (1928-1966)

When Sheikh Shakbut bin Sultan came to power in 1928, the world was suffering from the catastrophic consequences of WWI and the economic results of the Depression Era. These developments left their negative imprints on the economy of the UAE and the entire region.¹⁰¹ Simultaneously, the appearance of the artificial pearl industry massively undermined the pillars of the local economy, which largely depended on the cultivation of natural pearls. At that time the Emirate of Abu-Dhabi suffered from a serious economic recession and deterioration in revenues.¹⁰² In the 1930's, the Emirate's government concentrated on the oil discovery issue in order to find alternative resources. Respectively, Sheikh Shakbut performed several successful talks and negotiations with the British regarding the oil exploration process. Before all else it is important to state that throughout the talks, Sheikh Shakbut proved to be an independent personality and shrewd negotiator who understood the rules of the game. In 1939 an agreement was reached with The Development Petroleum Company, which was given the concession of oil exploration in the region, but the eruption of WWII led to the suspension of the project, intensifying the economic crisis of the Trucial States.¹⁰³

After the end of WWII, the petroleum companies resumed their exploration in the region. In 1949, decisions were taken to construct roads, lay the foundations of modern buildings and establish a harbor for ships in addition to a landing runway for aircraft.¹⁰⁴ In 1950, Sheikh Shakbut signed an agreement with an American company, awarding it the Continental Shelf offshore concession, but the British rejected the decision. As a whole the oil exploration process triggered several conflicts among the countries in the Gulf region which lasted for a long time until the demarcation

of borders.¹⁰⁵ In July 1962, the first crude oil cargo was shipped from the Das Island coast, ushering into a new epoch of prosperity in the Emirate.¹⁰⁶ Proportionately, the Emirate started a new era of development which basically comprised the preparation of an urban-planning project to modernize Abu-Dhabi. This ambitious plan included the establishment of a power-generating station and a plant for the desalination of sea water in addition to the building of educational and health facilities and the implementation of several road paving projects. Additionally, the first hospital in Al Ain city was built in 1966.¹⁰⁷

It is pertinent to point out that Sheikh Shakbut was a reliable and distinguished ruler with insightful vision in regards to regional and foreign issues. Sheikh Shakbut had the power to make decisive decisions independently. Thereupon, he gained local and regional respect and international admiration thanks to his leading personality. He triumphantly transcended domestic and external challenges because he was well-versed in the techniques of governance. On the global level, he had sufficient knowledge of political and economic developments in the world. Regionally he was fully aware of the geography of the Gulf zone and the historical events which shaped its history in addition to his knowledge of the desert routes and the locations of tribal areas.¹⁰⁸

The British Administration in the UAE in the Post WWII Era

The period following the end of the Second World War was characterized by many significant events in the regional and global arenas. Different liberation movements swept the Third World, and imperialistic powers, particularly Britain, lost its colonies, such as India, Egypt, and Iraq, with the passing of time. Simultaneously the post WWII era witnessed the rising of new superpowers such as the USA and the USSR.

Regionally, the strategic importance of the Gulf countries after the discovery of oil in the area attracted the attention of the ascending empires. King Abdul-Aziz Al Saud initiated solid diplomatic relations with the USA and granted oil exploration concessions to the Arabian American Oil Company (ARAMCO).¹⁰⁹ In the aftermath of the preceding ground-breaking consequences, Britain was forced to change its policies in the UAE, particularly after the declaration of India as an independent country in 1947. **The new policies aimed to accelerate the development wheel in certain sectors and establish new institutions as follows:**

■ The Trucial Oman Scouts / Levies

Through its oil company in the UAE (Petroleum Development of Trucial Coast Limited), Britain formed a small paramilitary force called The Trucial Oman Scouts. The force, which was formed after the end of WWII and was affiliated with Britain, aimed primarily to protect British officials and solve border disputes arising among the Emirates due to oil exploration activities. The force was also responsible for maintaining peace and security in the region. In 1950 and after the approval of the British government, a budget was allocated to finance the paramilitary unit. The Jordanian army participated in the establishment of The Trucial Oman Scouts force by providing some logistic necessities. A senior British officer named Hankin Turvin was appointed to lead the unit in collaboration with Jordanian officers. The unit included thirty two Jordanian army recruiters from different ranks in addition to Emirati troops.¹¹⁰

The headquarters of the Trucial Oman Scouts was located in Sharjah and was affiliated with the frontlines of the British Royal Air Force.¹¹¹ The launching of The Trucial Oman Levies or “Scouts”¹¹² coincided with the establishment of local police

forces to safeguard security. In 1956 the first domestic police force was founded in Dubai and in 1957 another police force was established in Abu-Dhabi. Both forces depended on the experience of British officers from The Trucial Oman Levies unit.¹¹³

■ The Trucial States Council (1952-1965)

After the First World War and as a result of the increasing prospects of oil discovery in the region, the British government advocated an interventionist policy toward the UAE. The British colonizers boldly interfered in the domestic affairs in order to secure the seizure of local natural resources. Hence the British government signed several oil discovery treaties with the governors of the Emirates in anticipation of future developments in the region. These treaties required domestic development plans and foreign expertise but the British were reluctant to take action. However, the situation changed radically after WWII when the British ministry of foreign affairs became responsible for running the affairs of the region in the aftermath of the independence of India in 1947.¹¹⁴

The first step toward the implementation of the new British policy toward the region was epitomized by a series of initiatives including increasing British diplomatic representation in the Emirate, restructuring of the administrative boards and endorsing a step aiming to establish a national federation encompassing all of the Emirates' rulers. In November 1950, the British administration suggested the formation of a council which included all the rulers of the Emirates. The council, which was chaired by the British political resident in Dubai, convened once every three months to discuss joint interests in order to push forward the wheel of development and construction so that the Emirates could cope with the rapid changes in the region.¹¹⁵

Nevertheless, there was no concrete progress for three years after the formation

of the council.¹¹⁶ By the end of the 1950's more attention was given to the issues raised in the meetings of the council. A consensus was reached regarding the setting-up of committees and task forces to formulate long-term development plans that would be implemented in the health, education and agriculture sectors in addition to other domains.¹¹⁷ In May 1957, there was a decree to form an educational committee through which Britain would be able to monitor educational activities in the Emirates. Moreover, the Kuwaiti government financed the building of several schools in the Emirates, which played a key role in promoting cultural awareness in the Emirates. In 1953, the first school was inaugurated in Sharjah followed by the opening of other schools in Abu-Dhabi, Dubai and the rest of the Emirates.¹¹⁸

Teachers from different Arab countries were recruited to work in these schools. They came to the Emirates at a turbulent time when anti-British sentiments had reached a zenith due to the role of Britain as an imperialist hegemonic power. In a related sequence the British government worried about the political activities of the recruited teachers who disseminated anti-colonial thought and Arab nationalist ideology among Emirati students. In order to reinforce its influence on the educational institution in the Emirates, the British authority opened an agricultural school in Ras Al Khaima in 1957,¹¹⁹ and an industrial school in Sharjah in 1958.¹²⁰ In the same vein, the British government initiated a training program to prepare local Emirati teachers to replace the Arab teachers in the schools spreading in the region. It is appropriate to mention that the committee responsible for securing educational services confronted immense obstacles in achieving its missions due to the shortage of financial resources and lack of coordination among the Emirates.¹²¹

In May 1958, a health committee, chaired by doctor Qasim Al Jameili, was formed

to improve health services and promote health-care awareness among the Emirati citizens. The committee was able to found clinics and small health centers in all of the Emirates. The committee also supervised the development and modernization of a health facility in Dubai financed by the Dubai government which was officially inaugurated in 1951. The government of Dubai paid all the expenses of the hospital and was responsible for its management. The hospital provided health services for all the citizens of the Emirates.¹²² Since 1952, this significant health facility has been known as Al Maktoum hospital. In a similar scenario, the first bank (British Bank of The Middle East) was inaugurated in Dubai in October 1946. Moreover, the National Bank of Dubai was founded in 1963 followed by the establishment of several other banks across the Emirates which accelerated economic growth and opened new horizons of investment.¹²³ Dubai International Airport was founded in 1960.¹²⁴ One year earlier, Dubai Electricity Company was established but the operation of its engines started in June 1961.

In the mid 1960's, the Arab League paid extensive attention to the Emirates in the light of tumultuous regional repercussions and the aggrandizement of the Iranian political and military interference in the Gulf region. Correspondingly, an Arab League delegation consisting of the Secretary General, two of his assistants, and diplomatic representatives from the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, Kuwait, and Iraq were dispatched to the Emirates in October 1964.¹²⁵ The Arab League mission was highly estimated by the rulers of all Emirates, who approved suggestions to establish an Arab League Office and Development Fund in the Emirates. The Arab League mission also suggested that technicians and experts be sent for consultation purposes on issues related to infrastructure innovation projects and comprehensive

development plans in the entire Emirates.¹²⁶

In an opposite maneuver, the British colonial authorities expressed their concerns about the hidden agenda of the Arab League delegation activities in the Emirates. In January 1965, the British political resident called for a meeting of all of the rulers of the Emirates to suggest a plan to diminish the role of the Arab League, but his suggestion was rejected. In March 1965, he summoned the rulers to another meeting and proposed to establish The Trucial States Development Office, which was affiliated with The Trucial States Council. In 1965, the total budget of the TSDO was provided by Abu-Dhabi and in 1969, the Emirate paid 90% of the expenses.¹²⁷ Obviously, the British imperialist administration succeeded in subverting the endeavors of the Arab League in the Emirates and dealt with the Arab League representative in a strict manner. The British frequently reminded the Emirates' rulers of the 1892 treaty which prohibited them from initiating any relations with external parties without the permission of the colonial authority. Accordingly the British government argued that the opening of an Arab League Office in the Emirates was a violation of the provisions of the 1892 treaty.¹²⁸ On its side the Arab League denounced the British colonial interventionist policies in the region and insisted on the establishment of an Arab League Office in the Emirates. However, the breakout of the 1967 war and its tragic ramifications brought the Arab League proposal to a standstill. The Arab League resumed its project in the Emirates in 1968 after the withdrawal of the British from all the Gulf countries.¹²⁹

Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan: Abu-Dhabi Governor Representative in Al Ain Region (1946-1966)

As a governor of Abu-Dhabi from 1928 to 1966, Sheikh Shakhut bin Sultan appointed his brother Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan as representative of the Abu-Dhabi governor

in Alain in 1946. Throughout his tenure Sheikh Zayed was a ceaseless source of inspiration for the people of Alain. He gained a remarkable reputation among the citizens, who showed their admiration for his administrative skills.

In Al Ain, Sheikh Zayed achieved high popularity among local Emiratis and non-Emiratis and he helped them to overcome problems and life vicissitudes.¹³⁰ The British historian and diplomat Julian Walker, who developed a firm friendship with Sheikh Zayed, chronicled the relationship between Zayed and the local folks in Alain. He said: “the tribal senior people and the villagers came to Sheikh Zayed who listened carefully to their complaints. From time to time, he discussed some cases with the other sheikhs. However, he took decisions on the spot and recorded them in papers marked with his own stamp.”¹³¹ In the pre-federation epoch, Sheikh Zayed established many innovative development projects to urbanize Alain city. Furthermore, he was concerned with securing sufficient water resources for the citizens; therefore he restructured and modernized the Aflaj system. Personally, he participated in the digging and construction process, providing an example to be emulated by other officials in the local governmental apparatus. The efforts of Sheikh Zayed, particularly his plans to improve the Aflaj infrastructure, was a breakthrough toward the agricultural renaissance that took place in Alain, which was transformed into a garden city and became one of the most beautiful places in the region.¹³² In a connected scenario, Sheikh Zayed also enacted a historical role in settling the border disputes with neighboring countries after he tackled the same issue on a domestic level.¹³³

In 1966, Sheikh Zayed took over the reins of government in Abu-Dhabi. Since that time, a milestone stage of Emirati history came into being which has been

characterized by an unprecedented advancement toward a new era of prosperity. The development of the educational and health sectors constituted a top priority for Sheikh Zayed. Therefore he established schools and hospitals according to modern standards. He also modernized the infrastructure of Abu-Dhabi, including road construction as well as the water and electricity sectors. Sheikh Zayed also built modern bridges and constructed houses for the local citizens. He developed the oil sector and utilized the revenues in the implementation of development projects in Abu-Dhabi and other Emirates. The economic progress which overflowed the Emirates as a result of the efforts of Sheikh Zayed increased his reputation and consequently the citizens across the Emirates started to dream of unity under his leadership. From 1968 to 1971, Sheikh Zayed did his best to appease all disputes between conflicting parties in the Emirates. Using his wisdom and experience he prepared a suitable atmosphere for national reconciliation, encouraging the Emirati people and their rulers to abandon personal differences and start the process of making a new history and building a modernized state.¹³⁴

The Foundation of the UAE Federation and the National, Regional and International Contributions

Radical economic and geo-political transformations took place in the 1960's on the domestic and regional levels, resulting into the termination of the British colonization in the Arabian peninsula. In other words, these massive changes forced Britain to evacuate its military forces from Arabia including the Southern parts of the peninsula, paving the way for the Arab League mission to return to the region. In 1968, the British prime minister declared that the government of her Majesty, the Queen of England intended to withdraw all the British troops in the Gulf region by the end of 1971.¹³⁵

At the time of this momentous period, Sheikh Zayed took the initiative of preparing the stage for the new arrangements. In his attempt to establish a unified political entity, he started consultations with the Emirati people and their leaders. His noble efforts aimed to fulfill the dream of unity for the Emiratis by laying the foundations for a strong country in which they would live in prosperity and peace. In order to achieve this dream for their people, the governors of Abu-Dhabi and Dubai signed a bilateral agreement in Alsedeira located near Alsemeih in the Emirate of Abu-Dhabi. A joint statement was issued on 18 February 1968 declaring the foundation of a union between the two Emirates under one flag.¹³⁶

The declared union between Abu-Dhabi and Dubai was the first step on the way toward achieving the expected dream of founding a federal state which included all of the Emirates. The union between Abu-Dhabi and Dubai was highly appreciated by Emiratis from all walks of life who looked forward to living under one flag in a formidable federal state. In his comment on the union between Abu-Dhabi and Dubai, Sheikh Zayed pointed out that “the agreement opened the door in front of other Emirates including Qatar and Bahrain to take part in the union after studying and discussing the matter”.¹³⁷

Ultimately, the Abu-Dhabi / Dubai agreement was transformed into an action plan approved by the governors of the nine Emirates. In the same context, the governors of the nine Emirates attended a meeting held in Dubai from 25 to 27 February 1968. On its part, the British government supported the expected union as an asset to the stability and security of the region, highly estimating the key role played by Sheikh Zayed in accelerating the foundation of the union.¹³⁸ At the same time the initiative of Sheikh Zayed to establish the nine Emirates’ union was supported by the Arab

League. The Arab League Secretary General praised the initiative as a phenomenal success and described the anticipated union as a mechanism of asserting the security of the Arab world.

The Supreme Council of the United Arab Emirates convened for the first time in Abu-Dhabi from 25 to 26 May (1968) and many obstacles were confronted in the first meeting. However, the council reconvened on the 6th and 7th of July (1968) and Sheikh Zayed was elected as the chair of the council for the duration of its sessions. Moreover, a high-level committee was formed and it was assigned the task of drafting a constitution for the union. Afterwards, the council met in Doha and the governor of Qatar chaired the meeting.¹³⁹

Regardless of the challenges and hurdles confronting the Supreme Council of the United Arab Emirates, there was a consensus on the importance of achieving some essential objectives, including the preparation of a constitution draft. Subsequently a team of Arab lawyers and jurists was assigned the task of drafting a new constitution. Equally a decision was made to establish a defense army to defend the Emirates. In the period between September 1968 and June 1969, the Supreme Council of the United Arab Emirates convened five times. The five meetings aimed to solve some pending issues and accordingly several committees were set up to tackle some urgent tasks. Apparently, the constructive efforts of Sheikh Zayed in the convergence of divergent views and the resolution of pending problems were instrumental to the continuity of these meetings.¹⁴⁰

In the first half of 1970 a series of meetings were held that included representatives from all of the Emirates but the disappointing results did not meet expectations. On the 18th of July 1971, the governors of all the Emirates, excluding Ras Al Khaima, officially

announced their agreement to establish a federal union and an interim constitution was approved. On the 13th of August 1971, Bahrain declared its independence followed by the declaration of independence of Qatar after one month in September 1971.¹⁴¹

Eventually, the preparations for declaring the foundation of the UAE federation were underway and thus diplomatic delegations were dispatched in this respect to the Arab countries, European countries, and the USA. In the last week of November (1971), a consensus was reached regarding the setting up of a timetable for the proclamation of the federal union.¹⁴² On Thursday, the 2nd of December (1971), the rulers of the six Emirates convened in Dubai in the Governor's residence on the seacoast in Aljumaira district. In the meeting, Sheikh Zayed was elected as the president of the UAE federal union, Sheikh Rashid bin Said was elected as vice president, and Sheikh Maktoum bin Rashid as the prime minister. On this occasion a twenty one gun salute was launched by cannons to announce the foundation of UAE Federal Union.¹⁴³

On the same day (2nd of December 1971), Sheikh Zayed signed a Friendship Treaty which terminated the political connections between Britain and each Emirate respectively. On the 3rd of December 1971, the *Ittihad* (union) newspaper published Sheikh Zayed's speech on this historical occasion. In his memorable speech he illustrated that the newly born nation was the result of the loyalty and adherence of the people to their governors: "Our vision was matched with the will of our people to announce the establishment of the UAE as a sovereign and independent state in order achieve stability and prosperity for the citizens".

On the 6th of December 1971, the UAE joined the Arab League and on the 9th of December (1971), the country was officially declared as the 132nd member in the United Nations. On the same day a federal official decree was issued - by

Sheikh Zayed- to appoint the first UAE cabinet. On the 21st of December 1971, a legislation was passed to establish the UAE Federation defense forces, inevitably resulting in the demobilization of the Trucial Oman Levies. Most of the TOL troops joined the newly created defense forces. In a related scenario, the Emirate of Ras Al Khaima joined the UAE Federation in February 1971.

From the beginning of his rule, Sheikh Zayed worked very hard to achieve the aspirations of his people and provide a decent life for all the citizens. He paid regular visits to all the Emirates to monitor the progress of the comprehensive development projects, familiarize himself with the current social affairs and get in touch with the living conditions of the citizens in order to fulfill their needs. For Zayed, the adherence and attachment of the ruler with his people “was a fundamental principle of democratic governance”.¹⁴⁴

Throughout his life, Sheikh Zayed was an advocate of unionist thought. He was aware of the contingency of founding the UAE Federation as a basis for achieving stability and joint interests in the region and as a means of securing prosperity for the Emirati people. On this ground he took the initiative of strengthening bilateral relationships with Sheikh Rashid bin Said. As a wise and inspiring leader, Sheikh Zayed originally concentrated on overcoming internal differences by bridging the gaps among disputing parties. In this sense he succeeded in paving the way for the foundation of the UAE Federation which is considered as a unique example of union and cohesion and as a model to be emulated in the modern era.

First and foremost, the Sheikh Zayed era was replete with numerous and miraculous contributions which shaped exceptional benchmarks in modern Emirati history.

These manifold achievements include the foundation of a successful federal state which brought about stability, prosperity and security for the Emiratis, providing the spark for more innovation and progress. The birth of the UAE federation inspired the Emirati people, triggering their talents and creative potentials. The spirit of the union expanded the ambitions of the Emiratis, providing the momentum for the construction of a glorious future for the coming generations within the contours of a solid political system based on the governance principle of shura (collective consultation) and deeply rooted in tolerance, cooperation, reconciliation, joint interests and positive interaction.

On the social front, Sheikh Zayed realized the vital roles of women and youth in the building of the rising Emirati nation; thereupon he issued several initiatives aiming to empower them to contribute to the development process. In this connection various social institutions dedicated to promoting women and youth activities were built and related services were provided throughout the country. In his relentless efforts to preserve the national and cultural ingredients of the Emirati identity in particular and the overarching Arabic-Islamic inherited traditions in general, Sheikh Zayed established research centers to enhance domestic history, popular customs and genuine Arabic conventions.

In a similar approach, Sheikh Zayed established many centers and institutions which specialized in ecological protection in order to preserve the local environment and maintain the natural beauty of the country. His perpetual endeavors to place the UAE in its appropriate position on the world map were not restricted to interior affairs. In the regional and international spheres, the status of the UAE gained prominence day after day thanks to the meticulous policies of Sheikh Zayed. As

an efficient politician who worked regularly to implement peace and stability on the regional and universal levels, Sheikh Zayed was categorized by top-ranking global institutions as a high caliber leader who made unparalleled contributions to his country and the entire world.

Conclusion

The argument of this chapter tracked Emirati history from the genesis of Emirati society five thousand years ago when the region was dominated by the Majan civilization followed by the proliferation of Umm Ennar culture throughout the region. Since that time deeply seated in ancient history, the Emirati territories have provided sanctuary to successive waves of immigration in the pre-Islamic era and after the rise of Islam in the Arabian peninsula. These historical facts emphasize the predominance of the Arabic and Islamic traditions in the region across centuries.

Since the ancient time of the Majan civilization until the end of the Islamic era, the Emirati people were engaged in mutual communication with the surrounding world by land and sea through navigation and trade routes with East Africa, India and China. The ancient Emiratis used sophisticated and locally manufactured sailing ships in their travels by sea. Ahmed bin Majed, the famous Emirati navigator who met with Vasco Da Gama, used one of these boats in his travels around the world. The Emiratis also participated in commercial camel caravans and used land routes on their ways from the Arabian Gulf to Hejaz, the Levant, Mesopotamia and the Nile Valley region. Historically, the UAE territory was a link between East Southern Asia on one hand and Mesopotamia and the Nile Valley countries on the other. The life of the ancient Emirati people depended on trade, navigation, grazing, agriculture and pearl fishing activities.

The movement of Arab navigation in the Indian Ocean was devastated after the colonial intervention of the Portuguese and British forces in the affairs of the region, which had negative repercussions on the living conditions of the Emirati people. The early colonial period witnessed an intifada against the Portuguese led by the Ya'ariba state. After the demise of the Ya'ariba dynasty due to internal disintegration, the Al Bu Said state emerged in Oman as a powerful regional political player. Afterwards AlQawasim imposed their presence as a marine force in the Gulf, whereas the Banu Yas tribes of Abu-Dhabi manifested themselves as a ground force well-versed in desert fighting. At the outset of the nineteenth century, the British intensified their invasions against the Emirati coasts in order to impose their hegemony on the region and force the domestic rulers to sign treaties which protected the interests of the imperialists. After the occupation of the sea and the coasts by the British navy, the economic and political situations in the region deteriorated drastically, jeopardizing the security of the people and the colonizers alike.

After the discovery of oil in the region in the first half of the twentieth century, Britain gradually changed its policies in the region, culminating in British withdrawal from the Gulf in the 1960's. In the aftermath of the British evacuation, Sheikh Zayed took the reins of initiative as a historical leader who decided to construct a modern country. The newly unified UAE dazzled the world by its innovative and ground-breaking contributions in all fields. On the humanitarian level Sheikh Zayed succeeded in establishing a civilized country based on tolerance, mutual understanding and justice. Until the present time, the development process originated by Sheikh Zayed has still been progressing with iron will and stable footsteps toward a more glorious future under the leadership of His Highness Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed, the president of the UAE, Sheikh Mohamed bin Rashid, the vice president, the governors of the

Emirates and Sheikh Mohamed bin Zayed, the crown prince of Abu-Dhabi.

Notes

- ^{1.} Ibid, pp. 38-65.
- ^{2.} New Concepts (2009), pp. 57-59.
- ^{3.} Ibid, p.57.
- ^{4.} Ibid, p.56.
- ^{5.} Archeology in the UAE (1989), PP.22-41.
- ^{6.} Ibid, p.20.
- ^{7.} Hamad bin Serrai, Hamad (2000). The Arabian Gulf Region, pp.255-259.
- ^{8.} Archeology in the UAE (1989), PP.124-130, 137-141.
- ^{9.} Ibid, pp. 36-42.
- ^{10.} Ibid, pp. 71-85.
- ^{11.} Ibid, pp. 110-111.
- ^{12.} See The Archaeological Survey in Sharjah : First Report (1984).
- ^{13.} Archeology in the UAE (1989), P.39.
- ^{14.} Ibid, pp. 4-5.
- ^{15.} Ibid, pp. 86-98
- ^{16.} Ibid, p.63
- ^{17.} New Concepts (2009), p.81
- ^{18.} Ibid, p.86
- ^{19.} Ibid, pp.86-90.
- ^{20.} Serrai, Hamad (2000). The Arabian Gulf Region, pp.289-295
- ^{21.} Abdul-Alim Mohamed(1999). The United Arab Emirates,pp.434-454
- ^{22.} The Archaeology of Sharjah (1988),pp. 26-36.
- ^{23.} Ibid, p.36.
- ^{24.} Daniel T. Potts. (1998). The Pre-Islamic Coinage of Eastern Arabia, pp. 22-32.
- ^{25.} Serrai, Hamad (2000). The Arabian Gulf Region, pp.229-249.
- ^{26.} New Concepts (2009), pp. 110-113.

27. Archeology in the UAE (1989), pp.230-234.
28. Farouq Omar. (1985). The History of the Arabian Gulf, pp.67-69.
29. Ibid, pp.81-86.
30. The Status of the Arabian Gulf(1988),pp.145-182.
31. Farouq Omar. (1985). The History of the Arabian Gulf, pp.99-106.
32. Ibid, pp.170-179.
33. Ibid, pp.223-229.
34. Archeology in the UAE (1989), Pp.254-262.
35. The Archaeological Survey in Sharjah : Second Report (1985), p.33.
36. Peter Hellyer. (1998). The Hidden Riches,pp.153-155.
37. Ibid, p.158.
38. Ibid, pp.161-162.
39. Ibid, p.167.
40. B.J. Slot. (1993). The Arabs of the Gulf, 1602-1784, pp.49-51.
41. See Ibrahim Khouri. (2001). Ahmed Bib Majed and Hasan Shihab. Ahmed bin Majed.
42. Ibid, pp. 121, 232-248.
43. See The Ras Al Khaima Symposium Papers (1987)
44. See Khalid Salem Mohamed. (1982) The Skippers of the Arabian Gulf, pp.79-113.
45. See Ibrahim Khouri. (1999). The Hormuz Sultanate, pp. 163-172.
46. See The Portuguese History in the Gulf (1996)
47. Jamal Zakaria Qasim. (1985). The Arabian Gulf (1507-1840), pp.45-121 and Mohamed Adnan Murad (1989). The Conflicts of Powers in the Indian Ocean, pp. 163-230.
48. It was originally established under the name of a company called The London Governors and Merchants For Trade Operations in India and Neighboring Countries. Also see Mohamed Mursi Abdulla, The Trucial States and Oman (1987), p.153.
49. Mohamed Mursi Abdulla. (1987). The Trucial States and Oman, p.154.
50. Ibid,pp.158-171.
51. Ibid,pp.63-67
52. Ibid, pp. 121-123.

- ^{53.} Mohamed Mursi Abdulla, The Trucial States and Oman (1987),pp.158-160.
- ^{54.} Victor Solheim. (2009) AlQawasim Alliance, pp. 274-276.
- ^{55.} Jamal Zakaria Qasim. (1985), pp. 274-276.
- ^{56.} Victor Solheim. (2009) AlQawasim Alliance, pp. 300-320.
- ^{57.} Ibrahim, A.A. (1981). The Indian British Government, pp.105-107.
- ^{58.} Mohamed Mursi Abdulla, The Trucial States and Oman (1987), pp.158-160.
- ^{59.} Eisa Rashid Said Alfallah. (2005).Sultan bin Saqr AlQasimi,pp.256-257
- ^{60.} Mohamed Mursi Abdulla, The Trucial States and Oman (1987), pp.179-184.
- ^{61.} Eisa Rashid Said Alfallah. (2005).Sultan bin Saqr AlQasimi,pp.258-259.
- ^{62.} Ibid, pp. 270-271.
- ^{63.} Ali Mohamed Rashid.(1989). The Political and Economic Treaties, pp.58-61.
- ^{64.} Ibid, p.77.
- ^{65.} Victor Solheim. (2009) AlQawasim Alliance, pp.435-444.
- ^{66.} Ibid, p.446
- ^{67.} Ibid, pp.446-448.
- ^{68.} Ibid, pp. 294-296.
- ^{69.} Ibid, pp.534-536.
- ^{70.} Ibid, pp.553-555, and also see Eisa Rashid Said Alfallah. (2005).Sultan bin Saqr AlQasimi,pp.297-301.
- ^{71.} Victor Solheim. (2009) AlQawasim Alliance, pp.558-559.
- ^{72.} Ibid, p.567.
- ^{73.} Ali Mohamed Rashid.(1989). The Political and Economic Treaties, 99.129-130.
- ^{74.} Zuhdi Abdul-Majid Sammour. (1985). The Political History of the Trucial Coast, pp.158-168.
- ^{75.} See Messages from the Zayed bin Khalifa Era (2009), pp.117-210.
- ^{76.} Mohamed Mursi Abdulla. (1981). The UAE State and Its Neighbor, pp. 73, 297.
- ^{77.} Ibid, pp.80-93.
- ^{78.} B.J. Slot. (1993). The Arabs of the Gulf, 1602-1784, pp.49-52.
- ^{79.} Jayanti Maitra, Afra Al-Hajji. (2001). Qasr Al Hosn: The History Of The Rulers Of Abu Dhabi 1793 -1966

- ⁸⁰. Ibid, p.16, p.15.
- ⁸¹. Ibid, pp.78-79.
- ⁸². Ibid, pp.16-18.
- ⁸³. Ibid, pp.17-24.
- ⁸⁴. Ibid, p.18.
- ⁸⁵. Ibid, pp.22-24
- ⁸⁶. Ibid, p. 121.
- ⁸⁷. Ibrahim, A.A. (2004). Abu-Dhabi, pp.21-31.
- ⁸⁸. Jayanti Maitra, Afra Al-Hajji. (2001),p.60
- ⁸⁹. Ibid, pp.33-43.
- ⁹⁰. Ibrahim, A.A. (2004). Abu-Dhabi, p.53.
- ⁹¹. Jayanti Maitra, Afra Al-Hajji. (2001), p.55.
- ⁹². Ibid, Ibid, p.56.
- ⁹³. Ibid, p.92.
- ⁹⁴. Ibrahim, A.A. (2004). Abu-Dhabi, pp.83-102.
- ⁹⁵. Ibid, pp.179-192.
- ⁹⁶. Ibid, p.173
- ⁹⁷. Ibid, p.205.
- ⁹⁸. Ibrahim, A.A. (2004). Abu-Dhabi, p.209.
- ⁹⁹. Jayanti Maitra, Afra Al-Hajji. (2001), pp.203-229.
- ¹⁰⁰. In 1929, the world economy radically deteriorated after the total financial collapse in the stock market in New York known as the Great Depression. See Alfais Mohamed, Pages from the History of the UAE (2014),P.261.
- ¹⁰¹. Ibrahim, A.A. (2004). Abu-Dhabi, pp.225-230.
- ¹⁰². Manei AlOtaiba. (1990). Oil and the UAE Economies, p.248.
- ¹⁰³. Jayanti Maitra, Afra Al-Hajji. (2001), p.237.
- ¹⁰⁴. Alfaris Mohamed, Pages from the History of the UAE (2014),P.336.
- ¹⁰⁵. Manei Al Otaiba. (1990). Oil and the UAE Economies, p.329.
- ¹⁰⁶. Jayanti Maitra, Afra Al-Hajji. (2001), p.239

- ^{107.} Ibid, pp.235-248.
- ^{108.} See New Concepts.(209), pp.217, 227-229.
- ^{109.} Alfaris Mohamed, Pages from the History of the UAE (2014),P.261.
- ^{110.} Mona Mohamed Al Hammadi. (2008). Britain and the Administrative Affairs in The Trucial States, p.77
- ^{111.} Ibid, p.88.
- ^{112.} Ibid, p.89.
- ^{113.} Alfaris Mohamed, Pages from the History of the UAE (2014),P.285.
- ^{114.} The Trucial States Council was founded in March 1952. For more details, see Alfais, Pages from the History of the UAE
- ^{115.} Mona Mohamed Al Hammadi. (2008),pp.103-106.
- ^{116.} Ibid, pp.112-125.
- ^{117.} Alfaris Mohamed, Pages from the History of the UAE (2014),Pp.329-398
- ^{118.} Mona Mohamed Al Hammadi. (2008),p.162.
- ^{119.} Ibid, p.158.
- ^{120.} Ibid, pp.126-128.
- ^{121.} Faisal M. Almandous. (2009). The History of Health Services,pp.57-72.
- ^{122.} Alfaris Mohamed, Pages from the History of the UAE (2014),pp.286-289.
- ^{123.} Ibid, p.418.
- ^{124.} Ibid, p.111.
- ^{125.} Mona Mohamed Al Hammadi. (2008),p.131.
- ^{126.} Frauke Heard-Bey. (2007).From Trucial States to United Arab Emirates,p.265. See also Rashid Abdulla. Zayed From Alain, p.37.
- ^{127.} Alfaris Mohamed, Pages from the History of the UAE (2014),pp.194-204.
- ^{128.} Mona Mohamed Al Hammadi. (2008),p.135.
- ^{129.} Zayed in Alain, pp. 68-70.
- ^{130.} Jayanti Maitra. (2007). Zayed: From Challenge to Union, pp.44-45.
- ^{131.} Ibrahim, A.A. (2004). Abu-Dhabi, p.287.
- ^{132.} Ibid, pp. 279-280.

- ¹³³. Jayanti Maitra. (2007). Zayed: From Challenge to Union, pp.315-378.
- ¹³⁴. Ibrahim, A.A. (2004). Abu-Dhabi, p.309.
- ¹³⁵. Ibid, pp. 314-324.
- ¹³⁶. Ibid, pp. 316-342.
- ¹³⁷. Hamdan Al Derei. (2005). Zayed, pp.58-62.
- ¹³⁸. Ibrahim, A.A. (2004). Abu-Dhabi, pp.354-361.
- ¹³⁹. Ibid, pp. 362-370.
- ¹⁴⁰. Jayanti Maitra. (2007). Zayed: From Challenge to Union, p.369.
- ¹⁴¹. New Concepts, p. 349.
- ¹⁴². Jayanti Maitra. (2007). Zayed: From Challenge to Union, p.372.
- ¹⁴³. Ibid, p.414.

References

- Abdul-Alim Mohamed. (1999). The United Arab Emirates, Trans. Salih Sari. Alain: Alfalah Press.
- Abdulla, Mohamed Mursi. (1987). The Trucial States and Oman. Cairo: The Modern Egyptian Office Press.
- ----- (1998). The United Arab Emirates and Its Neighbors. Kuwait: Dar AlQalam Press.
- Al Derei, Hamdan. (2005). Zayed : The Biography of Glories sand the Pride of the Union. Alain: Zayed Center for Heritage and History.
- Alfalah, Eisa Rashid Said. (2005). Sultan bin Saqr bin Rashid AlQasimi(1803-1866). Ras Al Khaima. Center for Studies and Documents.
- Alfaris Mohamed Alfaris. (2014). Pages from the History of the UAE and the Gulf: Readings in the British Documents. Amman: Alahliyya for Publication and Distribution.
- Al Hammadi, Mona Mohamed. (2008). Britain and the Administrative Affairs in the Trucial States. Abu-Dhabi. The Emirates Center For Strategic Studies and Research.
- Almandous, Faisal M.. (2009). The History of Health Services in the Trucial States. Ras Al Khaima: Center of Studies and Documents.
- AlOtaiba, Manei. (1990). Oil and the UAE Economies.
- Faris, Abdulla. (2001).The Eastern Indian Company and its Role in the Arabian Gulf(1885-

1600). Ras Al Khaima: Center of Studies and Documents.

- Farouq, Omar. (1985). The History of the Arabian Gulf. Baghdad: Wasit Press.
- Hellyer, Peter. (1998). The Hidden Riches: An Introduction to the Archeology of the UAE. Dubai.
- Ibrahim, A.A. (2004). Abu-Dhabi : The Unification of the Emirate and the Foundation of the Federation. Abu-Dhabi: Center of Documentation and Research.
- Khouri, Ibrahim. (2001). Ahmed bin Majed: His Life and Works. Ras Al Khaima: Center of Studies and Documents.
- ----- (1999). The Arab Sultanate of Hormuz. Ras Al Khaima: Center of Studies and Documents.
- Maitra, Jayanti and Afra Al-Hajji. (2001). Qasr Al Hosn: The History Of The Rulers Of Abu Dhabi 1793 -1966. Abu-Dhabi. Center of Documentation and Research.
- ----- (2007). Zayed: From Challenge to Union. Abu-Dhabi. Center of Documentation and Research.
- Mohamed, Khalid Salem. (1982) The Skippers of the Arabian Gulf and Their Navigational Classifications. Kuwait.
- Murad, Mohamed Adnan (1989). The Conflicts of Powers in the Indian Ocean. Damascus.
- Potts, Daniel T. (1998). The Pre-Islamic Coinage of Eastern Arabia. Sharjah. Department of Culture and Information.
- Qasim, Jamal Zakaria. (1985). The Arabian Gulf (1507-1840). Cairo: Dar Alfikr Al Arabi.
- Rashid, Ali Mohamed.(1989). The Political and Economic Treaties between the Trucial States and Britain(1806-1971). The Emirati Writers Union Publications.
- Sammour, Zuhdi Abdul-Majid. (1985). The Political History of the Trucial Coast. Kuwait: Thatessalasel.
- Serrai,Hamad bin. (2000). The Arabian Gulf Region from the Third Century (BC) to the First Two Centuries (AD). Alain: Alfarah press.
- Shihab, Hasan. Ahmed bin Majed and Navigation in the Indian Ocean. Ras Al Khaima: Center of Studies and Documents.
- Slot, B.J. (1993). The Arabs of the *Gulf*, 1602-1784, trans. Aida Khouri. Abu-Dhabi. The Cultural Foundation.
- Victor Solheim. (2009) AlQawasim Alliance and the British Policy in The Arabian Gulf. Dubai.

Chapter Three

The Main Geographical Features of the United Arab Emirates



Chapter Three

The Main Geographical Features of the United Arab Emirates

Dr. Saif Al Qaydi

Introduction

This chapter explores the astronomical and relative location and size as well as the shape of the UAE through a study of its political borders. The chapter also describes the UAE topographical phenomena shaping the land of the country through its three divisions: the coastal strip, the mountainous region, and the interior desert region. Moreover, this chapter discusses the climatic conditions of the UAE and the most important freshwater resources, in addition to the Emirati islands, as an important part of the topography of the country. Besides, the chapter sheds light on the economic importance of the country's geographical location.

This chapter is divided into three parts and demonstrates the following topics: in the first part, the importance of the UAE is displayed through navigation of its geographical features and astronomical site in addition to its size. The political significance of the country will be engaged in connection to the peculiarity of its geographical characteristics. The second part of the chapter probes the UAE's natural characteristics such as the general geological formations and the units of terrain besides the western and eastern coastal strip and the gravel plains. In addition, the mountainous highlands and valleys and the areas of dunes and sandy plains as well as the climatic conditions, water sources and the UAE islands are discussed.

The third part briefly analyzes the economic geography of the country, by illuminating the importance and the contribution of the natural, human and economic resources of the UAE in its economic stability.

The Geographical Location of the UAE

In order to explore the central geographical features of the United Arab Emirates, it is crucial to be aware of the two major divisions of the science of geography including physical geography and human geography. In terms of Physical Geography, it underlines the importance of the geographical location and the formation of the Earth's surface and the climatic conditions and plant life integral to the UAE. Regarding Human Geography, it tackles the human, agricultural, industrial and financial activities besides the impact of the regional and political conditions as well as the distribution of the population. The geographical location of any country in the world is a mirror of the important features that contribute to the maritime and territorial characteristics of the country. It also plays a pivotal role in the economic policies integral to the sustainable development projects and future policies of any country. For example, the geographical location of any country near water bodies will enable the population to practice economic activities related to fishing and trade in addition to the industries which are contingent upon these activities. Further, the geographical location of any country is influenced by social and political events which take place in neighboring countries, particularly at times of crises.

An analysis of the geographical location of the territory of the UAE, reveals the intermediate position of the country among tourist and commercial areas as clarified on the world map. This peculiar location enables the country to play a vital role on a variety of levels. Like London which is located in the western part of Europe and Beijing in East Asia, Dubai is one of the most important commercial and touristic hubs in the world. The distance between London – the center of European tourism and trade – and Dubai is 5500 kilometers whereas the distance between Dubai

and Beijing, the leading commercial hub in - Eastern Asia - is estimated at 5700 kilometers. This means that the city of Dubai - UAE - is located at the center of the biggest commercial and touristic hubs all over the world. In terms of the connection between the continents of North America and the Oceania continent (Australia and the Pacific Islands), it becomes obvious that the length of the distance from Dubai to the city of Sydney in Southeast Australia is amounting to almost 12,500 km, and the distance between Dubai and the city of Sao Paulo in Brazil is estimated at 12,200 km. In this sense, the geographical location of the UAE constitutes the primary axis, or a transit point, which enables the cities of the country to play a vital role in trade and tourism as reflected throughout the world map.

The geographical location is not the only element which affects the development and growth of economic activities in any country in the world. There are other factors including governmental policies which leave their imprint and impact on development. For example, when the United Arab Emirates was founded on December 2 of 1971, there were many countries in the Arab region such as Iraq, Tunisia and Egypt characterized by an economic and social status which was superior to the position of the United Arab Emirates at that time.

The emerging country was able to occupy a distinguished position on the world map thanks to the effort of the UAE leaders -headed by the founding father, the late Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan Al Nahyan- and the support of their Highnesses, the Supreme Council Members and Rulers of the Emirates. The emerging nation has managed reach the highest ranks among the world countries in terms of the availability of social services and the diversity of local economic structures. Thereupon the UAE

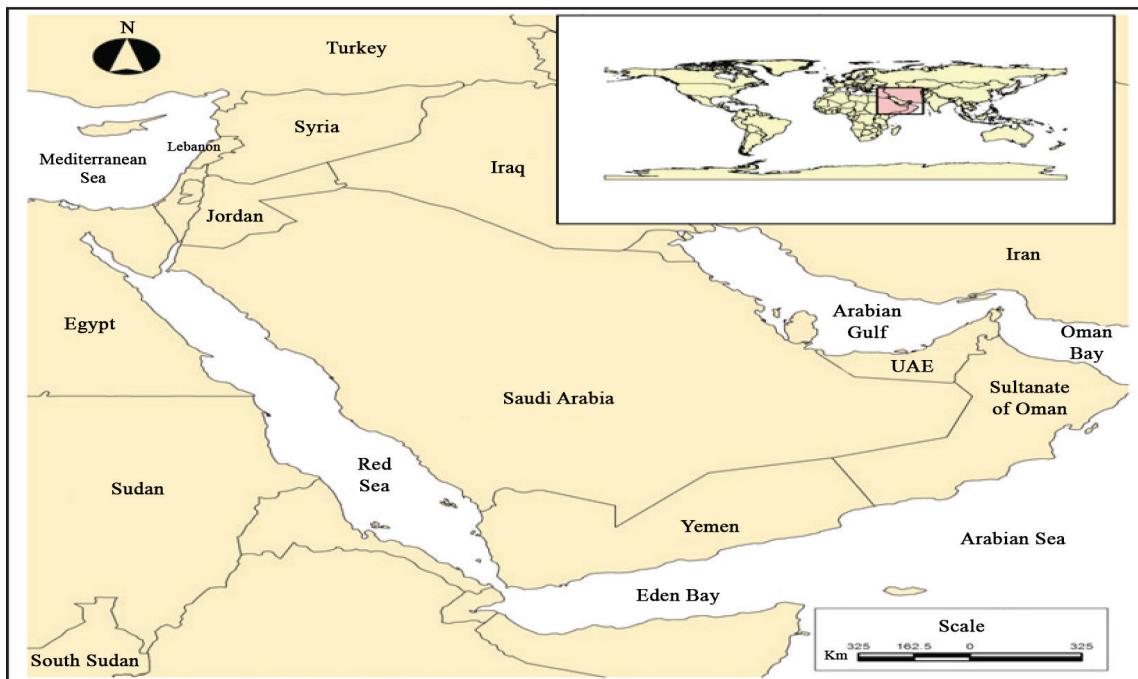
was ranked at the top occupying the first place in the Arab world according to the well-being index (2012). The country also occupies the 27th position among all countries in the world not only for the services provided to its citizens, but for the services provided to all segments of the population living on its territory.¹

The Importance of the Astronomical and Geographical location of the UAE

The UAE lies between $22^{\circ}30'$ and 26° north latitude (north of the equator) and between 51° and $56^{\circ}25'$ east longitude. The UAE territories are located within the tropical warm climate scale (Fig. 1).

(Fig. 1)

The Geographical location of the United Arab Emirates



The UAE population was affected by its geographical location, which overlooks two major water bodies. The UAE borders the open water of the Gulf of Oman which extends for 90 kilometers on the east and borders the Arabian Gulf which extends for more than 620 km. Since ancient times, the UAE's geographical location greatly

affected the quality of economic activities practiced by the residents of the country who became interested in diving for pearls and fishing besides being involved in trade, navigation and commercial enterprises. The UAE people, due to the impact of the geographical location, acquired the love of adventure, roaming and travel.

The Political Borders of the UAE

The UAE territories are located in the southeastern part of the Arabian Peninsula and thus fall within the southwest of the continent of Asia. As a result of its geographical location, the country gained a continental character due to its location in the hot, dry tropics. The UAE shares adjacent political borders with the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, Qatar and the Sultanate of Oman, where the territories of Oman and the UAE converge in more than one location, especially the Sha'am and Khasb region in the north of the Arabian Gulf, and in the south to the Gulf of Oman near the Khatmet Malaha area near the city of Kalba in addition to the Khatmet AlShakla region near the city of Al Ain. In the south, the UAE territories are adjacent to the borders of Saudi Arabia and in the west, the maritime borders of the country are adjacent to the territorial waters of both Qatar and Saudi Arabia.

The total area of the country excluding islands is estimated at 77,700 square kilometers. The country is a geographical area extending from Dohat Asameer located Southeast of the peninsula of Qatar to the Musandam peninsula and the mountaintops in the west without interruption. This extension has facilitated the communication process among the local population living on the coast, and the interior regions due to the lack of natural barriers separating them.

The geometrical shape corresponding to the form of the UAE is the trapezoidal

–angled shape or the right-angled triangle. If we draw a map of the UAE, we rarely find the emergence of any part of the country outside the scope of the two previous forms. The geographical location taking the shape of the right-angled triangle increases the degree of interdependence between the inhabitants of the cities and villages constituting the country.²

The Physical Characteristics of the UAE

The natural characteristics of the territory of the United Arab Emirates are manifold including plains, mountains, sand dunes, coasts and islands. These natural characteristics have contributed to the topographical, climatic and environmental diversity. They also have affected the general environmental aspects of the UAE. This diversity has left its impact on the style of living and the quality of economic activities practiced by the inhabitants of the land since ancient times. They also left their imprint on the local people's ability to adapt to life in those environments. The topography of any country usually plays an important role in the formation of the natural environment, such as high temperatures, the wind speed, precipitation and water sources. **The following is a summary of natural characteristics of the territories of the UAE :**

The General Geological Formations and the Units of Terrain

The terrain of the UAE territories varies from place to place according to some factors including:

- The quality of the rocky composition.
- Internal tectonic forces.
- External Forces due to Weathering and Erosion

Arab and foreign researchers and scientists have thoroughly analyzed the UAE territory exploring the diverse terrain formations and the rocky compositions including their geological times.³ With regard to the quality of the components of the rocks constituting the UAE territories, it is apparent that the mountainous areas in the country are composed of three types of rocks. Hardened igneous rocks such as the gabbro and diorite rocks are found in the northern hills and are called the Hormuz rocks. The sedimentary rocks consist of the remains of other rocks after being exposed to erosion and weathering and transported by wind before being deposited. After being deposited, the remains of other rocks composed the sedimentary rocks. The formations of the sedimentary rocks date back to the Jurassic Era. They also contain layers of Permian which appear over large areas of the masses forming the mountaintops. Regarding the metamorphic rocks, one may find them in the mountainous regions near Masafi and Mafout.⁴ These rocks are transformed as a result of exposure to extreme heat and pressure. In general, all these types of rocks can be found in the highlands of the Seej Dibba area in the north-eastern regions of the UAE.⁵

Hassan Abo- ALainain divided the geological formations of the United Arab Emirates territories into seven configurations from oldest to newest as follows:⁶

- Basement rocks configurations/ compositions: These rocks are found in some of the UAE coastal islands like Delma, Das and Sir Bani Yas. The formations of these rocks include igneous rocks formations of gabbro and granite besides some deposits of ancient evaporated substances and salt domes which apparently date back to the pre- Permian era.⁷
- Grand Stone Compositions : These stone configurations are found in the Beej Valley areas in Ras Al Khaimah and in the tops of the mountains in the

northern region of the UAE territories.

- Sumani Configurations : These compositions consist of limestone and sand formations and date back to the period between the end of the Permian to Triassic.
- Alhawwasneh Movable Configurations : These formations abound with fossils and limestone. They are found in the valley of the Dibba areas and in the northern regions of the country. They date back to the period from the Triassic age to the high Cretaceous era.
- The Fiery Rift Formations (Alsamayel) : These formations are composed of gabbro and serpentine rocks and date back to the period extending from the Permian era until the end of the high Cretaceous age.
- The limestone formations in the third geological time : They are represented by the heights of Jebel Hafeet south of Al Ain and Malaqet mountain.
- Surface Holocene Deposition: It is the same quality of sediments consisting of sand dunes and some deposits of desert plains and flood sediment and marshes.

There are some deposits of coarse gravel in flood plains that are found at the foot of the slopes of the mountains in the northern areas in the country. They consist of marshes and salt deposits that spread in the coastal marshes areas such as the marshes of Dubai and the marshes of Meti in Abu Dhabi.

The most important terrain areas in the UAE could be divided into the following units:

The Coastline :

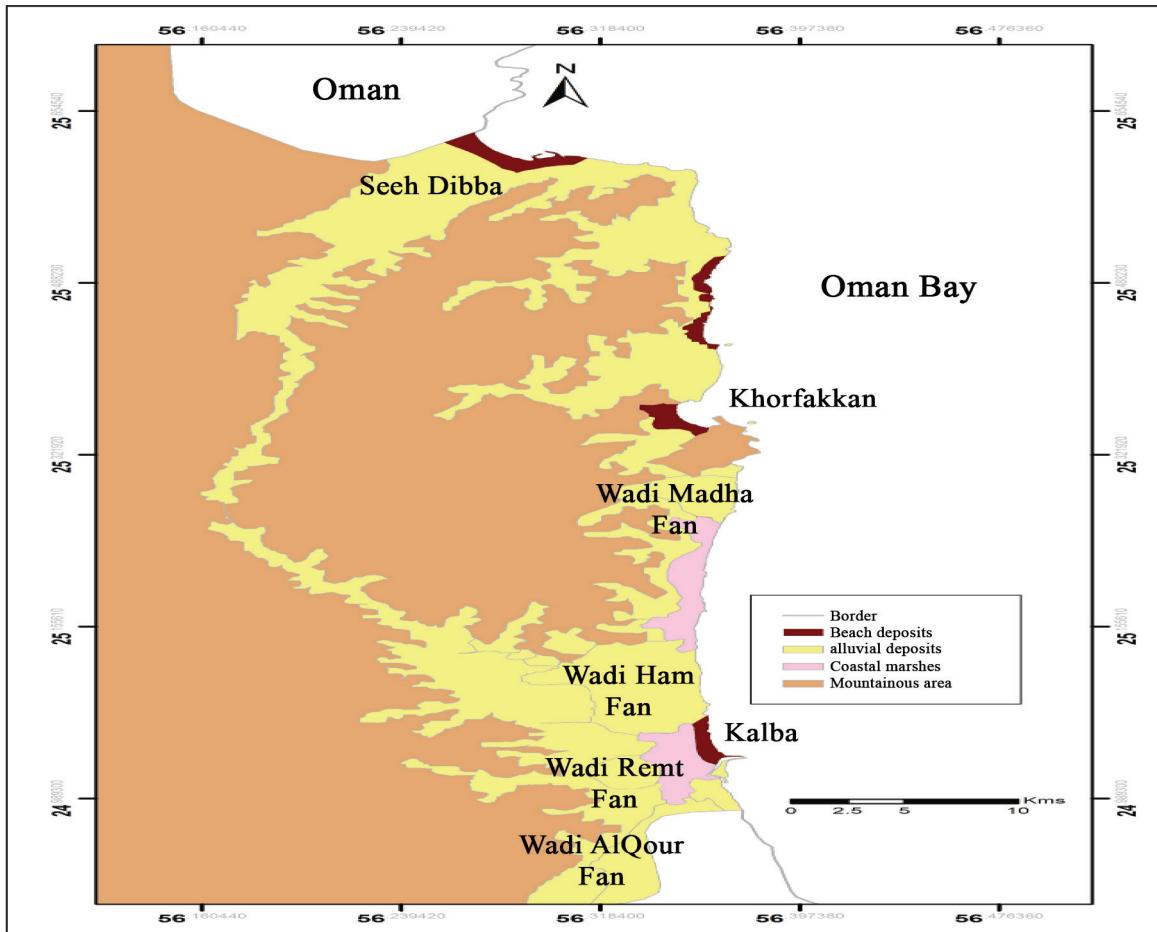
The UAE territories are bordering two coasts: the west coast and the east coast. The territories located on the west coast overlook the waters of the Arabian

Gulf whereas the lands located on the east coast overlook the Gulf of Oman. These deep-water fronts vary from coast to coast. While the depth of waters of the Gulf of Oman is more than 60 meters, the depth of the Arabian Gulf waters is about 20 meters. The waters of these coasts are affected by the water currents sweeping them, particularly the current of water passing through the Gulf of Oman to the Arabian Gulf with an estimated speed of 1.5 miles per hour as a result of the differing water quality in both watercourses in terms of temperature, salinity and density. In fact, the water currents move from the high-density water bodies to the less density watercourses. For example, there is a water current which passes from the northern Arabian Gulf adjacent to the southern Iranian coast through the Strait of Hormuz and then moves counter-clockwise to come out of the strait in the area adjacent to the west coast of the UAE passing through the coastal areas of Ras Al Khaimah.

■ The East Coast

This coast land includes the territory that stretches between the Ras Dibba area in the north to the Kalba creek region in the south. It extends for a length of 90 km and a width ranging from a few meters to 10 kilometers in some areas. This coast is characterized by the existence of several alluvial fans and the spread of Alseyouh which are flat plain areas containing small stones. This coast is given several names such as the Batinah plain and the plain of AlShemeiliyya.⁸ Deep valley spread across the central coastal areas and the coast is characterized by the scarcity of islands. However, the coast contains some marine obelisks, which consists of igneous rocks.

Figure 2
The Most Important Alluvial Fans in the UAE East Coast



Sources: Abu -Alainain, Hassan (1989). P. 315. Ghoneim, Abdul Hamid 2001 p. 68, AlKetbi Asma.2005 p. 59.

The fans of Dibba and Wadi Madha, in addition to the fans of Wadi Ham, are the most important alluvial fans sloping from the mountainous areas along the East Coast (Figure 2)⁹. Bends and zigzags abound in the northern part of the East Coast near Khorfakkan and Dibba while the coast line extends straight up in the southern part from Khorfakkan until the creek of Kalba Khorkalpa near the borders of the United Arab Emirates with Oman. Agricultural land is extending in areas where alluvial fans are found. Thanks to the alluvial fans, the soil becomes fertile which

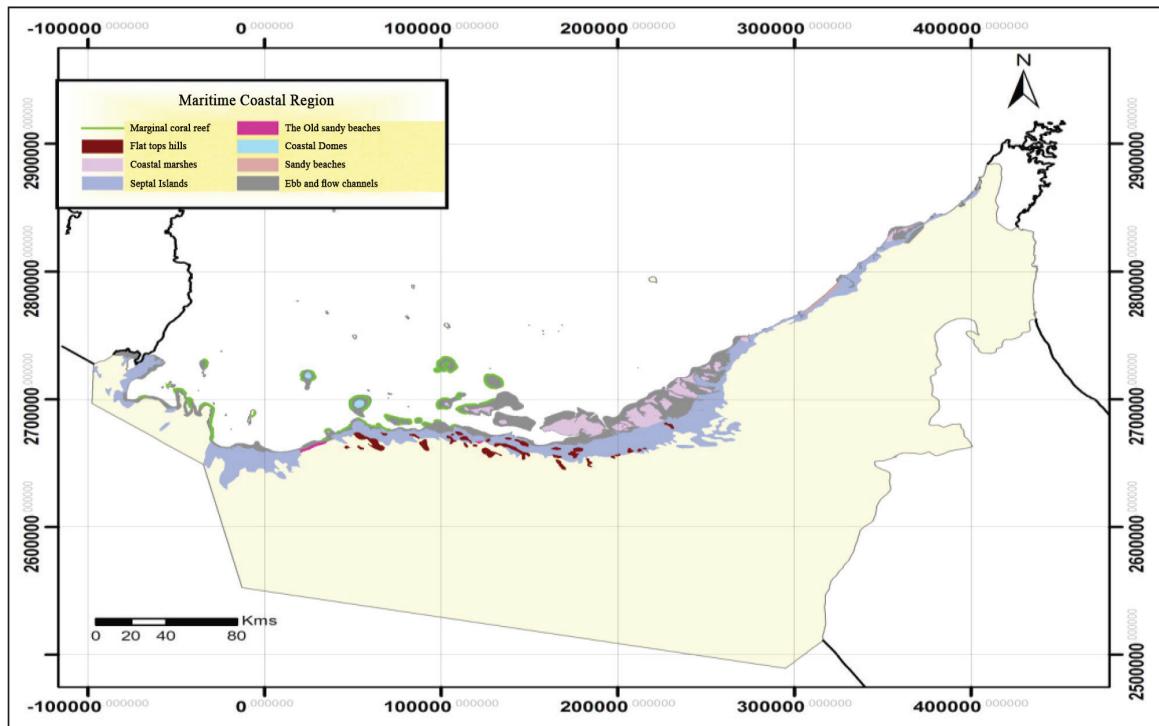
attracts a population concentration that has settled in these areas since ancient times. There are also some water tongues or the so-called Khors / creeks, including Khorkalba (the Kalba creek) where mangroves (Crimea) grow on its coasts, and Khor Fakkan (the Fakkan creek) which constitutes a natural harbor on the East Coast since ancient times. In addition, there is the creek of Dibba in the northern part of the East Coast of the UAE.

The East Coast is one of the important and strategic areas in the UAE where its waters overlook an open sea area (Indian Ocean) and its territory is located outside the Arab Gulf entrance (the Strait of Hormuz). Across the East Coast, the UAE has established oil refineries and areas of assembly of oil components exported abroad without having to go through the Strait of Hormuz. Obviously, population centers are concentrated in the cities of Dibba, Khorfakkan, Fujairah and Kalba. The East Coast is one of the most significant regions in the export of basic construction materials such as cement and all kinds of rock crumbs.

■ **The West Coast**

The West Coast extends for 640 kilometers from Aldoien Bay and Dohat Samara region in the south-west of the UAE territories to the Omani borders on the Arabian Gulf, specifically in the area of Shaam in Ras Al Khaimah. The quality of the geological composition of the west coast vary from place to place. For example, ancient geological formations appear in the northwestern region of the mountain areas, which consist mainly of the Musandam limestone formations, and the formation of local grand stones as in the areas Rams and Shaam in Ras Al Khaimah. In the southern regions of the west coast, the majority of the geological compositions include sandy carbonate formations. These formations appear in the sediments of the coastal marshes and beach sediments as in the neighboring areas of the island of Abu Dhabi.

Figure 3
The UAE West Coast



Sources: AlQaydi, Saif and others (2004), The United Arab Emirates Geography Monograph. Alain : Emirates University Press, p.63

Extensive sandy sediments in the form of dunes spread across the north-eastern regions of the west coast. Sandy sediments also sprawl in the areas of Jebel Ali in Dubai located to the west of Abu Dhabi City.¹⁰ The west coast is characterized by the diversity of morphological characteristics and the coast stretches from the northern regions of the Emirate of Ras Al Khaimah at the foot of the mountains in the area of Shaam. Then, the coast gradually expands whenever it turns southward where it meets with the sand dunes and marshy areas near the land border with Saudi Arabia in the south. The coast is characterized by its natural creeks such as the Dubai Creek, Ajman and Sharjah Creeks. The coast also abounds with natural islands and coral reefs, especially in the southern and south-western regions (Figure 3).

The Gravel Plains

The gravel plains are those flat lands of the earth's surface which are often made up of sand, gravel and grit particles formed at the exits of the valleys that descend from the Oman Mountain series located to the west of the territory of the United Arab Emirates. These gravel plains are arable whenever appropriate amounts of water are available. There is some vegetation that feeds the animals that live in these plains.

The UAE local people give different names to the gravel plain calling it (Alseeh) or (Aljaw) or (Alyaw). These gravel plains extend from the Ras Al Khaimah region and specifically from Wadi Beej in the north to the deposits of Wadi Eideh in the south, then they reappear in the Aljaw plain in the Al Ain region where their width is estimated at about 25 km.¹¹ The majority of the deposits of gravel plains date back to the period extending from the late Pleistocene time (70 thousand years ago) to the middle Pleistocene era (from 500-120 thousand years ago).¹²

These plains permeate some hills like Mount Maliha and Mount AlFayah and these plains are widening in some areas for up to about 16 km. These plains gradually descend from the east (at the foot of the mountains) toward the western areas ending in the dunes regions especially near the Maliha and Almadam areas in the central region.¹³ These plains include some human population settlements who have stayed there since ancient times. The UAE residents settled in these plains due to the availability of water and fertile soil that have contributed to the prosperity of the agricultural activity in the past periods that preceded the establishment of the UAE Federation in the early seventies. The Almaareed and Alnakheel areas in Ras Al Khaimah are considered as the most important human settlements in the north of the gravel plains, while the longer areas of Manama, Al Dhaid and Maliha are the most important settlements located in the central regions of the plains. Moreover, Alfoa

area and the regions located near Jebel Hafeet are among the most important human settlements in the plains areas in the southern part.

Highlands

The mountain heights are among the most important terrain in the UAE because of their diversity in terms of geological formations and geomorphological phenomena deployed in the northern and north-eastern parts. These mountains are considered a natural extension of the Oman Mountain series. They stretch from the northern regions adjacent to the Omani borders with a length of 155 km to the nearby city of Al Ain in the south and with a width ranging from 10-37 km in some southern parts. These heights are called several names, including AlShemeiliyya Mountains and the stone mountains are due to the diversity of the ranges of the mountain series in addition to the diversity of the geological formations in the region. Some parts of these mountains are composed of igneous rocks and metamorphic rocks where others contain calcareous sedimentary rocks dating back to the Cretaceous age.

Through an analysis of the visual space (or aerial photos) of the mountainous regions (Figure 4) and in light of the previous studies of (Abu-Alainain 1996 Abdul Salam 1978 m and Al Ketbi, 2004), one can divide the mountainous areas in the UAE into three sections: the first section includes the heights of the mountaintops and the second includes AlShemeiliyya mountains whereas the third section comprises the isolated mountain heights.

■ Heights of the mountaintops

They extend from Musandam in the north (Oman) to the crack of Dibba in the south. These mountains include the highest peaks which reach a height of 1934 m from the surface of the earth. The Geological Age of this region goes back to the

second Geological time and they are made up of sedimentary carbonaceous limestone rocks dating back to the Cretaceous age. These mountains are permeated by many deep valleys that descend from the east and end their courses on the west side of the Arabian Gulf coast.

■ The Heights of AlShemeiliyya

This mountain bloc is given numerous scientific and local titles such as Alsamayel Mountains mass and the Fiery Sheeted mass and the Central Mountain mass in addition to **the heights of AlShemeiliyya**. They stretch from the northern area of Dibba to the political borders of the UAE with the Sultanate of Oman in the south. These mountains constitute a huge and expansive mass of igneous rocks with subterranean origin. This mountain mass was transformed into heights after being subjected to coldness in the ground and in the aftermath of the crystallization of its minerals. At its western side there was an overlap between this mountain series and Alhawwasneh configurations (dolomitic limestone and metamorphic rocks and other fiery formations). The length of this mountain mass is approximately 90 km and its width ranges between 45-60 km on the side of the eastern coast of the UAE until the gravel plain areas in the West. Its height ranges between 1000 to 1500 m above the ground.¹⁴

This mountainous mass is characterized by abundant mountain fissures that had a great role in the formation of the extensions of the Wadis. Some of these Wadis move from the north -east to the south -west with the general extension of the surface of the crack of Wadi Dibba. Other Wadis are heading from north-west to south -east with the general extension of the surface of the crack of Wadi Ham.

In addition to the aforementioned mountain mass, there are some mountainous heights that are called the isolated highlands which include old configurations and compositions. Most of the formations of these heights go back to the pre- Cambrian era.

One of them is Jebel Dhanna in Abu Dhabi with a height of no more than 100 meters above the ground. This mountain consists of diversified salt domes that go back to configurations and formations inherent in the Hormuz Cambrian period.¹⁵ In addition, there is a mountain located in the Sir Bani Yas Island, which does not exceed a height of 140 m. Besides, there are some highlands, which consist of newly formed rocks, which were formed in the third geological time (66 million years ago) such as Jebel Hafeet, the Alfaya Mountain and the Maliha Mount, which can be seen to the right of the land route linking Maliha and Almadam area and which is intersected by the highway between Kalba and Sharjah in the central region of the Emirate of Sharjah. These heights are composed of several limestone rock formations from bottom to top, known as Hafeet configurations besides other industrial configurations. These heights are topped with air limestone formations as found in Jebel Hafeet located in the Al Ain region.¹⁶

Figure 4
Satellite vision of the mountainous heights in the UAE

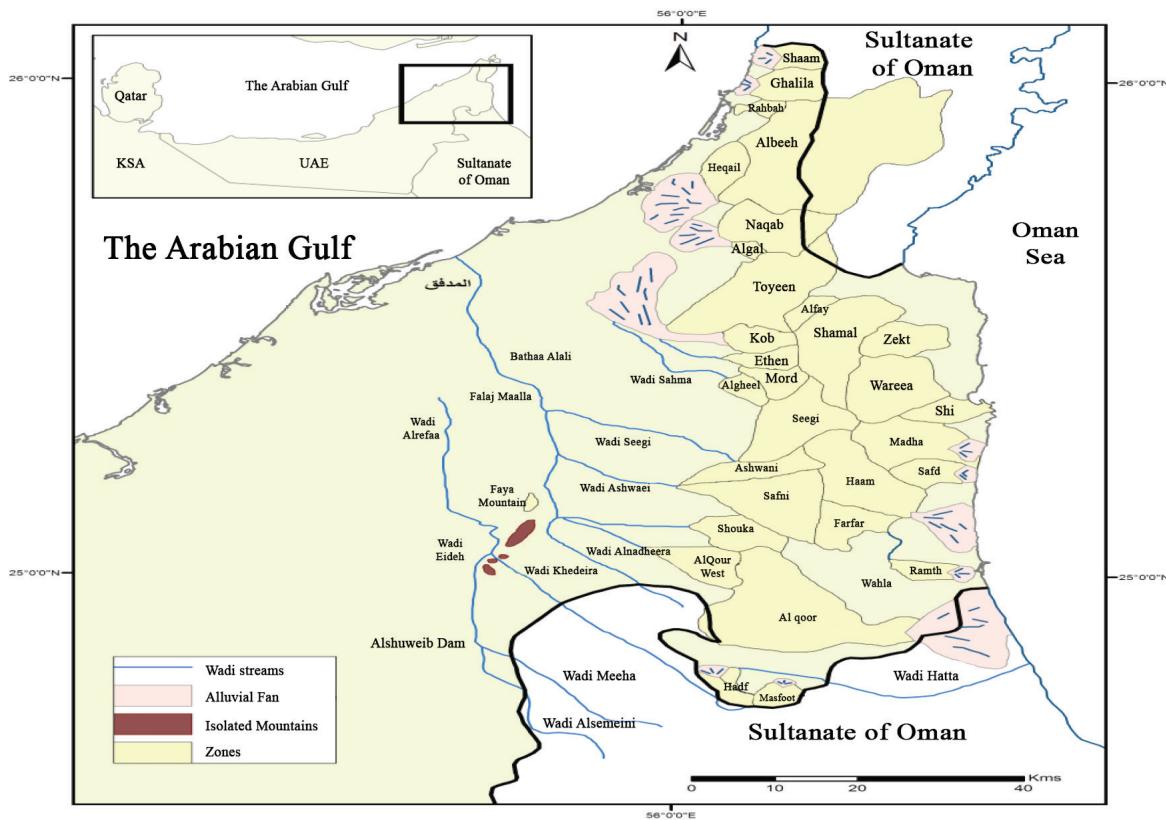


Landsat images from USGS Glovis archive Source: <http://glovis.usgs.gov/>

The UAE Wadis / Valleys

The Wadis were considered as the main sources of water in the period before the establishment of the UAE Federal Union. Many of the villages and cities of the UAE are located on the mouths and trails of the wadis such as Albathna, Masafi, Fujairah and Kalba. Wadis are watercourses formed as a result of tectonic lifting operations since the Miocene age (23 million years ago), Most of the wadis dug their streams in the rocks and formed deep river gorges with high and steep sides whose cross-sections are V-shaped. The streams of the wadis stretch along the surfaces of the cracks and areas of geological weakness in the northeastern parts of the United Arab Emirates. In the UAE there are more than 30 major Wadis fed by deep mountainous tributaries as in the case of the Wadi of Dibba and Wadi Ham¹⁷ (Figure 5).

Figure 5 : The most important wadis in the UAE



There are many wadis which stem from the territory of the UAE and pour into Oman such as Wadi Hatta and Wadi AlQour. Alternately there are some wadis that spring from the Omani territory and flow into the UAE such as Wadi Madha, Wadi Al Khudeira and Alsouumni. Many of these wadis flow into the Gulf of Oman and others pour into the Arabian Gulf. Some wadis which have tributaries Wadi Alseeji, Wadi Safni, Wadi Shouka and Wadi Alnadheira combine to form a big wadi stream flowing into Wadi Lamha located in Falaj Almaalla which, in turn, forms a Delta fan in the Medfaq area on the Arabian Gulf. Other wadis combine such as Wadi Khedeira and Wadi Alsemeini to merge with Wadi Eideh and flow into the interior desert. In the pre- Federation era, these wadis had a significant economic importance. They constituted favorite locations for population centers. Some of the water in these wadis was available throughout the year, such as the water in Wadi Alseeji and Wadi Albathna. In recent years, the majority of these wadis become dry except for some periods following rainfall in the winter months. At that time, they are transformed into tourist areas attracting the local population.

Plains and Sandy Dunes areas

The plains and sand dunes occupy most of the territory of the United Arab Emirates extending mainly from the central regions of the north until the western regions at Liwa and the Empty Quarter in the south, thus covering three - quarters of the country's total area. This area is a natural extension of the areas of the Empty Quarter. The plains and sand dunes areas are not flat as seen through the visual space and satellite images. The sand dune areas may rise in the western regions to more than 300 meters above the ground. The

sand dunes area is called (Qarn) by the local community, such as the Qarn Bint Saud area which has a height of 325 meters above the ground.¹⁸ The rest of the other regions constitute desert plains of an average height between 10-30m, especially when approaching the coastal plains areas. The general regression of these sand dunes extends from the east to the west, especially in the southern regions where the height of the sand dunes in AlKhatm and Almanader areas near the Omani/Emirati border reach more than 250m above the ground. The height of the dunes gradually declines to up to 100 meters in the western regions of Dhafra.¹⁹ Some small and medium - height shrubs and trees such as AlGhof and Algoev spread in this desert area.

As a result of an act of natural factors such as weathering and erosion, the sandy limestone rocks were subjected to fragmentation. Consequently, deposits are composed in the plains and sand dunes of silicate and incoherent limestone and fragmented fiery and acid igneous rocks.²⁰ These dunes are interspersed in low-lying areas and marshes which are originally ancient lakes of the Empty Quarter spreading in the south-western areas. Some salt marshes, such as marshes of AlKhatm, spread near the land route connecting the city of Al Ain with Abu Dhabi in addition to the marshes Dhafra and Almojn. In the far southwest, one finds the Meti marsh area where some algae and herbal plants grow only in that region due to the high salinity of the soil. The Dhafra region, located in the middle of the sand dunes, is considered as the largest of these areas where it covers a space area of more than 50% of the sand dune area in the UAE. The same area includes the most important land-based oil fields such as Habshan, Bu Hasa and Asab.

The UAE Islands

The UAE islands are of particular importance to the population. The islands constitute one of the terrain systems because the country's space / area is not limited to the dry land only, but extends to its marine areas. In the United Arab Emirates, there are more than 200 islands of a variety of origin, size and shape. Some of the islands are close to the coast line. The other islands are situated away from the coast line and are located in the territorial waters of the country. In general, the islands in the UAE can be divided on the basis of differences in the site, the overall shape of the islands and their varying size besides the geological composition as illustrated in the following section (Table 1).

**Table 1 : The most important sections of the UAE islands
In terms of geographical location, shape, size and geological composition**

Geological configurations	Area	Form	Location
high level islands and salt domes that date back to the Cambrian era. Qarnein- Low level islands, low terrain, recent geological age. Algharabi- Alfeteesi- Buksheisha.	Big-sized islands. Delma-Sir Bani Yas- Abu-Alabyad Small-sized islands. Salaha – Alhomr-Esh	Oval islands. Arzena- Sir Bani Yas- Delma Cross-sectional :shaped Islands AbuAlabyad and Moroh Longitudinal shaped Islands :AbuDhabi and Dabeiyya	Near the coastline Alwaheel- Buhail- Alsadiyyat Far from the coast line :Das - Abu-Mousa -Greater-and Lesser Tunbs

Source: Abu Alainain, Hassan (1996) p. 82. 85.

By studying the data in the table above, one will observe the diversity in geographical location, size and geological formations of the UAE islands. This diversity has significantly contributed to the economic exploitation of these islands. For example, there are old geologic formation islands – such as the Hormuz domes and the salty heights of AlDhana- whose rocks date back to the Cambrian Period (about 570 million years old) and earlier. The rock configurations of these islands rushed from the bottom to appear on the surface in the form of rocky salt domes due to the emergence of salt on the top. Some of the other islands are newly formed of sandy sediments dating back to the end of the fourth geologic time (almost 2 million years).²¹

It was known that these islands played a vital role in the periods preceding the Federal Union where the inhabitants used them in their marine movement and in their communication with neighboring areas by virtue of their residence near these water bodies. For example, during the pearl diving era, these islands were used as places of rest for the pearl-diving ships and the divers used them as a refuge during the period of high sea waves and the occurrence of severe storms. These islands constitute an integral part of the UAE territories. There is no doubt that these islands have valuable strategic and economic importance. For example, the islands of Greater Tunb, Lesser Tunb and Abu Musa are Emirati islands captured by Iran by force. The Iranian invaders captured?? and expelled the Emirati residents from these islands. Currently, the UAE is still seeking a diplomatic means to recover the islands from Iran.²² These islands are economic treasures that could be exploited in economic, residential and tourism projects to provide job opportunities and attract tourists. There are multiple sources of livelihoods in these islands that could be

beneficial to the local population. The natural resources in the islands such as oil wealth can be exploited in addition to taking advantage of the rock stockpiles which will benefit the population and the surrounding environment. The UAE Government has built several tourist and agricultural projects on many of these islands which has contributed to attract populations and commercial / economic projects, paving the way for the possibility of more development in these areas in future.

Climatic Conditions

Climatic characteristics are among the natural factors which affect human life on earth, anywhere and anytime. According to human physical composition, human beings could not bear a sharp decline or rise in temperature, and the pattern of human life is affected when the degree of humidity substantially increases in the air. Human productivity significantly declines and deteriorates in the case of high temperatures coupled with high humidity. There is no doubt that the majority of the world's countries have attempted to modify environmental conditions in which man lives in order to increase productivity. Explicitly, climate elements including solar radiation, temperature, atmospheric pressure, wind, humidity and rainfall greatly affect the daily lives of the residents of the United Arab Emirates. Therefore, the working hours in the summer months are reduced, particularly with regard to work in open spaces. The government has enacted strict laws to protect the lives of laborers in the afternoon periods during summer. The UAE territory is covered by more than 65 meteorological stations to monitor the weather conditions on a daily basis. These meteorological stations are equipped with the latest equipment and devices for monitoring the status of air temperatures and atmospheric pressure, wind speed and humidity and rainfall (Fig.6).²³

Figure 6

Geographical distribution of meteorological stations in the UAE in 2013

Meteorological stations in the UAE

Saqr Port - Mebreh Mount- Umm Al-Quwain- Ajman- Ras Ghannada – Sir Bu Neeir –Ab-AlBukhoush- Das Island- Qarnain- Makaseb- Ras Mesheirab- AlGhowaifat- Delma- Sir Bani Yas – Alyasat- Peninsula Borders Guards- Jess Mount- Dedna- Altobein- Masafi- - AlDhaid – Shouka- Falaj Maalla- Almanama- AlQour- Hatta- -Maleha- AlShuwaib- Alfoa- Khatm AlShakla- AlQatara- Alain- Suwayhan- Alfaqa- Seeh AlSelm- Rakna- Damtha- AlKhazna- Ashaab- Alwathba- Alrawda- Alarrad- Alqoua- Razeen-Buhamra –Zayed city – Walbeed- Mekheiraz- Mezeeraa- Hamim- Qasyoura- Umm Alzomoul.
KM: 15-30-45-60-----

Map Key

Meteorological stations

Source: National Centre for Meteorology and Seismology. <http://new.ncms.ae/home>

This chapter focuses on four major elements affecting the climate characteristics in the UAE as follows :

Temperature

Temperatures in the UAE rise during the summer months (June and July), reaching an average of 47 degrees Celsius. Temperatures drop to reach 2-7 degrees Celsius in some of the winter months (January and February), particularly in the northern regions as monitored by the Mount Jess station in Ras Al Khaimah at the height of 1,739 m from the surface of the Earth (Table 2). In general, temperatures rise during the summer classes in all regions of the United Arab Emirates. For example, in the south-western areas, temperatures reach about 49 degrees Celsius in June and July as monitored by Umm Alzomoul station while temperatures go down in the same area to around 6-7 degrees celsius during the winter months in January and February. This

variation in temperature between the high areas in the north and south of the country directly impacts the quality of the vegetation and the breeds of animals that are raised in these areas.

Table 2
Temperatures rates in Mount Jess, Ras Al Khaimah, Umm Alzomoul and Abu Dhabi, 2004-2011

Month	Temperature (°C)			Month	Temperature (°C)		
	Umm Alzomoul Station				Jess Mount Station		
	Max.	Mean	Min.		Max.	Mean	Min.
Jan	31.3	18.9	07.0	Jan	19.5	08.2	-00.3
Feb	38.3	22.0	06.4	Feb	19.7	10.9	-02.7
Mar	41.8	25.8	09.7	Mar	26.0	15.0	04.0
Apr	45.4	30.8	13.8	Apr	28.2	18.8	05.3
May	50.2	35.5	19.2	May	34.2	23.9	09.0
Jun	49.7	37.6	23.2	Jun	36.5	27.1	16.4
Jul	49.8	38.2	23.8	Jul	35.0	27.4	18.1
Aug	49.9	37.9	24.6	Aug	33.9	26.9	17.8
Sep	47.9	35.1	21.9	Sep	31.7	24.6	17.0
Oct	43.4	30.8	17.6	Oct	29.2	20.3	12.9
Nov	38.2	25.7	12.9	Nov	23.7	14.6	04.1
Dec	31.7	20.4	07.8	Dec	21.1	12.3	02.2

Source: National Centre for Meteorology and Seismology. <http://new.ncms.ae/home>

The thermal temperature range (the difference between the degree of major and minor heat during 24 hours) in Alzomoul station is estimated at 31.6 in April, while it reaches no more than 22.9 degrees celsius in the Mount Jess station in the northern regions of the UAE. It is known that the high temperature range significantly affects

the quality of agricultural crops grown in any agricultural region, causing a loss of the agricultural production during the big change in temperature over a short period during any 24-hours. Rising temperatures negatively affect labor productivity and increase the operating costs of factories and related institutions. It also adds additional burdens on the production of electricity generators particularly during the summer months.

Wind and Air Masses

Ostensibly, the air masses affecting the United Arab Emirates territory constitute basic components which contribute to the temperature differences in the periods of the summer months and the winter season. These air masses also affect the amount of rain that falls on the UAE around the year. The territory of the UAE comes under the influence of several marine and continental air masses. In the summer times, the UAE is exposed to continental / tropical air masses coming from Africa and the Arabian Peninsula. These continental / tropical air masses are hot and dry causing dust and whirlwinds which are useful for farmers in terms of affecting the speed of maturation of some of the fruits of palm trees. But, at the same time, these air masses result in the damage and loss of some agricultural crops, especially the mango fruits.

In winter, the UAE is affected by the polar air masses coming from the northern regions of the continent, especially from Iraq, Turkey and Russia which lead to a drop in temperature. Likewise, the UAE territory comes under the impact of some polar maritime air masses that lead to precipitation and rainfall during the winter months.²⁴ Besides, some air masses of tropical marine sources blowing from the Indian Ocean have an effect on some areas of the Sultanate of Oman (Salalah).

These tropical marine air masses constitute a seasonal phenomenon and result in rainfall on the Omani territory. The extended impact of these masses sometimes reaches the UAE territory. In other words, these masses have an impact on some areas of the UAE, causing sporadic summer rainfall called (Alrawaeh) by the local community.

Humidity

The coastal and interior desert areas in the UAE are affected by the rise and fall of humidity rates during the months of the year. The rate of humidity has a direct impact on the mental and physical activity of human beings in general. There is an increase in the humidity rate, coupled with the increasing degrees of heat, during the summer months, especially in the UAE cities situated on the coastline and coastal areas such as Abu Dhabi, Dubai and Fujairah.

What matters in this connection is the relative humidity which is the percentage between the amount of water vapor actually located in a particular volume-unit of air²⁵ and between the amount of what can be carried by this volume of air to reach the degree of saturation at the same temperature and at the same amount of pressure. By studying the data in (Table 3), one will find that the average relative humidity rate during the months of the year is in the range of 60%, which means that moisture / humidity ratios are high in the coastal areas of the United Arab Emirates territory. Moisture / humidity ratios are up during the summer and winter months scoring more than 80% as reported in the cities of Dubai, Abu Dhabi, Sharjah and Fujairah. This high humidity problematizes living without the use of cooling devices. It also makes it difficult for people to get out of their houses to the parks during the summer time when the weather is uncomfortable due to rising humidity.

Table 3
Recordings of Some of the Climatic Elements of in Abu Dhabi
Coastal meteorological Station (2011-2013)

Month	Temperature (°C)			Relative Humidity (%)			Rainfall (mm)	Wind Speed (m/s)	
	Max.	Mean	Min.	Mean Max.	Mean	Mean Min.		Mean	Max.
Jan	30.3	19.8	13.0	82	68	53	13.6	12.6	3.7
Feb	36.2	21.1	13.2	85	68	49	5.0	15.1	4.0
Mar	40.2	23.7	13.4	83	66	45	5.4	14.2	3.9
Apr	43.0	27.5	18.2	78	60	37	10.8	19.1	3.8
May	45.7	31.3	24.0	78	60	36	0.0	13.3	3.5
Jun	46.7	33.3	25.9	79	63	42	0.0	11.3	3.7
Jul	47.9	34.6	28.5	80	64	43	0.0	13.1	3.7
Aug	48.0	35.5	29.1	79	61	34	0.0	10.6	3.6
Sep	45.0	33.5	27.4	81	65	44	0.0	13.2	3.4
Oct	41.6	30.8	24.0	80	65	46	0.0	8.5	3.3
Nov	37.4	26.9	19.0	78	64	48	2.1	14.4	3.5
Dec	30.8	22.2	12.6	81	67	54	28.0	12.6	3.6

Source: National Centre for Meteorology and Seismology. <http://new.ncms.ae/home>

Apparently the humidity rate is lower in some interior desert areas as monitored by AlFaqa station where humidity rate is estimated at

45%, which contributes to the moderation of temperatures during night time in some months of the year (Table 4).

Table (4)
Data of some climatic elements monitored by AlFaqa meteorological station in the interior desert regions (2011-2013)

Month	Temperature (°C)			Relative Humidity (%)			Rainfall (mm)	Wind Speed (m/s)	
	Max.	Mean	Min.	Max.	Mean	Min.		Mean	Max.
Jan	30.7	17.3	05.3	100	63	10	22.1	9	59
Feb	36.7	20.0	04.7	100	55	4	14.1	9	39
Mar	39.5	23.4	09.3	100	44	2	2.6	10	76
Apr	42.8	28.1	10.6	100	37	2	7.8	10	55
May	48.8	32.9	17.4	100	31	1	0.0	10	38
Jun	49.2	35.1	20.4	100	37	1	3.5	10	72
Jul	49.0	36.5	22.4	100	38	2	5.8	10	47
Aug	48.7	36.6	24.4	100	38	2	11.5	9	57
Sep	46.5	33.4	21.1	100	42	2	0.7	9	43
Oct	42.8	29.2	15.9	100	47	3	0.0	8	34
Nov	36.7	23.8	11.1	100	58	7	0.1	8	34
Dec	31.9	18.8	05.6	100	66	5	12.7	8	60

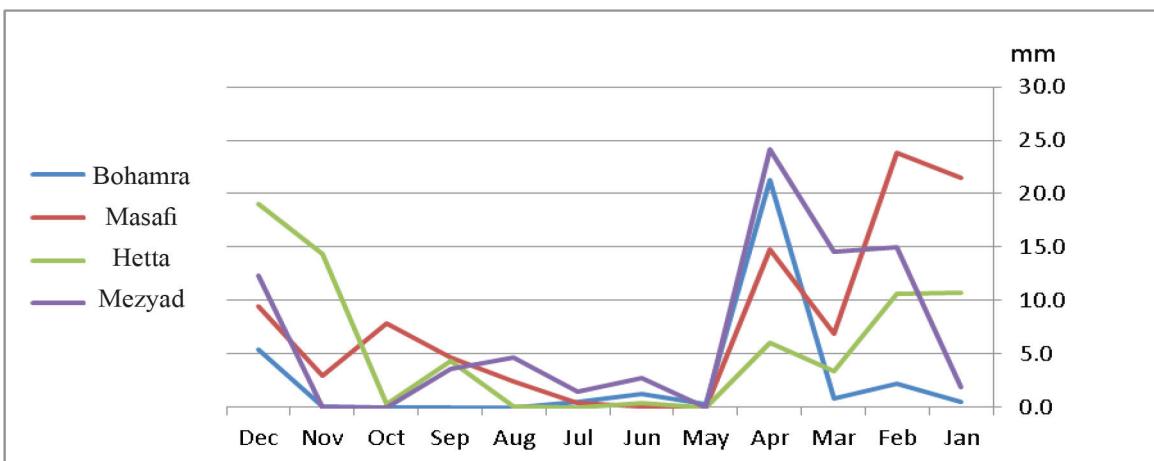
Source: National Centre for Meteorology and Seismology. <http://new.ncms.ae/home>

Rain

As previously mentioned, the UAE lies within the dry deserts zone, therefore, the amount of rain that falls on its territory ranges from 110 to 120 millimeters per year. Through the study of the rainfall amounts in the UAE, the data shows changes in the rain rates from year to year. For example, there are 3-4 years in which the amount of rainfall relatively increased in some areas of the United Arab Emirates reaching to 180 millimeters per year, while the years that followed are distinguished by lack of rain. The rain amount ranges between 100 to 110 mm annually. The amount of rainfall increases during the winter months (Figure 7). The amount of rainfall in the northern areas of the United Arab Emirates territory, in the month of February, is estimated in Masafi at 23.8 mm and 14.4 mm in Hatta. The amount of rainfall in Mazyad is more than 24.2 mm in April, while the amount of rainfall is reduced in the Buhamra area in the western region of Abu Dhabi in February during the winter season to 2.2 mm. Obviously, the amount of rainfall increases in the highland areas of the country's territories in both Masafi and Hatta, while there is less rainfall in the interior desert areas, especially in the area of the Empty Quarter.

Figure (7)

Rainfall Rates in the Stations of Buhamra, Masafi, Hatta and Mazyad (2011-2013)



Fresh water sources and water security in the UAE

Given the geographical location of the UAE within the desert range characterized by high temperatures and lack of rainfall, the country is categorized among the world's poorest countries in groundwater resources. No permanent flowing rivers exist in the UAE, and in the past, groundwater constituted the most important traditional sources of water in the country.

Currently, there are 24 government and quasi-governmental and private institutions concerned with the issue of water in the UAE: Ten government institutions and seven quasi-governmental institutions besides seven private institutions. Four government agencies are also working in drinking / fresh water systems including the Federal Authority for Electricity and Water, the Water and Electricity Authority of Abu Dhabi, Dubai Electricity and Water, and the Electricity and Water Authority in Sharjah.

The above-mentioned institutions are making a strenuous effort to reach possible alternatives and provide the population of the country with sufficient drinking water quantities in affordable and subsidized prices to ease the burden on the UAE residents. The tariff value of the drinking water in the UAE ranges between 1-4 fils per gallon depending on the amount of daily consumption. For example, the tariff value per one gallon of drinking water is worth nearly 3 fils in all the Emirates (with the exception of Abu-Dhabi) if the amount of consumption is (0-6000 gallons of water). The tariff value per gallon of drinking water in the Emirate of Abu Dhabi is only one fil. This pricing policy aims to alleviate the burden on the population.²⁶

In the UAE there are two major types of fresh water sources which are exploited for agricultural purposes and for household uses. The first type includes traditional natural sources such as wells, springs, Aflaj and Albahayes

(small drilling depths ranging from 1-3 meters near the coastal areas) and dams. The second type comprises the modern sources such as refined fresh water supplies, the desalination of the sea water and the use of sewage water. All the cities of the country depend on these sources for irrigation and for daily domestic use in addition to the rest of economic and industrial activities. In a related context, sewage water treatment technology is also used to provide water for irrigation purposes. This type of water is used to irrigate the green spaces, gardens, parks and planted forests.

The most important traditional and non- traditional water sources in the UAE could be summarized as follows:

■ Springs

These underground water sources gush forth to the surface naturally without human intervention, and they were used for domestic and irrigating purposes in the period before the establishment of the Federal Union. Historically, the inhabitants of the mountain and desert areas took advantage of these springs. In general, these springs are formed as a result of subterranean operations in underground areas containing volcanic hot gases as well as the result of the movement of groundwater or any other volcanic material over special kinds of volcanic rocks. These springs contain hot water which usually contains various metal materials.²⁷ In the UAE, there are still four operational springs used mainly for touristic purposes: (Ain Khet) in Ras Al Khaimah, (Ain Madab and Ain Laghmor) in Fujairah and (Ain Alfayda) in the city of Alain.

■ The Aflaj

The Falaj is an ancient method used in the delivery of fresh spring water from the springs and high-water areas. Aflaj (plural of Falaj) are usually constructed on ground above the earth's surface. In fact, they are man-made artificial tunnels extending horizontally in the rock underground aquifers. These Aflaj slope simply to facilitate the flow of water. The Aflaj are often covered with large stones when passing at the level of the Earth's surface. In the Aflaj, there are nozzles for cleaning to ensure the smooth continuity of the water flow during the period of the abundance of the water supplies.²⁸ The Aflaj water is divided once it reaches the villages and agricultural fields. This division is made according to traditional calculations recognized by the local population in the period before the establishment of the Federal Union. Historically, Falaj AlSarooj, Falaj AlAweyna, Falaj Masfoot, Falaj AlHowailat, Falaj Al Mualla, Falaj Al Dhaid, and Falaj AlManama are the most important Aflaj in the UAE.

■ Artesian Wells

The well is a man-made vertical drilling in the formations bearing groundwater in order to feed the population centers and agricultural areas with water supplies. The depth of wells vary from 5 to 50 meters in the ground, depending on the layers containing groundwater. At present the number of wells operating in the country is about 109 thousand wells which produce nearly 80 million gallons of water per day. This water supply is utilized for the irrigation of agricultural crops and forest projects while the rest is designated for household uses. Clearly, 98 % of these water producing wells are located in the Emirate of Abu Dhabi while the rest are distributed in the rest of the other Emirates. The degree of salinity in the majority of these wells ranges between 1000-15000mlegram / L ppm).²⁹

■ Dams

Due to the lack of rain water during the months of the year, any drop of water is of utmost importance to the people of the UAE. Therefore, the federal government has built more than 63 dams on the streams of the main wadis to reserve the flood water that will be used in different purposes. It will provide the aquifers in the UAE territories with sufficient supplies to compensate for the loss of the amount of water. The dam water will also be used for drinking purposes. In winter the dams are targeted by Emiratis and non-Emiratis as touristic destinations, particularly in the mountainous areas.

The Wadi Ham Dam solder and the Dam of Alseiji wadi in the northern region of the UAE territories are considered the oldest water dams, which were built in 1973 in order to feed the aquifers and the subterranean layers of the ground with water and consequently reduce the potential damage of the floods in the region surrounding the dam area. The majority of water dams in the country are debris dams except for three concrete dams : Safed 12, Safed 12b and the concrete barrier behind the Ghalila dam.

■ Desalination Plants :

In the UAE there are approximately 47 productive desalination plants using several techniques in water desalination operations. It is known that 77% of these plants are public stations and the rest are private stations. The total production capacity of these plants is more than one billion gallons of water per day. At present, the government is constructing nine new desalination plants with a productivity capacity of more than 300 million gallons of water per day to meet the future needs of water supplies in the country, especially after the success of the United Arab Emirates in winning the organization of the World Expo (2020).³⁰

■ Sewage Water

Despite the large amounts of water consumed for irrigation, domestic and industrial use, the processed quantities of this water is still limited because most of the sewage water treatment plants are located in large cities such Abu Dhabi, Al Ain, Dubai and Sharjah.

At present there are more than 32 sewage water treatment plant in the UAE distributed in most large cities in the country with a capacity of 237 million gallons per day. The majority of this water is used for green landscape irrigation.

Due to the increasing number of population in the country from 560 thousand people at the beginning of 1975 to more than 9.2 million people by the end of 2012. There was an increase in the water consumption in the UAE in the domestic and industrial sectors, especially in big cities.

The average water consumption per capita in the country is estimated at nearly 550 liters of water daily compared to the global average of 330 liters of water consumption per day.³¹ For example, in 2012 the amount of water consumption in the Emirate of Abu Dhabi was more than 431 million gallons of water per day according to the statistics of the Abu Dhabi Water and Electricity Authority. The Abu Dhabi Water and Electricity Authority expects to double this amount to reach 1,362 million gallons in 2030, according to the strategic plan of the Emirate of Abu Dhabi (2030).³²

The federal and local government has enacted laws and regulations relevant to the rationalization of water consumption in the country, such as the Law No. (2) for the year 1998 on the establishment of Regulation and Supervision Bureau for the water and electricity sector in the Emirate of Abu Dhabi, which has had a big role in rationalizing the use of water in the Emirate.

Summary of the UAE Economic Geography

The Economic Geography of the United Arab Emirates has played a vital role in the study of the diversity of sources of income of the Emirati people since ancient times. Obviously, the interior desert areas are repellent to population due to the scorching heat in the summer months. However, the people of the UAE, by virtue of their geographical location near the open seas (The Arabian Gulf and the Bay of Oman) were able to communicate with adjacent marine regions. The communication with the neighboring coastal population, especially in the Indian sub-continent and the southern coast of Iran, enabled them to get in touch with the cultures and languages of these regions. The UAE people became also aware of the food traditions of these regions and their construction methods which is reflected positively on the quality of the local construction projects. Further, there was an increase in the trade activities between the residents of different regions of the UAE and the inhabitants of those coastal countries.³³

Throughout the study of natural and human geographical conditions and properties of the UAE, one can be familiarized with the hard work the founders of the UAE Federation and the nature of economic activities conducted by the population in natural environments, especially those diverse economic activities practiced by the inhabitants of the plains and desert oases in addition to the inhabitants of the mountainous regions. For example, the residents of the coast of the United Arab Emirates, using the old ships of their commercial fleet, were able to transport goods and commodities among the most important commercial cities in the Indian sub-continent such as the ports of Karachi in Pakistan and Mumbai in India. Moreover, their ships arrived in the eastern parts of the coast of China, and they were able

to link the Chinese ports with the most important commercial ports in the Arabian Peninsula such as AlMukalla and Aden in southern Yemen. In addition, their ships transported passengers and cargo to the ports of the East coast of Africa, to cities such as Mombasa in Kenya and Madagascar.³⁴ The famous navigator, Ahmed bin Majid, has emerged as one of the people of this coast and is the author of several books about marine science and travel literature.

The east coast of the UAE, which includes some well-known historical regions such as Dibba and KhorFakkan is defined as a gathering location for merchants, traders and trade markets. Some writings indicate that the Dibba area was the pool area for traders from the Indian subcontinent and the natural port of Dibba was used as a point of departure for ships navigating back and forth to the east coast of the UAE.³⁵ The residents of the region made long trips to distant regions of China, India and the eastern coast of Africa and Madagascar.³⁶ During these trips, the UAE sailors were able to develop a kind of communication and mutual interest between them and the inhabitants of the regions they were visiting. Through this kind of communication, the residents of the Dibba area were able to develop their expertise in the art of sailing. With the passage of time they succeeded in gaining a good reputation in maritime transport which enabled them to build a naval fleet used for trade purposes between the East and the West. Many writers, quoting Al Masoudi, argued that the traders and dealers from the east coast region embarked on long sea voyages, through which they managed to transfer many of the goods and crops and seedlings from Asia. For example the residents the Batinah coast, a coastal area that includes the areas of Dibba, KhorFakkan and Sohar managed to transfer some types of orange trees from China to Oman where they were planted there and then were transferred to the Mediterranean regions.³⁷

In ancient times, the historical market of Dibba in the east coast was famous for wholesale trade. As a regional market it was frequented by traders from all neighboring areas who exchange several types of goods, including building materials, which were used in the region. In his book (The Arab Markets at The Time of Ignorance “Aljahiliyya” and the Islamic Era) AlAfghani stated that many traders were coming to the east coast area for conducting business deals between traders from the region and traders from India, China and other countries.³⁸

With the advent of European colonialism to the region, when the western invaders WHAT?, particularly the Portuguese and the British, maritime activity dramatically deteriorated. The colonial powers took the lead in the field of maritime trade due to their possession of the sophisticated steam ships that brought them to the region. Unfortunately, the maritime trade associated with the east coast began to move slowly to the Indian and Pakistani workers by the end of the year 1862.³⁹ As a result, the population of these regions began preying on a new craft, the pearl diving craft. Ironically, the diving career was not limited to the coastal residents but some inhabitants of the oases and the interior desert regions abandoned their professions of origin such as agriculture and grazing and joined the new profession. For example, some members of the Bani Yas tribe settled in the island of Abu Dhabi in 1761 and began to practice the diving for pearls profession. The most important places for diving include Umm Alshef, Arelah, Keha and Ras AlKhaimah which were teeming with pearl diving ships at that period.⁴⁰ According to some studies, the number of diving vessels that were operating in the waters of the region in the first half of the last century, exceeded 1,200 ships employing more than 22,000 navigators. The total trade was estimated at more than 1.5 million pounds.⁴¹ After the discovery of the

cultivated pearls and the subsequent economic boom associated with the prosperity of this new trade in South-East Asia, the previously mentioned economic activity began to deteriorate in the Gulf region in general and in the UAE in particular.

In the hard times some of the residents of the UAE were forced to travel to work in neighboring countries such as Qatar, Kuwait and Saudi Arabia. But in spite of the desert environment repellent to population at that period, most of the locals have worked hard and clung to the land and sought to create jobs by riding the sea and plowing the land until the discovery of oil. After the export of the first shipment of oil in 1962 the UAE managed to make a quantum leap in the life of its population. Eventually, people began to flock to the UAE from the four corners of the globe. The country did not export its residents anymore, instead, the UAE was transformed into a commercial hub attracting expatriates from all over the world. These expatriates who carry more than 200 nationalities selected the country as a residence and work place. In the modern UAE, the expatriates share the resources of the country with the indigenous population working hand-in-hand in a wonderful symphony to build the dream state in an atmosphere of total understanding and exchange of interests.

The Importance of the Contribution of Natural, Economic and Human Resources in the Economic Stability of the UAE

Natural resources usually include elements of the atmosphere. They also contain the components of the hydrosphere including water, living organisms, salts and metals found in the bottom of the sea. The natural resources also include the surface of the ground stretching throughout the country in addition to water, soil and diverse plant resources.⁴² The geographical location is part of the natural resources which turn into economic resources in the case of exploitation. All of these resources and wealth

need human cadres to manage and utilize them properly for the sake of continuity and sustainability for longer periods of time. Thanks to the leaders of the UAE, the country has enjoyed security and stability since its foundation in 1971. The current stability and the policy of transparency in dealing with the global institutions led the UAE to overcome several economic hurdles, particularly the global economic crisis in 2008. The government has succeeded in the economic exploitation of the natural resources (a broader term than the term wealth)⁴³ which greatly affected the transformation of the UAE into a safe haven for global investments and companies operating in the GCC markets. It is known that different kinds of resources affect positively and adversely in the quality of economic activities exercised by human beings in their daily life.

The UAE government was able to exploit the geographical location of the country for the benefit of the population and regional society. For example, the UAE government has succeeded in strengthening the services activity sector by building large ports and airports with international standards, which has played a vital role in the transport of passengers between the continents of the world. In 2013, the total number of international airports in the UAE became seven airports in (Dubai “2 airports”, Abu Dhabi, Sharjah, Ras AlKhaimah, Alain and Fujairah). The Dubai International Airport is the largest and most famous of these airports for different reasons. For example, the number of users of this airport in 2012 exceeded 57.6 million passengers. More than 150 international airlines operate from Dubai international airport offering services to passengers who fly across the continents of the world. These international airlines link the airport with more than 200 destinations worldwide.⁴⁴ In the UAE there are more than eight national

airlines serving local and international travelers (Emirates, Ittihad, AlArabia, Fly Dubai, Abu Dhabi Airlines, Royal Jet, Ras Al Khaimah and Rotana). These companies contribute to the linking of the cities within the country to UAE islands. Globally, they link the cities of the UAE with the rest of the world's cities which resulted into the enormous growth of the touristic activity sector in the country. Thanks to economic activities in the UAE, every year new hotels are added to the list of facilities serving the growing numbers of tourists visiting the cities of the country. It is expected that the number of tourists who visit Dubai will be more than 10.4 million visitors in 2014, and the city of Abu Dhabi hopes to increase the number of residents in its hotels to more than 3 million tourists in the same period.⁴⁵ The quality infrastructure established by the government has participated in the development of modern airports, ports and road networks in the UAE. Also, the establishment of aviation companies and economic exhibitions, in addition to the construction of educational, medical and touristic cities as well as the services provided by government institutions and the active role of the government in empowering the economic sector has benefited the UAE. All the previously mentioned policies aimed to serve the residents of the UAE which reinforced the position of the country as a key competitor in global markets.

Such economic trends have led to the diversity of production units in the UAE and the diversity of the types of products and an increase in their numbers. Likewise, local industries of a global nature have flourished in the country which encouraged many major companies and global brands such as Toshiba, Globe Express and General Motors to establish branches and industrial centers in the UAE in order to be close to the regional markets. Climatic conditions and the facilities provided by

the Government facilitated all activities and increased the number of projects and enterprises of the international companies in the country resulting in an increase in the trade exchanges between the cities of the country and the rest of the world's major cities. These developments have contributed to an increase in the exports and re-exports of non-oil commodities from nearly 87 billion dirhams in 2001 to more than 325 billion dirhams in 2011.⁴⁶

Conclusion

This chapter is extremely important because it explores crucial aspects of the natural geography of the UAE by examining related topics in addition to the study of the diversification of the economic activities adopted by the residents of the UAE. Moreover, the chapter illuminates other key issues integral to the current economic status of the UAE and the country's competitive position as a pivotal player in the global markets which enabled it to be entrusted with the organization of the Expo Exhibition in 2020. Furthermore, the chapter navigates the local terrain and the topographic diversity of the territory of the UAE which contributed to the growth of varied economic, agricultural, industrial and touristic sectors. In a similar context, the chapter argues that the variations in temperature between the interior desert areas and the coastal regions in the UAE resulted in the diversity of agricultural crops and economic activities integral to the UAE community.

Notes

1. Across the UAE. The UAE is the first on the Arab world and the 27th globally in the global well-being index.20/02/2012
2. Alulamaa, Hossam. (2004). Chapter One: The Genesis Of the Country and its political and Geographical Formations. United Arab Emirates Studies Pamphlet: UAEU Press p. 11.
3. Abu-Alainain. Hassan. (1996). The UAE : Geographic Studies and Research. Oman : Dar Safaa.
 - See Abdul Salam Adel. (1978). The Territories of the United Arab Emirates : Comprehensive Survey. Cairo : Egyptian Company for printing and publishing.
 - See also Tomkinson, Michael(1975) The United Arab Emirates. London: Jerrold and Sons.
 - See, Lees, G.M. (1928). The Geology and tectonic of Oman.” Quart Journal. Geological Society. Vol. 84 Part 4. P. 585-620.
 - See, Faraj, Asmaa. (2005). The terrain Aspects of the UAE : The United Arab Emirates Geography Pamphlet. Alain : UAEU Press.
4. Abdul Salam Adel. (1978). The Territories of the United Arab Emirates. P. 116-122.
5. Faraj, Asmaa. (2005). The terrain Aspects of the UAE. P.38-39.
6. Abu-Alainain. Hassan. (1996). The UAE : Geographic Studies and Research. P.41-49.
7. Abu-Alainain. Hassan and Asmaa Alsabbah.. (1990). Western coastal plains in the United Arab Emirates and Their Natural Characteristics. Seminar on the Economic and Environmental Dimensions of Development in the GCC Countries. Alain 13-15 March. p. 192-200.
8. Abu-Alainain. Hassan.(1989). The coastal plains between the head of Dibba and Khor Kalba on the East Coast of the United Arab Emirates. Kuwaiti Geographic Society No. 122 February. P. 312-316
9. Arab Research and Studies Institute, League of Arab Nations (1978). The United Arab Emirates : A Comprehensive Survey. Supervised by Yousef Abu Alhajj. Cairo : The Egyptian Company for printing and publishing. P. 87-89
10. Abu-Alainain. Hassan and Asmaa Alsabbah.. (1990). Western coastal plains in the United Arab Emirates 1992. - P. 211
11. AlQaydi Saif, Asmaa Al Ketbi, Hossam Alulamaa, and Najat Reda. (2004). The United Arab Emirates Geography Pamphlet. Alain : UAEU Press. P. 52.
12. Al-Farraj. A. M. (1996). Late Pleistocene Geomorphology in Wadi Al-Bih Northern UAE and Oman with Special Emphasis on Wadi Terrace and Alluvial Fans (PhD. Thesis): Liverpool. The

University of Liverpool.

- ^{13.} Arab Research and Studies Institute, League of Arab Nations (1978).p.94-97.
- ^{14.} Abu-Alainain. Hassan. (1996). The UAE : Geographic Studies and Research. Oman : Dar Safaa. P.59-67.
- ^{15.} Abu-Alainain. Hassan. (2010). “Geomorphological Aspects of Jebel AlDhanna”. Journal of the Gulf and Arabian Peninsula Studies. Number 139. P. 397-469
- ^{16.} Abu-Alainain. Hassan. (1996).p. 451-466.
- ^{17.} Abu-Alainain. Hassan. (1990). “ Basin of the Dibba Wadi in the United Arab Emirates. Kuwait University, Research Administration and the Kuwait Foundation for Advancement of Science. Kuwait. P. 10-28.
- ^{18.} Abdul Salam Adel. (1978). The Territories of the United Arab Emirates.p.103.
- ^{19.} Ghoneim. Abdul Hamid (2001). United Arab Emirates Regional Geography. Alain: Dar Alketab Aljameei.
- ^{20.} Abu-Alainain. Hassan. (1996). P.73-75.
- ^{21.} AlKetbi, Asmaa. (2004).p. 68-69
- ^{22.} <http://www.emirates-islands.a>
- ^{23.} National Centre for Meteorology and Seismology. <http://new.ncms.ae/home>
- ^{24.} Arab Research and Studies Institute, League of Arab Nations (1978). P. 163-164
- ^{25.} Ghoneim. Abdul Hamid (2001). United Arab Emirates Regional Geography. P.193.
- ^{26.} Federal Authority for Electricity and Water, Dubai.2013
- ^{27.} Strahler, A., and Strahler, A., 1992, Modern Physical Geography. P. 310
- ^{28.} AlQaydi Saif, Asmaa Al Ketbi, Hossam Alulamaa, and Najat Reda. (2004). P.86.
- ^{29.} Federal Authority for Electricity and Water, Dubai.2013.
- ^{30.} Ibid.
- ^{31.} Khaleej Newspaper. November 13. 2013. No. 12596. p. 5.
- ^{32.} “Abu Dhabi consumes 431 million gallons of water per day. Khaleej Newspaper. No. 12585. 02.11.2013 p. 2
- ^{33.} Al Muhairi, Fatima. (2011). Abu Dhabi and the Pearl : A Historical Story. Pearl diving and trade and their impact on traditional Construction : Abu Dhabi as model. Chapter in a book written by Saif Qayedi titled Abu Dhabi : Alhosn Center for Studies and Research. Page. 540.

- ³⁴. Forman, Werner.(1996). *Phoenix Rising, the United Arab Emirates, Past Present and Future.* London: The Harvill Press. p. 10-20.
- ³⁵. Forman, Werner. (1996). *Phoenix Rising, the United Arab Emirates, Past Present and Future.* London: The Harvill Press. p. 10-20.
- ³⁶. Hawley, D. (1970). *The Trucial States.* London: George Allen & Unwin Ltd. P. 56.
- ³⁷. Hawely, D. (1970) p. 200-203
- ³⁸. AlAfghani, S. Arab markets in *Jahiliyya* and Islam. Beirut: Dar thought to print, 1960. P. 260.
- ³⁹. Alfaris, Muhammad Alfaris. (2000). *Economic Profiles in the Trucial States Coast (UAE currently) 1862-1965.* Abu Dhabi, p. 25.
- ⁴⁰. Muhammad AlRum (1989). *Bani Yas Marine Calendar.* Abu Dhabi : Bin Dasmal for printing and publishing. p. 90-110
- ⁴¹. Forman, Werner,, 1996 p. 11-13.
- ⁴². AlQayedi, Saif. (1999). *Economic Geography: Foundations, Methods and Applications.* Dubai : Dar Alqalam. p. 61.
- ⁴³. AlDeeb, Mohammed (1995). *Economic Geography.* Cairo : The Anglo- Egyptian library. p. 77-79.
- ⁴⁴. URL: http://www.aleqt.com/2013/03/28/article_743070.html
- ⁴⁵. Emirates today Newspaper. 3% expected growth in the number of tourists to the UAE. 05/06/2010.
- ⁴⁶. The Ministry of Economy statistical unit : Planning and Management Decision Support. The Annual Statistical Report of the Activities of the Ministry of Economy. The first version. July 2012. p. 5. *Annual Economic Report 2001.* p. 7.

Works Cited

- Abdul Salam Adel. (1978). *The Territories of the United Arab Emirates : Comprehensive Survey.* Cairo : Egyptian Company for printing and publishing.
- Abu-Alainain. Hassan. (1990). “ Basin of the Dibba Wadi in the United Arab Emirates ”. *Research Administration and the Kuwait Foundation for Advancement of Science.* Kuwait University : Kuwait.
- ----- (2010). “ Geomorphological Aspects of Jebel AlDhanna ”. *Journal of the Gulf and Arabian Peninsula Studies.* Number 139. P. 397-469.
- ----- (1989). “ The coastal plains between the head of Dibba and Khor Kalba on

the East Coast of the United Arab Emirates". *Kuwaiti Geographic Society* No. 122 February. P. 312-316.

- ----- (1996). *The UAE : Geographic Studies and Research*. Oman : Dar Safaa. P.59-67.
- ----- and Asmaa Alsabbah.. (1990). "Western coastal plains in the United Arab Emirates and Their Natural Characteristics". *Seminar on the Economic and Environmental Dimensions of Development in the GCC Countries*. Alain 13-15 March. p. 192-200.
- AlDeeb, Mohammed (1995). *Economic Geography*. Cairo : The Anglo- Egyptian library.
- AlAfghani, S. *Arab markets in Jahiliyya and Islam*. Beirut : Dar thought to print, 1960.
- Alfaris, Muhammad Alfaris. (2000). *Economic Profiles in the Trucial States Coast (UAE currently) 1862-1965*. Abu Dhabi.
- Al-Farraj. A. M. (1996). " Late Pleistocene Geomorphology in Wadi Al-Bih Northern UAE and Oman with Special Emphasis on Wadi Terrace and Alluvial Fans" (*PhD. Thesis*): Liverpool. The University of Liverpool
- Al Muhairi, Fatima. (2011). Abu Dhabi and the Pearl : A Historical Story. Pearl diving and trade and their impact on traditional Construction : Abu Dhabi as model. in Saif Qayedi, *Abu Dhabi* : Alhosn Center for Studies and Research. UAE.
- AlRum Muhammad. (1989). Bani Yas Marine Calendar. Abu Dhabi : Bin Dasmal for printing and publishing.
- AlQayedi, Saif. (1999). *Economic Geography: Foundations, Methods and Applications*. Dubai : Dar Alqalam.
- Asmaa Al Ketbi, Hossam Alulamaa, and Najat Reda. (2004). The United Arab Emirates Geography Pamphlet. Alain : UAEU Press.
- Alulamaa, Hossam. (2004). Chapter One: The Genesis Of the Country and its political and Geographical Formations. *United Arab Emirates Studies Pamphlet*: UAEU Press.
- Faraj, Asmaa. (2005). The terrain Aspects of the UAE : The United Arab Emirates Geography Pamphlet. Alain : UAEU Press.
- Forman, W. (1996). *Phoenix Rising, the United Arab Emirates, Past Present and Future*. London: The Harvill Press.
- Ghoneim. Abdul Hamid (2001). *United Arab Emirates Regional Geography*. Alain: Dar Alketab Aljameei

Chapter Four

The UAE Domestic Policy

A large, abstract graphic element occupies the bottom half of the page. It consists of several overlapping diagonal bands in shades of gray and white. The bands are oriented from the top-left towards the bottom-right. The darkest band is positioned centrally, while lighter bands are layered both above and below it, creating a sense of depth and movement.

Chapter Four

The UAE Domestic Policy

Dr. Nasrin Murad

Introduction

Citizenship is not a temporary, circumstantial or ephemeral affair; in essence, it crystallizes a nexus of various emotional, cultural and physical relationships within the framework of a specific identity construction. Any individual acquires citizenship through living in a country and participating in civil, social and political activities based on the principles of freedom, equality and justice. These principles constitute the core of the values underpinning the concept of citizenship inherent in the modern nation state. On this ground, citizenship epitomizes the sum total of humanitarian values and legitimate legal standards, along with their civil, social, political, economic and cultural manifestations, which enable the individual to interact positively with his society and participate in the management of its affairs.¹ Within the same context, citizenship determines the legal status of an individual in the state. It also authorizes his/her full and responsible membership in the state, resulting in mutual and intersecting relationships between the individual and the state which are roughly called “rights and duties”.

Within the contours of the preceding argument, this chapter explores the domestic policy of the UAE in order to examine the relationships between the citizen and the state. The chapter also demonstrates the structure of the political system and affiliated political institutions, in addition to their responsibilities toward the individual and the state, within the context of their political functions. Moreover, the chapter illuminates the citizen’s rights and duties guaranteed by the constitution.

Ostensibly, the UAE is a sovereign and independent federal state.² This federal state consists of seven Emirates as follows: Abu-Dhabi, Dubai, Sharjah, Ras Al Khaima, Ajman, Umm Al Quwain and Fujairah. From a theoretical perspective, the UAE as a federal state comprises a continuum of Emirates unified by a permanent federal constitution, dominated by a central authority, which implements constitutional laws for all the Emirates under the umbrella of the federation. **This crucial development results in the following:**

- Having joined the federation, the individual Emirates are no longer separate, independent entities, but are considered as political units within the new federal state. This means that the federal state becomes the legitimate political unit within the parameters of the international political system. Thus, the individual Emirates, which were merged into the federation, do not constitute political entities on the international level. In fact, these Emirates have lost their independence as separate political bodies in the aftermath of the federation.
- Unlike the local governments, the federal government represents the state in the international arena, and it is responsible for the international commitments of the state.
- The federal state alone has the authority to enter into relations with other countries and international organizations as well as sign treaties in times of peace and war. The federal state is also entitled to send and receive diplomatic missions, join organizations and coalitions and declare war if the security of the country is jeopardized. Likewise, the policies of the federal state are fully recognized and adhered to by the Emirates which comprise the federation.

- Unlike the local governments, the federal government is responsible for its commitments on the international scale.³
- All the citizens of the seven Emirates encompassing the federal state hold only one citizenship.
- The UAE federal constitution regulates the relations among the seven Emirates. It also coordinates the relationships between the seven Emirates and the federal authority.

Regardless of differences and variations among federal systems, they share some similarities. For example, under all federal systems, the terms of reference and authorities are shared by local and federal governments alike. However, federal states vary with regard to the degree of participation of local and federal governments in these terms of reference and authorities.⁴ All over the world, there are similarly well established federal countries such as USA, Brazil, Pakistan, India, Australia, Switzerland, Malaysia, Mexico, Nigeria, Canada and the UAE.

This chapter covers several major topics, including the following: The Basic Constitutional Principles of the UAE, the First Stages of State Evolution, the Membership and Engagement in the Political Community, the Rights and Duties of the Citizens, Civil Freedoms, Political Institutions (Federal Authorities), and the intersection between Local Governments and the Federal Authority.

Basic Constitutional Principles

The constitution includes the legal rules determining the structure of government in the state, and defines the relationships and functions of its authorities. The first written constitution of the UAE was issued on December 2, 1971. In the pre-constitution era,

systems of government were based on tribal law.⁵ Arguably, a constitution reflects the mindset of a nation at the time of its creation. Constitutions may be written over time, changing and evolving as the country changes and new needs arise. They are also issued during transitory stages or when a country is on the threshold of a new era, as in the case of the UAE. Thus, a country's constitution reflects the thought, mentality, visions, aspirations and the nation-building perceptions of the state rulers who witnessed the creation of the constitution.⁶

The general characteristics of the interim constitution of the UAE were shaped by the prevailing circumstances in the 1970's. The successful experience of the federation was a ground-breaking event after the failure other Arab countries to achieve unity. Further, the issuing of a constitution to regulate the affairs of the newly born federal state was a breakthrough in the modern political history of the region.⁷ The UAE interim constitution has been effective for twenty-five years. Throughout this period the UAE's leaders fully concentrated on laying the foundations of the federal state, establishing its institutions and consolidating the pillars of its progress and renaissance in the economic, social and educational fields. Moreover, these formative years witnessed a major shift in the construction of a new national identity through the evolving relationship between the Emirates and the central government and between the citizen and the emerging federation.⁸

In May of 1996, the Federal Supreme Council of the UAE convened, changing the status of the interim constitution. In the meeting, the council recognized the "interim" constitution as "permanent". Consequently, the word "interim" was deleted from the texts of the provisions of the UAE's permanent constitution.⁹ The UAE's constitution encompasses 152 articles divided into ten parts and eight chapters. These

constitutional articles determine federal authorities and define the aspects of the federation, including its political, economic and social bases as well as the public rights and duties. **The basic constitutional principles and the general features of constitutional provisions can be identified by examining the articles of the UAE constitution as follows:**

- The foundation and declaration of the UAE federation under the constitution is unanimously approved by the governors of the Emirates, resulting in the evolution of the UAE as a new legal political entity recognized on the international level. According to the text of Article 1 of the UAE constitution: The United Arab Emirates is an independent, sovereign, federal state and is referred to hereafter in this Constitution as The Union. The constitution also permits any other independent Arab country to join the Union, provided that the Supreme Council agrees unanimously to this.¹⁰
- The Union shall exercise sovereignty in matters assigned to it in accordance with this Constitution over all territory and territorial waters lying within the international boundaries of the member Emirates.¹¹ The member Emirates shall exercise sovereignty over their own territories and territorial waters in all matters not within the jurisdiction of the Union as assigned in this constitution.¹² The Union may not surrender its sovereignty or cede any part of its territories or waters.¹³ Obviously, the birth of the federal union state as a sovereign country with global recognition strips the member Emirates of their international status. Accordingly, the member Emirates were transformed into constitutional entities, exercising authority autonomously on their territories within the sovereignty of the federal state.

- The national identity of the UAE is identified in accordance with article 6 of the federal constitution: The Union shall be part of the Great Arab Nation, to which it is bound by the ties of religion, language, history and common destiny. The people of the Union shall be a single people, and shall be part of the Arab Nation¹⁴ sharing the same religion and history with other Arab countries. In accordance with the constitution, Arabic shall be the official language of the Union.¹⁵ The constitution also recognizes that Islam shall be the official religion of the Union. Likewise, the Islamic Shari'a shall be a principal source or legislation in the Union.
- The citizens of the UAE federation shall have one citizenship, determined by law, and are protected abroad by the federal government according to related international protocols.¹⁶ Since citizenship characterizes the relationship between the individual and the state, there is only one citizenship in the UAE federation. All the citizens from all Emirates are entitled to hold UAE citizenship, regardless of their birth-place or residence.
- The aims of the Union shall be the maintenance of its independence and sovereignty, the safeguarding of its security and stability, defense against any aggression upon its existence or the existence of its member states. The aims of the Union also include the protection of the rights and freedoms of the people of the Union, the achievement of close co-operation between the Emirates for their common benefit in realizing these aims, and in promoting their prosperity and progress in all fields. Finally, the Union aims at securing the provision of a better life for all citizens, together with respect by each Emirate for the independence and sovereignty of the other Emirates in their

internal affairs,¹⁷ within the limits of the federal constitution.

The constitutional texts created a balance between two essential issues:

1. The foundation of a unified state whose central government has all the constitutional authorities required for achieving the joint interests of the UAE's citizens.
2. Maintaining the autonomous entities of the member Emirates by allowing them to exercise the constitutional authorities required for accomplishing local interests within the general agenda of the Federal government.¹⁸

The Development and the Emergence of the State

On December 2, 1971, the UAE was declared a federal state. Throughout the four preceding decades, the UAE has achieved unequal presence on regional and international maps. The unprecedented success of the UAE as a federal union encouraged other countries to mimic this unique experience.

Membership in the Political Community

The rights and duties of the UAE's citizens are determined by the UAE constitution. According to the constitution, all persons shall be equal before the law. No discrimination shall be practiced between citizens of the Union by reason of race, nationality, religious belief or social position.¹⁹ Moreover, personal freedom shall be guaranteed to all citizens. No person may be arrested, searched, detained or imprisoned except in accordance with the provisions of the law. No man shall be subjected to torture or other indignity.²⁰ The constitution also maintains that the freedom to hold religious ceremonies in accordance with established custom shall be safeguarded,

provided such ceremonies are consistent with public order and with public morals.²¹

The Right to Life

The UAE acceded to the International Convention on the Elimination of All Forms of Racial Discrimination and worked to comply with its provisions. The UAE used all international forums as platforms to call for the prevention of racial discrimination. The UAE also calls for preserving the right to life for all human beings regardless of their ethnicity, sex, color, genealogy and national origin.²² The ethics pertaining to the protection of human rights and the International Convention on the Elimination of All Forms of Racial Discrimination are articulated by the principles of the UAE constitution. The preceding principles are protected by the UAE constitution, which guarantees security, equality, and social justice for all citizens. The constitution also secures the freedom and rights of all citizens and prohibits torture, arrest and arbitrary detention. Further, the constitution permits freedom of expression and freedom of the press.²³ The freedom of assembly and the freedom to hold meetings shall be guaranteed within the limits of the law according to the constitution.²⁴ Explicitly, the constitution permits the freedom to form associations within the confines of the law. In a related context, the principles underpinning the International Convention on the Elimination of All Forms of Racial Discrimination are integral to the essence of the Islamic religion, which constitutes one of the key pillars upon which the UAE society is founded.²⁵

The Right to Work

According to the UAE constitution, all citizens have equal opportunities to apply for public jobs within the provisions of the law. The UAE constitution also permits all

citizens to choose their work, professions and crafts within the confines of the law and in the light of the legislation essential to some professions and crafts. In other words, every citizen shall be free to choose his occupation, trade or profession within the limits of the law, due consideration being given to any regulations prescribed for any such professions and trades. No person may be subjected to forced labor, except in exceptional circumstances provided for by the law and in return for compensation. Moreover, no man may be enslaved according to the constitution.²⁶ [The UAE advocated eight human rights conventions approved by The International Labor Organization as follows:](#) Working hours Convention, Forced Labor Convention, Labor Inspection Convention, Convention on the Night Employment of Women, Equal Pay Convention, Convention on Discrimination in Employment and Occupation, Minimum Age Convention and The Convention on the worst forms of child labor types.

Combating Human Trafficking

In 2006 the UAE issued a decree to combat human trafficking. The provisions of the law comprise 16 articles. Human trafficking is defined in the decree as recruiting or transferring or deporting people by threat or use of force, or by other forms of coercion, or kidnapping or fraud or deceit or abuse of power, or giving/receiving payments, or by any advantages to achieve the consent of a person who has control of another person for the purpose of exploitation.²⁷ As part of its national and international strategy to combat human trafficking, the UAE ratified the United Nations Convention against Transnational Organized Crime in May of 2007, which contains items related to international cooperation in tackling human trafficking crimes. In February of 2009, the UAE ratified the United Nations Protocol to prevent, suppress and punish people convicted of trafficking human beings, particularly women and children

(Palermo Protocol). It is one of the Protocols supplementing the Organized Crime Convention.²⁸ In this context, the establishment of Eiwa or “Housing Foundation” in Abu Dhabi, a sanctuary for the victims of human trafficking under the umbrella of the UAE Red Crescent Authority, and the establishment of the Dubai Foundation for Women and Children, are considered as the first steps towards the legalization of victim-support operations in line with international standards. The UAE is keen on establishing closer ties with related centers in other countries, in order to determine the best organizational and technical practices related to this field. These Emirati institutions play a vital role in providing social services for the victims to overcome the psychological and physical effects of neglect, violence and persecution.²⁹

Personal Freedom

The UAE occupies position number seventy-two with regard to personal freedom measurement all over the world. According to the Legatum Institute prosperity report of 2009, ninety-percent of the UAE population are satisfied with the levels of personal freedom they enjoy in the country.³⁰ The United Arab Emirates Constitution has the credit of adhering to most of the contents of the international laws of human rights that preceded it such as the Universal Declaration of Human Rights (1948), and the International Covenants on Civil and Political, Economic, Social and Cultural Rights. Based on this ground, citizens may not be deported or banished from their countries. Therefore, the UAE constitution took into account items which prohibit the exile or removal of citizens outside the border of the union.³¹ Likewise the extradition of citizens and political refugees is prohibited by the constitution.³² According to the constitution, the general confiscation of possessions is prohibited. Confiscation of an individual’s possessions as a punishment may be executed only on the basis of

a legal ruling, and in circumstances provided for in the law.³³ In the same context, the constitution prohibits the violation of the privacy of homes. According to the provisions of the constitution, homes are inviolable. They may not be entered without permission from their inhabitants except in accordance with the provisions of the law, and in circumstances laid down therein.³⁴ The constitution also mandates that every person has the right to submit complaints to the competent authorities, including the judicial authorities, concerning the abuse or infringement of the rights and freedoms stipulated in the provisions of the constitution.³⁵

Duties toward the State

There is no doubt that the federal constitution, which guarantees citizens and foreigners myriad rights and freedoms, also includes a range of duties to be carried out by the citizen as an affirmation of loyalty and belonging to the state, and as an expression of commitment to national laws. Serving and defending the nation is central to these duties. In other words, the defense of the Union and the performance of obligatory military service constitute a sacred duty for every citizen and an honor regulated by law.³⁶ The respect of the Constitution and the laws and orders issued by public authorities, are also among these duties. It shall be the duty of all inhabitants of the Union to respect the Constitution and the laws and regulations issued by the public authorities in execution thereof, to protect public order and to respect public morality.³⁷

Likewise, the UAE constitution does not exclude foreigners. In accordance with the constitution, foreigners enjoy, within the Union, the rights and freedoms stipulated in international charters which are in force, or in treaties and agreements to which the Union is party. Thus, they shall be subject to the equivalent obligations.³⁸ The UAE

has established the Supreme Committee for the Management of Labor Crises “in order to consider the workers’ complaints,” as well as the establishment of shelters to house workers who lost their jobs, their work permits and places of residence. Based on the above, each citizen who is an affiliated member of his society and state is required to participate in different fields of societal service. A citizen’s loyalty to the state determines the degree of his/her participation in domestic societal activities such as volunteering in the field of environment protection and assisting the elderly, in addition to performing civil and military service. The societal service also includes working in civilian areas and preserving the territorial integrity of the state along with defending its sovereignty, security and stability.

Political Institutions / Federal Authorities

The constitution of the United Arab Emirates divided the Federal authorities into five categories exercising executive, legislative and judicial functions, and each single function is exercised by several bodies.³⁹ According to the texts of the constitution, federal authorities consist of the Supreme Council of the Federation, the President of the Union and his deputy, and the cabinet of the Union in addition to the Federal National Council, and the Federal Judiciary.

The Federal Supreme Council

The Federal Supreme Council (the Supreme Council of the Union) is the supreme authority in the Union. It consists of the Rulers of all the Emirates making up the Union, or of those who act for the Rulers in their Emirates in the event of their absence. Each Emirate has a single vote in the deliberation of the Council.⁴⁰ As for the decisions, the constitution distinguishes between substantive issues and

procedural matters. Decisions of the Supreme Council on substantive matters are taken by a majority of five of its members, provided this majority includes the votes of the Emirates of Abu Dhabi and Dubai. The minority is bound by the view of the said majority. Decisions of the Council on procedural matters are taken by majority vote.⁴¹ Such matters are defined in the internal regulations of the Council. The Supreme Council keeps all important **competences** and authorities in the UAE, and even the terms of reference which seem to be given to other bodies need the ratification or approval of the Supreme Council of the Union. The most important authorities are as follows:

Executive Authorities / Powers

- The Supreme Council of the Union shall elect from among its members a President of the Union and a Deputy to the President of the Union.⁴²
- The formulation of general policy in all matters within the Union's competence according to this constitution, and the consideration of all matters with which it is concerned, to achieve the aims of the Union and the common interests of the member Emirates.⁴³
- Exercising Supreme Control over the affairs of the Union generally.⁴⁴
- Two or more Emirates may, after obtaining the approval of the Supreme Council, establish a political or administrative unit, or unify all or part of their public utilities or establish a single administration or joint administration to run any such utility.⁴⁵
- Constitutional amendment: If the Supreme Council considers that the supreme interests of the Union require the amendment of the constitution, it shall submit a draft constitutional amendment to the Union National Council.⁴⁶

- The president of the Union is authorized to appoint the Chairman of the Council of Ministers, receive his resignation, and dismiss him from office with the agreement of the Supreme Council.⁴⁷
- Declaration of war: The declaration of a state of defensive war shall be made by means of a Union decree issued by the President of the Union after its approval by the Supreme Council.⁴⁸
- The Union National Council may be dissolved by a decree promulgated by the President of the Union with the agreement of the Supreme Council of the Union.⁴⁹
- The ratification of treaties and international agreements shall be accomplished by decree (via the Council of Ministers of the Union).⁵⁰
- Agreement to the appointment of the President and Judges of the Supreme Union Court, acceptance of their resignations, and their dismissal in the circumstances stipulated by the Constitution shall be accomplished by decree (via the Council of Ministers of the Union).⁵¹

Legislative Authorities / Powers

The Supreme Council of the Union is the highest legislative authority in the United Arab Emirates which has the right to veto or approve the draft laws as well as the right to ratify them in the light of the constitutional terms of reference as follows:⁵²

- Approving or vetoing the draft laws: If the Union National Council inserts any amendment in the draft law and this amendment is not acceptable to the President of the Union or the Supreme Council, or if the Union National Council rejects the draft, the President of the Union or the Supreme Council shall refer

it back to the Union National Council. If the Union National Council inserts any amendment on that occasion which is not acceptable to the President of the Union or the Supreme Council, or if the Union National Council deems fit to reject the draft, the President of the Union may promulgate the law after ratification by the Supreme Council.⁵³

- Ratifying federal laws: The authorities of the Supreme Council include the ratification of the various Union laws before their promulgation, including the Laws of the Annual General Budget and the Final Account.⁵⁴

The President of the Union and his Deputy

The Supreme Council of the Union shall elect from among its members a President of the Union and a Deputy to the President of the Union. The Deputy President of the Union shall exercise all the powers of the President in the event of his absence for any reason.⁵⁵ The term of office of the President and his Deputy shall be five Gregorian years. They shall be capable of re-election to the same office.⁵⁶

At the founding of the Federation of the UAE, the rulers of the Emirates, members of the Supreme Council, elected the late Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan Al Nahyan (Ruler of Abu Dhabi) as President of the Federation, and elected Sheikh Rashid bin Said Al Maktoum (Ruler of Dubai) as his deputy. They also appointed Sheikh Maktoum bin Rashid Al Maktoum as chairman of the Council of Ministers. After the death of Sheikh Rashid, Sheikh Maktoum took over power in the Emirate of Dubai and became vice-president of the federal state and the prime minister. Later, following the death of the late Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan Al Nahyan on November 2, 2004 and the death of Sheikh Maktoum bin Rashid Al Maktoum on January 4, 2006, Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed assumed power in the Emirate of Abu Dhabi and became the

president of UAE, and Sheikh Mohammed bin Rashid Al Maktoum took the reins of authority in the Emirate of Dubai, becoming both deputy preside of the state and the prime minister.

According to the provisions of the Federal constitution with regard to the vacant post of the president and vice president of the council, article 9 of the Federal constitution stipulates the following: In the event that the office of the President or his Deputy becomes vacant because of death or resignation, or because either one of them ceases to be Ruler in his Emirate for any reason, the Supreme Council shall be called into session within one month of that date to elect a successor to the vacant office for the period stipulated in Article 52 of this constitution. In the event that the two offices of President of the Supreme Council and his Deputy are vacated simultaneously, the Council shall be called into session immediately by any one of its members, or by the Chairman of the Council of Ministers of the Union, to elect a new President and Deputy President to fill the two vacant offices.⁵⁷

Presidential Authorities / Powers

The President of the Union shall have the following responsibilities:⁵⁸

- Chairing the Supreme Council, managing the discussions, summoning the Supreme Council for the meeting, and adjourning the meetings.
- Calling for a joint meeting between the Supreme Council and the Council of the ministers (the cabinet) whenever necessary.
- Signing and issuing laws, decrees and decisions ratified by the Federal Supreme Council.⁵⁹
- Appointing the Prime Minister of the Federation Council, and accepting his resignation and removing him from office with the approval of the Council,

appointing the Deputy Prime Minister of the Federation Council and the ministers, and accepting their resignations and relieving them of their positions on the proposal of the Prime Minister of the Federation Council.

- Appointing the diplomatic representatives of the Federation to foreign countries as well as other senior civilian and military federal employees (with the exception of the president and judges of the Federal Supreme Court), and accepting their resignations and dismissing them after the consent of the Union Council of Ministers. The appointment or the acceptance of resignations or their removal becomes effective by decree and in accordance with federal laws.
- Signing the documents accrediting diplomatic representatives of the Union to foreign states and organizations, accepting the accreditation of diplomatic and consular representatives of foreign states to the Union, and receiving their letters of accreditation. He shall also sign letters of appointment and credentials of representatives.
- Supervising the implementation of the federal laws, decrees and decisions via the cabinet of the federation and the relevant ministers.
- Representing the union at home and in foreign countries and in all international relations.
- Exercising the right to pardon or commutation of sentences, and approving death penalties in accordance with the provisions of the constitution and federal laws.
- Conferring military and civilian decorations and medals of honor in accordance with related laws.

- Any other responsibilities vested in him by the Supreme Council or under the provisions of this constitution or federal laws.

The Responsibilities of the Vice President

The vice president of the union shall assume all the responsibilities of the president in case of his absence.⁶⁰

The Federal Cabinet / the Council of Ministers of the Union

The Council of Ministers of the Union consists of the Chairman of the Council of Ministers, his Deputy and a number of Ministers.⁶¹ The Chairman of the Council of Ministers is appointed by a decree by the president of the Union with the agreement of the Supreme Council. The Deputy Chairman of the Council of Ministers and the Ministers are appointed by a presidential decree following a proposal from the Chairman of the Council of Ministers of the Union.⁶²

The Federal Cabinet Authorities / Powers

The Federal Cabinet (The Council of Ministers), in its capacity as the executive organ of the Union, and under the supreme control of the President of the Union and the Supreme Council, is responsible for dealing with all internal and external matters within the competence of the Union according to Article (60) of the constitution. The Council of Ministers shall, in particular, carry out the following responsibilities:⁶³

- Facilitation of the implementation of the general policy of the Union Government internally and externally.
- Proposing draft Union laws and submit them to the Union National Council before they are submitted to the President of the Union for presentation to the Supreme Council for ratification. Each minister will have full knowledge

of the whereabouts of his ministry and be aware of the points of weakness rooted in the ministry. Thus, each minister is authorized to propose draft laws to overcome problematic issues and submit them to the Supreme Council for discussion.

- Preparing the draft annual general budget for the Union, and the final account.
- Preparing miscellaneous draft decrees and decisions.
- Laying down regulations necessary for the implementation of Union laws.
- Supervising the implementation of Union laws, decrees, decisions and regulations through all relevant agencies in the Union or in the Emirates.
- Supervising the implementation of judgments rendered by Union Law Courts and of international treaties and agreements concluded by the Union.
- Appointing and dismissing Union employees in accordance with the provisions of the law, in the case of those whose appointment and dismissal does not require the issue of a decree.
- Supervising the conduct of departments and public authorities of the Union, and supervising the conduct and discipline of Union employees generally.

Arguably, the constitution of the United Arab Emirates has limited the federal government's authorities in sovereign matters and has left for each Ruler total freedom in the management of his Emirate so as not to conflict with the supreme interests of the Union. The fact that the rulers of the seven Emirates are members of the Supreme Council, which represents the highest authority in the Federal State, ensures the conduct of federal affairs and the conduct of local affairs at the level of each Emirate in an integrated manner. This process also supports federal policies and provides the flexibility and decentralization in the internal affairs of each Emirate respectively.

Federal National Council

The Federal National Council is composed of forty seats distributed as follows: eight seats for each of Abu Dhabi and Dubai, six seats for each of Sharjah and Ras Al Khaimah, and four seats for Ajman, Umm Al Quwain and Fujairah. It is relevant to point out that the people of the Union are represented by the constitutional system established by the constitution of the United Arab Emirates and its provisions. On this ground, the constitution stipulates in Article 77 that a member of the Union Council shall represent the whole people of the Union and not merely the Emirate which he represents in the Council.

Regarding the legislative role of the Council (the law-making process or legislation), the constitution did not specify explicitly the agency responsible for the legislative authority inside the council. Despite the absence of explicit provisions in the constitution specifying who is responsible for legislation, it is known that the Federal Council of Ministers proposes draft laws and then refers them to the Federal National Council for discussion. The Federal National Council is authorized to approve the draft laws and may modify or reject them in accordance with Article 89 of the constitution, which states that “draft Union laws, including draft financial laws, shall be submitted to the Union National Council before their submission to the President of the Union for presentation to the Supreme Council for ratification”. The nature of this jurisdiction does not empower the National Council to adopt the proposed draft laws. Moreover, any objections or proposals of amendments submitted by the National council are considered as viewpoints that can be transcended. The UAE constitution did not assign a legislative influential role to the Federal National Council. For the supreme authority, the Federal National Council serves as a Council

of *shura* (consultations), whose ideas and suggestions are considered as advisory opinions.⁶⁴ It is therefore clear that the authority of the National Council is an advisory one, that is—it is not a legislative power. The Supreme Council of the Federation and the President of the Federation, in addition to the Council of Ministers, embody the legislative authority, rather than the Federal National Council.⁶⁵

The positive step taken by the state in 2006 holding partial elections for half of the members of the Federal National Council, instead of full appointment, is an important step toward adopting more comprehensive electoral arrangements in the next phase of the country's development. Within this scenario, the Federal National Council elections held in 2006 encapsulate to a great extent a breakthrough in political participation in the United Arab Emirates. The nomination and election policies advocated by the UAE personify the keenness of the leadership in establishing wide-ranging political participation in the future stages of the electoral process.⁶⁶ The electoral arrangements in 2006 stipulated the formation of seven federal authorities to match the number of the Emirates in the Union. Every citizen is entitled to vote if his name is included in the lists available in the electoral committee located in his Emirate and recognized by the electoral authority. Moreover, each member of the electoral authority, has the right to be nominated for the elections if he/she meets the conditions set forth in the constitution. Through election or polling, the members of the National Council are selected. Hence, each electoral authority chooses half of the number of seats assigned for each Emirate according to proportional representation and by direct secret ballot. The Emirate's ruler appoints the other half of the members.

Since the start of these elections, Emirati women succeeded in obtaining

membership in the Council. After one of them won a seat, eight other women were appointed to membership in the Council. Coinciding with this event, the Ministry of State for National Council Affairs was launched to take care of the Federal National Council's Affairs and facilitate coordination between the government and the Council. In 2011, the Supreme Council of the Union took several initiatives to consolidate the pillars of democracy in the UAE by amending a series of provisions approved by the Council in 2006 concerning the method of selecting representatives in the UAE Federal National Council. The amendments include the replacement of item (1) from the first Article with the following text: "Half of the members are elected by an electoral authority—three hundred times the number of representatives assigned to each Emirate as a minimum".⁶⁷ According to the Supreme Council decree number 40, issued in 2010, the electoral authority is "one hundred times of the number of the representatives of each Emirate as a minimum". This development reflects the keenness of the leadership for the empowerment of the Federal National Council through activating its positive role as an important asset to the executive authority.

The Federal National Council Authorities / Powers

In its sessions, the Federal National Council discusses the draft laws recommended by the Council of Ministers, subsequently re-submitting them with suggestions to the Supreme Council, which is the only legislative authority that has the power to accept or reject draft laws. This means that the decisions of the Federal National Council are not enforceable on the Supreme Council and are considered as no more than advisory opinions. Articles 89, 90, 91, and 92 from the constitution identify **the authorities**

attributed to the Federal National Council as follows:

- The Council shall examine during its ordinary session the draft Annual General Budget law of the Union and the draft Final Account law, in accordance with the provisions in Chapter Eight of this Constitution.⁶⁸
- The Government shall be responsible for informing the Union National Council of international treaties and agreements concluded with other states and the various international organizations, together with appropriate explanations.⁶⁹
- The Government of the Union shall be represented at sessions of the Union National Council by the Chairman of the Council of Ministers, or his deputy, or one member of the Union Cabinet at least. The Prime Minister, or his deputy, or the competent Minister shall answer questions put to them by any member of the Council requesting explanation of any matters within its jurisdiction, in accordance with the procedures prescribed in the internal regulations of the Council.⁷⁰
- The Union National Council shall debate any general subject pertaining to the affairs of the Union unless the Council of Ministers informs the Union National Council that debate of any subject is contrary to the highest interests of the Union. The Prime Minister or the competent Minister shall attend the debates. The Union National Council may express its recommendations and may define the subjects for debate. If the Council of Ministers does not approve of these recommendations, it shall notify the Union National Council of its reasons.⁷¹

Federal Judiciary

Chapter 5 from Part 4 of the constitution is allocated to Federal Judiciary - legislation in the Union and the Emirates. The constitution confirms in article 94 that the UAE judiciary is an independent authority: “Justice is the basis of authority. Judges shall be independent and shall be subordinate to no authority but the law and their own consciences in the performance of their duties.”⁷² Independence of the judiciary most likely means its protection from the interference of other governmental authorities in the course of its work through constitutional guarantees. According to the UAE constitution, the President and the Judges of the Supreme Court shall not be dismissed while they administer justice. Their administration thereof shall not be terminated except for one of the following reasons: death, resignation, completion of term of contract for individuals on contract, or completion of term of secondment, reaching retirement age, permanent incapacity to carry the burdens of their duties by reasons of ill health, disciplinary discharge on the basis of the reasons and proceedings stipulated in the law, and appointment to other offices, with their agreement.⁷³ In terms of the degrees of the courts they are as follows:

The Supreme Federal Court / the Supreme Court of the Union

The Supreme Court of the Union shall consist of a President and a number of Judges, not exceeding five in all, who shall be appointed by decree, issued by the President of the Union after approval by the Supreme Council.⁷⁴ However, Federal Law No. 10 of 1973 regarding the Federal Supreme Court approved the alternate appointment of no more than three judges to supplement the quorum court during jurisdiction provided that no more than one of the alternate judges is appointed in any chamber in the supreme court, and none of them can be appointed as president of any court chamber.

The Supreme Federal Court / the Supreme Court of the Union

Authorities and Powers :⁷⁵

- Article 99 in the UAE constitution prescribes and allocates some authorities to the Supreme Federal Court. Accordingly, the court shall be competent to render judgment in the following matters:
- Miscellaneous disputes between member Emirates in the Union, or between one or more Emirate and the Government of the Union, whenever such disputes are remitted to the Court on the basis of a request from any one of the interested parties.
- Examination of the constitutional legality of Union laws, if they are challenged by one or more of the Emirates on the grounds of violating the constitution of the Union. Examination of the constitutional legality of legislation promulgated by one of the Emirates, if it is challenged by one of the Union authorities on the grounds of violation of the constitution of the Union or of Union laws.
- Examination of the constitutional legality of laws, legislation and regulations generally, if such a request is remitted to it by any State Court during a case under consideration before it. The Court aforesaid shall be bound to accept the ruling of the Supreme Court of the Union in this case.
- Interpretation of the provisions of the constitution, when so requested by any authority of the Union or by the Government of any Emirate. Any such interpretation shall be considered binding on all.
- Interrogation of Ministers and senior officials of the Union, appointed by

decree, concerning their actions in the conduct of their official duties, on the basis of a request by the Supreme Council, and in accordance with the relevant law.

- Crimes directly affecting the interests of the Union, such as crimes relating to internal or external security, forgery of the official records or seals of any of the Union authorities, and counterfeiting of currency.
- Conflict of jurisdiction between the judicial authority in one Emirate and the judicial authority in another Emirate, and the classification of the principles relating thereto in a Union law.
- Any other jurisdiction stipulated in this constitution, or which may be assigned by a Union law.

Federal Courts of the First Instance / Union Courts of the First Instance

According to the constitution, the UAE federation shall have one or more Union Courts of the First Instance which shall sit in the permanent capital of the Union, or in the capitals of some of the Emirates,⁷⁶ in order to exercise the judicial powers within the sphere of their jurisdiction in Civil, commercial and administrative disputes between the Union and individuals, whether the Union is plaintiff or defendant, crimes committed within the boundaries of the permanent capital of the Union, excepting such matters as are reserved for the Supreme Court of the Union under Article 99 of the constitution, in addition to personal status actions, civil actions, commercial actions and other actions between individuals which arise in the permanent capital of the Union.⁷⁷

Federal Courts of Appeal

The Federal Courts of Appeal are the courts that existed within the UAE local judicial system and were transferred to (FCOA) under Federal Law No. 6 of 1978. The decisions of the courts are not subject to judicial appeal. The Federal Courts of Appeal deal with judicial rulings and decisions issued by Federal Courts of the First Instance, and provisions pertaining to urgent cases regardless of the court which issued them, in addition to Penal provisions issued by Civil Courts.⁷⁸

The Relations between the Federal Government and the Local Governments

The distribution of authorities between the Federal Government and the Local Governments

The UAE constitution prescribes the authorities allocated to the Federal government and leaves the rest of the authorities that are not included in the text of the constitution to local government. Thus, the Federal government (the Union government) shall have exclusive legislative and executive jurisdiction in the following matters:⁷⁹

- *Foreign affairs.
- *Defense and the United Armed Forces.
- *Protection of the Union's security against internal or external threat.
- *Matters pertaining to security, order and jurisdiction in the permanent capital of the Union.
- *Matters relating to Union officials and Union Judges.
- * Federal / Union finances and Union taxes, duties and fees.
- Federal / Union public loans.

- Postal, telegraph, telephone and wireless services.
- The construction, maintenance and improvement of Union roads. The organization of traffic on such roads which the Supreme Council has determined to be truck roads.
- Air Traffic Control and the issue of licenses to aircraft and pilots.
- Education.
- Public health and health services.
- Currency notes and coins.
- Weights, measures and standards.
- Electricity services.
- Federal / Union nationality, passports, residence and immigration.
- Federal / Union property and all matters relating thereto.
- Census matters and statistics relevant to Union purposes.
- Federal / Union Information.

Without prejudice to the provision of article 120, the Federation shall solely be in charge of enacting laws on the following matters:⁸⁰

- Work relation and social securities.
- Real estate ownership and expropriation for public interest.
- Extradition / handover of criminals.
- Banking.
- Insurance of all kinds.
- Protection of fauna and flora.

- Major legislation related to Penal Code, Civil and Commercial Transactions Code, Companies Law, Code of Procedures before the civil and penal courts.
- Protection of moral, technical and industrial property rights.
- Copyrights, printings and publication rights.
- Import of weapons and ammunition, unless the same was for the use of the Armed Forces or Security Forces of any Emirate.
- other aviation affairs which are not within the Federation executive competencies.
- Determination of territorial waters and organization of navigation overseas.
- Organization and method of establishing financial free zones, and scope of excluding the same from the implementation of the Federal Legislations provisions.

The Authorities of Local Governments (Emirates)

The Emirates shall have jurisdiction in all matters not assigned to the exclusive jurisdiction of the Union in accordance with the provisions of the constitutional Articles 120 and 121.⁸¹ Further, the constitution permits the member Emirates of the Union to conclude limited agreements of a local and administrative nature with the neighboring state or regions.

The preceding item is an exceptional authority given to the member Emirates because the federal government is solely concerned with foreign affairs, according to the constitution. **Thereupon the preceding exception has many limits including:**

- The agreement should be limited in terms of time, topics and the number of the signing parties.

- The agreement should be local and administrative in nature, engaging issues such as road construction, harbor management and services peculiar to the concerned Emirate.
- The agreement should be signed in collaboration with parties from neighboring countries only.
- The agreement should not be inconsistent with the interests of the Union or with Union laws, and provided that the Supreme Council of the Union is informed in advance. If the Council objects to the ratification of such agreements, it shall be obligatory to suspend the matter until the Supreme Court of the Union has ruled on the objections.⁸² The constitution also permits member Emirates to retain their membership in the Organization of the Petroleum Exporting Countries (OPEC) and the Organization of Arab Petroleum Exporting Countries (OAPEC), and may join them.⁸³ The constitution also affirms that before the conclusion of any treaty or international agreement which may affect the special position of any one of the Emirates, the competent Union authorities shall consult that Emirate in advance. In the event of disputes, they shall submit the matter to the Supreme Court of the Union for a ruling.⁸⁴

Thus, the Governments of the Emirates, according to the provisions of the constitution, shall undertake to take the appropriate steps to implement the laws promulgated by the Union and the treaties and international agreements concluded by the Union, including the promulgation of the local laws, regulations, decisions, and decrees necessary for such implementation. The Union authorities shall supervise the implementation of the Union's laws, decisions, treaties, agreements and legal judgments by the Governments of the

Emirates. The competent administrative and judicial authorities in the Emirates shall give the Union authorities all possible help in this matter.⁸⁵

Conclusion

The argument of this chapter illustrates that the UAE is different from other Arab countries due to the peculiar structure of its unionist federal governmental system. Within this system, the federal government has well-defined powers, whereas the local governments have specific authorities in their Emirates respectively. The UAE constitution allocates major powers to the federal government and leaves well-known though unlimited and undefined authorities to be tackled by each Emirate respectively.

Unquestionably, the UAE Constitution defines the authorities and terms of reference assigned to federal institutions. As the UAE follows the federal system, the central apparatus which holds the Union Affairs consists of three authorities as follows: the Federal legislative authority, the Federal executive authority, and the Federal judiciary authority. It is clear that the political status of the federal / central authority is stronger than the positions of local governments, regardless of the distribution of authorities between the two parties, and apart from the system regulating the relations between them.

Furthermore, this chapter clarifies the mutual relationships between the citizen and the state in the sense that citizenship means the official identification of the individual with a particular state. Citizenship, according to the law, reflects a sense of belonging to a political community affiliated with a homeland defined by political boundaries. The construction of identity results in the formation of equal rights and duties for all citizens. On this ground, citizenship determines national belonging and

becomes essential to the extent that it blends with the individual identities of the citizens. Moreover, citizenship becomes more important as a defining mechanism when the individual is outside the borders of his/her country, where citizenship seems to be an equivalent to nationality, as is the case of international laws and conventions.

Finally, citizenship becomes the basis for social solidarity. In this sense, and in principle, citizenship entails full and equal enjoyment of the legal rights and the services provided by the state, such as ensuring the protection of citizens against external enemies and maintaining security and public order. In return, the citizen should respect the laws, and defend the sovereignty and independence of his or her homeland in addition to participating in the development process and performing military service if provided by law.

Notes

- ^{1.} Abdul-Rahman Sh'ban.(2010). Homeland and Citizenship. Al Khaleij Newspaper no. 11504. 17 November.
- ^{2.} The UAE Constitution. Article 1.
- ^{3.} Mohamed Aljemaili. (2005). The Individual and the Society. Alin: UAE University press, p. 216-217.
- ^{4.} Butrus Ghali. (1998).Introduction to Political Science. Cairo: Anglo-Egyptian Press, p221-238.
- ^{5.} Abdul-Rahim Al Shaheen. (1997). The Governmental and Administrative System in the UAE. Ras Al Khaima : Julphar Press, p. 73,75.
- ^{6.} Hussain Ghabbash. (1999). The Constitution: The Union's Historical Mission. In The UAE and the Future: Toward a New National Vision and other Political Essays. Sharjah: The Gulf Center for Studies, P. 29.
- ^{7.} The UAE constitution and its amendments, The Federal Supreme Court Law and its amendments, the regulation of the appeal procedures by cassation before the Federal Supreme Court.
- ^{8.} Hussain Ghabbash, p. 29.
- ^{9.} Abu-Dhabi was selected as the UAE capital, nevertheless Article 9 in the UAE constitution reveals that the Union capital shall be constructed in a joint territory on the borders between Dubai and Abu-Dhabi and shall be called (Al Karama). http://www.uaecabinet.gov.ae/Arabic/UAEGovernment/Pages/constitution_2_5.aspx.
- ^{10.} The UAE Constitution. Article 1.
- ^{11.} Ibid, Article 2.
- ^{12.} Ibid, Article 3.
- ^{13.} Ibid, Article 4.
- ^{14.} Ibid, Article 6.
- ^{15.} Ibid, Article 7.
- ^{16.} Ibid, Article 9.
- ^{17.} Ibid, Article 10.
- ^{18.} Ministry of State for the Federal National Council Affairs. Political Development Administration, Political Culture Report. Abu-Dhabi, UAE.
- ^{19.} UAE Constitution. Article 25.

- ²⁰. Ibid, Article 26.
- ²¹. Ibid, Article 32.
- ²². <http://www.alittihad.ae/details.php?id=25529&y=2009>.
- ²³. Freedom of oral or written expression. All forms of expression are sanctioned by law. See, UAE Constitution. Article 30.
- ²⁴. The UAE Constitution. Article 33.
- ²⁵. <http://www.alittihad.ae/details.php?id=25529&y=2009>
- ²⁶. The UAE Constitution. Article 34.
- ²⁷. <http://www.emaratalyoum.com/local-section/accidents/2010-03-25-1.72931>
- ²⁸. <http://www.nccht.gov.ae>.
- ²⁹. <http://www.nccht.gov.ae>.
- ³⁰. Legatum Institute Prosperity Index studies prosperity standards according to nine benchmarks participating in economic growth, personal welfare and satisfaction. These benchmarks include available potentialities in areas such as Economy; Education; Entrepreneurship & Opportunity; Governance; Health; Personal Freedom; Safety & Security; and Social Capital. (<http://www.alittihad.ae/details.php?id=25529&y=2009>)
- ³¹. UAE Constitution. Article 37.
- ³². Ibid, Article 38.
- ³³. Ibid, Article 39.
- ³⁴. Ibid, Article 36.
- ³⁵. Ibid, Article 41.
- ³⁶. Ibid.
- ³⁷. Ibid. Article 44.
- ³⁸. Ibid, Article 40.
- ³⁹. Abdul-Rahim Al Shaheen. (2004). The Organization of Federal Authorities in the UAE. In The Emirati Society. Alain: UAE University Press, 2nd Edition, p.82.
- ⁴⁰. The UAE Constitution. Article 46.
- ⁴¹. Ibid. Article 49.
- ⁴². Ibid. Article 51.
- ⁴³. Ibid. Article 47.

- ⁴⁴. Ibid.
- ⁴⁵. Ibid. Article 118.
- ⁴⁶. Ibid. Article 144.
- ⁴⁷. Ibid. Article 54.
- ⁴⁸. Ibid. Article 140.
- ⁴⁹. Ibid. Article 88.
- ⁵⁰. Ibid. Article 47.
- ⁵¹. Ibid.
- ⁵². Abdul-Rahim Al Shaheen. (2004), p.82.
- ⁵³. UAE Constitution. Article 110.
- ⁵⁴. Ibid. Article 47.
- ⁵⁵. Ibid. Article 51.
- ⁵⁶. Ibid. Article 52.
- ⁵⁷. Ibid. Article 53.
- ⁵⁸. Ibid. Article 54.
- ⁵⁹. For more details on decrees issued by laws, see the UAE Constitution. Articles 115, 114, 113.
- ⁶⁰. The UAE Constitution. Article 54.
- ⁶¹. Ibid. Article 55.
- ⁶². Ibid. Article 54.
- ⁶³. Ibid. Article 56.
- ⁶⁴. Abdul-Rahim Al Shaheen. (2004), p.87.
- ⁶⁵. The UAE Constitution. Article 110.
- ⁶⁶. Ibid. Articles 60, 110.
- ⁶⁷. Ibid. Article 91.
- ⁶⁸. Ibid. Article 93..
- ⁶⁹. Ibid. Article 91.
- ⁷⁰. Ibid. Article 93.
- ⁷¹. Ibid. Article 92.
- ⁷². Ibid. Article 94.

- ⁷³. Ibid. Article 97.
- ⁷⁴. Ibid. Article 96.
- ⁷⁵. Ibid. Articles 96, 99.
- ⁷⁶. Ibid. Article 102.
- ⁷⁷. Ibid.
- ⁷⁸. Abdul-Rahim Al Shaheen. (2004), p. 85-88.
- ⁷⁹. The UAE Constitution. Article 120.
- ⁸⁰. Ibid. Article 121.
- ⁸¹. Ibid. Article 120.
- ⁸². Ibid. Article 122.
- ⁸³. Ibid. Article 123.
- ⁸⁴. Ibid. Article 124.
- ⁸⁵. Ibid. Article 125.

References

- Aljemaili, Mohamed. (2005). *The Individual and the Society*. Al Ain: UAE University press.
- Al Shaheen, Abdul-Rahim. (1997). *The Governmental and Administrative System in the UAE*. Ras Al Khaima : Julphar Press.
- ----- (2004). The Organization of Federal Authorities in the UAE. In *The Emirati Society*. Alain: UAE University Press, 2nd Edition.
- Ghabbash, Hussain. (1999). The Constitution: The Union's Historical Mission. In *The UAE and the Future: Toward a New National Vision and other Political Essays*. Sharjah: The Gulf Center for Studies.
- Ghali, Butrus. (1998). *Introduction to Political Science*. Cairo: Anglo-Egyptian Press.
- Heywood, Andrew. (2002), ed. *Politics*. Basingstoke: Palgrave, 2nd Edition.
- Murad, Murad. (1990). Territorial Disputes in the United Arab Emirates, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, UK: Lancaster University.
- Sh'ban, Abdul-Rahman. (2010). Homeland and Citizenship. *Al Khaleij Newspaper* no. 11504. 17 November.

Chapter Five

UAE Foreign Policy



Chapter Five

UAE Foreign Policy

Dr. Mohamed bin Hwaiden

Introduction

Realizing the significance of living in a multi-cultural world of mutual interests and shifting geo-political contingencies, the UAE established the salient benchmarks of its foreign policy as an independent and sovereign country. Apart from its recent political history, the UAE has occupied a remarkable position among other countries worldwide due to its commitments to international conventions and obligations. In this context, the UAE's efforts in consolidating global security, stability, development and prosperity are undeniable.

In the light of the preceding argument, and within the parameters of contemporary political theory, this chapter explores the major aspects of the UAE's foreign policy from different perspectives by examining several related topics. On this basis, the chapter defines the concept of "foreign policy" and identifies the role of related international key players. Further, the chapter investigates the goals of the UAE's foreign policy and illuminates the mechanisms integral to its construction. It also examines the operative factors determining the contours of the Emirati foreign policy. It demonstrates examples of the UAE's well-calculated foreign-policy approaches toward significant global issues. Finally, the chapter provides a survey of UAE's foreign aid to different countries and organizations all over the world.

The Definition of Foreign Policy

Throughout history, international relations have existed among different states,

countries and societies. Foreign policies are part and parcel of international relations. Each independent state has a foreign policy which regulates its relations with other countries. Regardless of differences in the concept of “foreign policy” among theorists,¹ it could be defined as “The strategy advocated by the state in streamlining and organizing its foreign relations in order to protect its interests and achieve its goals”. In this sense, foreign policy is concerned with external activities which take place outside the geographical borders of the state. In other words, the relations between a specific society and its individuals within the national boundaries of a given state is related to the realm of domestic policy, whereas the relations between a state and the external world is a foreign policy issue. However, the foreign policy of any country is greatly influenced by the events and factors shaping its domestic policy.

According to traditional perspectives,² the concept of “the external world” in foreign policies means countries with which a state has particular relations and connections. However, this definition is rejected by advocates of modern political theory who identify “the external world” as the countries, organizations and institutions with which states have relations on different levels. Thus, **there are several key players in the political domains with regard to the external world:**

States in the World Order

States or countries constitute the backbone of the World Order. The International System in 2011 comprised 196 countries,³ which reveal differences in terms of population size in addition to political, military and economic weight. Due to their geographical sovereignty and other factors, countries are considered as the most important players in the World Order. Since there is no global government, all the countries play similar

roles within the World Order or The International System.⁴ In conclusion, it can be argued that countries occupy the center of the World Order as they constitute the pivotal components of international relations.

Intergovernmental Organizations

In addition to countries, intergovernmental organizations are considered as key players in the international system. Countries only are allowed to become full members in these organizations, [which take different forms](#):

- Global international organizations such as the United Nations, which includes 193 member states as of 2011. All countries are eligible to join the UN.
- International regional organizations such as The Arab League, the Gulf Cooperation Council (GCC), the European Union (EU) and African Union. Only the countries of a particular region are eligible to join these organizations.
- Functional International Organizations, Each of them is entitled to perform or tackle one function. For example the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO) performs a military function whereas the International Monetary Fund (IMF) or the World Bank (WB) perform economic functions. Functional International Organizations also operate on international or regional levels. In this sense, NATO is considered a Functional International Organization entitled to play a regional role. Since the countries located north of the Atlantic are only eligible to become NATO members, NATO is entitled to defend them.

International Non-Governmental Organizations

These organizations do not include countries or governments among their members. Individuals and institutions only are potential members constituting

the core of the International Non-Governmental Organizations, such as The Green Party, Amnesty International and the Friends of the Environment Foundation. These organizations play effective roles in their domains of specialization respectively whether in the area of human rights protection or the preservation of the environment. It is possible to track their activities and contributions by accessing their websites on the internet.

Political Organizations

Recently, radical political organizations such as Al Qaeda, Talban and Hezbollah were able to impose their agendas on the world. As a trans-border organization, Al Qaeda, for example, succeeded in infiltrating several countries in the four corners of the globe. Obviously, it is difficult to ignore the danger of Al Qaeda as a terrorist organization, particularly in the aftermath of the tragic events of the September 11th in the USA. On this ground, Al Qaeda unfortunately became a key player in the international system.

Global Issues

These issues are synonymous with international problems that destabilize global security and stability such as environmental pollution and terrorism. These global problems should be confronted collectively, and all the countries throughout the world are supposed to encounter the challenges posed by these issues. Each state builds its foreign policy with foreign international parties in order to meet international challenges and achieve domestic goals. In other words, each country constructs its own foreign policy in a way which fulfills mutual interests with international parties while realizing national goals.

The Goals of the UAE's Foreign Policy

The foreign policy of any country aims to achieve its goals and interests. The UAE constitution, Article 10, identifies the goals of the UAE Federal Union as follows: The aims of the Union shall be the maintenance of its independence and sovereignty, the safeguarding of its security and stability, defense against any aggression upon its existence or the existence of its member states, the protection of the rights and freedoms of the people of the Union, the achievement of close co-operation between the Emirates for their common benefit in realizing these aims and in promoting their prosperity and progress in all fields, the provision of a better life for all citizens together with respect by each Emirate for the independence and sovereignty of the other Emirates in their internal affairs within the limits of this Constitution.⁵ In consequence, the foreign policy of the UAE aims to achieve the supreme interests of the state. The UAE Constitution, Article 12, identifies the goals of the country's foreign policy as follows: The foreign policy of the Union shall be directed towards support for Arab and Islamic causes and interests and towards the consolidation of the ties of friendship and co-operation with all nations and peoples on the basis of the principles of the Charter of the United Nations and ideal international standards.⁶ The constitutional provisions regarding the aims of Emirati foreign policy are disseminated throughout the annual speeches of the president of the UAE, addressed to the Federal National Council. **These aims can be summarized as follows:**

- Maintaining the independence of the state and defending national security and stability.
- Solving pending problems with other countries by friendly and peaceful means.

- Mobilizing all efforts for the sake of serving the interests of the Arabic-Islamic world.
- Observing commitments to international conventions.

Throughout its political history, the UAE achieved the foregoing aims by advocating a foreign policy which depends on the following aspects:

1. Non-interference in the affairs of other countries and respect of their sovereignty.
2. Independence and non-alliance in foreign policy apart from the hegemony of the super-powers.

Constructing the UAE's Foreign Policy

The UAE's foreign policy aims to safeguard the interests of the country and consolidate its external relations. Therefore, the construction of the UAE's foreign policy is a complex process which requires extensive efforts. On this basis, **this important task is assigned to certain specialized and professional institutions as follows:**

The Supreme Council of the Union / The Federal Supreme Council

The Supreme Council of the Union is the highest authority in the UAE and is entitled to play decisive roles in the Emirati foreign policy according to Article 47 of the constitution. This article allocates the Supreme Council of the Union the task of formulating the general policy in all matters within the UAE, and the Supreme Control over the affairs of the Union generally.⁷ Since UAE foreign policy is among the missions allocated to the federal state, the Supreme Council is entitled to draw its demarcating lines. Moreover the Supreme Council of the Union is responsible for the ratification of treaties and international agreements and supervision of the Union's domestic and foreign affairs. The Supreme

Council is also authorized to object to the ratification of agreements of a local and administrative nature held between the member Emirates of the Union and the neighboring state or regions.⁸ On this basis, The Supreme Council plays a pivotal role in the construction of foreign policy.

The President and Vice President of the Supreme Council of the Union

The president of the Supreme Council of the Union plays a significant role in foreign policy through the responsibilities vested in him by [the provisions of the UAE's constitution](#):

- As part of the Supreme Council of the Union, the president participates in drawing and supervising the UAE foreign policy and ratifying foreign conventions.
- The president is authorized to appoint the diplomatic representative of the Union to foreign states. He is also entitled to sign documents accrediting diplomatic representatives of the Union to foreign states and organizations and shall accept the accreditation of diplomatic and consular representatives of foreign states to the Union and receive their letters of accreditation. He is similarly authorized to sign letters of appointment and exequaturs of diplomatic representatives.
- He has the absolute power to represent the state abroad.⁹

In the case of the president's absence, the constitution permits the vice president of the Supreme Council of the Union to exercise all the authorities of the president.¹⁰ Therefore, the president and the vice president play a central role in the construction of foreign policy.

Ministry of Foreign Affairs as Representative of the UAE Cabinet / the Council of Ministers

The Cabinet / the Council of Ministers is responsible for the implementation of the decisions, decrees, laws and policies issued by the Supreme Council of the Union, president and the vice president. The ministry of foreign affairs helps the cabinet in the implementation of some decisions in the sense that it represents the state, achieves its aims, and protects the interests of its citizens abroad.¹¹ Further, the ministry is also responsible for protecting the external commercial interests of the country by achieving the tasks originally allocated to the ex-ministry of foreign trade. These tasks aimed to invigorate the UAE's trade activities and reinforce the competitiveness of the UAE's trade abroad.¹² In a related context, the ministry of foreign affairs is initially responsible for constructing and accomplishing the UAE's foreign policy. This process entails the submission of related proposals to the UAE's cabinet (the council of ministers), which resubmits them to the Federal National Council for consultation and in its turn the FDC presents the proposals to the Supreme Council for approval.¹³

Determinants Influencing the Making of Foreign Policy

National Interest Determinant

The foreign policy of all countries aims to protect national interests, and the UAE is no exception. Safeguarding the security and stability of the federal state is crucial to the UAE's foreign policy. The UAE builds its political positions and international alliances on the basis of achieving national interests. Ostensibly, national interests vary from one country to another. However all countries are careful with sensitive interests, particularly the preservation of national security and the protection of

national sovereignty from external dangers. These red-line interests are common among all nations. The foreign policies of all countries are driven by their national interests. Subsequently, all countries strategically and politically operate in their external spheres in order to safeguard national interests.

Geographical Determinant

In general, the geographical location of any country plays a significant role in its foreign policy. Regarding the UAE, there is no doubt that the foreign policy of the country is determined by its geographical location. For example the UAE shares land borders with key countries in the region such as the Sultanate of Oman and the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia. Similarly, the UAE shares maritime borders with the Islamic Republic of Iran. These countries have disputes over their borders with the UAE, particularly Iran, a country occupying three of the UAE's islands: Abu Musa, the Greater Tumb and the Lesser Tumb. In the light of these complicated border disputes, the UAE's foreign policy makers are keen on dealing with them in a balanced manner to safeguard national interests and avoid conflicts with neighboring Islamic countries. In other words, the geographical determinant to a great extent has an impact on the UAE's foreign policy toward particular countries due to their geographical proximity.

Moreover, the location of the UAE in the Arabian Gulf region also influences its foreign policy because the region has been subject to geopolitical events of manifold ramifications. Therefore, the UAE's foreign policy makers should be cautious with diplomatic issues conflated with the implementation of the foreign policy agenda. In this turbulent situation, the UAE's foreign policy makers strive to make decisions which aim to maintain stability and alleviate tensions in the region. Clearly, the geographical locations of countries are crucial to their mutual relations

and diplomatic connections. Furthermore, the geographical element inherent in foreign policy is associated with a couple of crucial strategic concepts such as the “geographical extension” and “dynamic domain,” which should be taken into account by the concerned parties.

The National Determinant

The UAE's foreign policy is influenced by its national affiliation as an Arab country and as a member in the Arab League. In this context, the UAE provided support to the Palestinian Question and participated in reaching peaceful solutions for Arab-Arab conflicts. Certainly, the national determinant is present in the UAE's foreign policy which prioritizes Arab interests and defends the principles of Arab nationalism. This policy is personified by the pro-Arab positions taken by the UAE in international forums.

The Islamic Determinant

The UAE is a Muslim country, and all the citizens advocate the religion of Islam. The UAE is also a member in the Islamic Cooperation Organization. In its foreign policy, the UAE is keen on supporting Islamic issues and correcting current misconceptions about Islam, particularly after the image of Islam was tarnished in the aftermath of the tragic attacks of September 11th. Unfortunately, terrorists from Islamic countries triggered catastrophic events leading to the murder of 2,970 civilians. Thus, the Islamic determinant is part and parcel of the UAE's foreign policy, and the country is committed to support issues which serve Islam and improve its image as a civilized religion. As a whole the UAE foreign policy takes into consideration the achievement of the interests of the Islamic world on the global level.

The Economic Determinant

The economic status of any country has a direct influence on its foreign policy. As a petroleum exporting country, the domestic economic growth in the UAE depends largely on the oil revenues. These economic facts are reflected in Emirati foreign policy, which attempts to guarantee the availability and diversity of global markets for the UAE's oil exports. In addition, the UAE government encourages international investments in the country, which contributes to the development of economy. The UAE also created incentives to accelerate the trade exchange activities with other countries. Since the economic factor is detrimental to the UAE's foreign policy, the UAE, represented by the ministry of foreign affairs and other national institutions, gives priority to international cooperation in various economic fields.

The UAE Foreign Policy Toward Key Issues

The Occupied Emirati Islands

The three Emirati islands (Abu Musa, the Greater Tumb, and the Lesser Tub) were occupied by the Iranian forces on November the 30th 1971, two days before the establishment of the UAE Federal Union. The UAE did not have the intention to confront Iran militarily at the critical time of its foundation. Consequently, the UAE preferred to use peaceful negotiation as a means of solving the islands issue. Initially, the UAE attempted to settle the conflict through direct negotiations with Iran. After the collapse of negotiations due to Iranian evasive policies, the UAE resorted to the International Court of Justice, an affiliate of the United Nations. However, the Iranians did not respond to any of these two options and insisted on their illegal seizure of the islands.

Since the foundation of the UAE, Emirati diplomacy has succeeded in lobbying international efforts to support its historical rights in the three islands and to reach a solution through direct negotiations or arbitration.¹⁴ The UAE continued its commitment the peaceful track of negotiations even after the full control of Iran on Abu Musa Island. In 1922, Iran violated the terms of the memorandum of understanding previously signed with the Emirate of Sharjah, which regulated the presence of both sides on the island. In the aftermath of the occupation, the Iranians drove the entire Arab population out of the island.¹⁵

Certainly, Iran has no sufficient historical documents to prove its alleged rights in the islands; therefore, it rejected arbitration as a diplomatic and legal method of solving international conflicts peacefully. Conversely, the UAE prefers to use negotiations and peaceful diplomacy in solving the problem. The UAE did not exploit the Iranian weakness during the Iraqi-Iranian war, particularly after Iraq stipulated Iranian withdrawal from the Emirati islands in order to stop the war. The UAE turned down the Iraqi proposal and rejected to make any connections between the Iraqi war against Iran and the Emirati-Iranian conflict over the islands. This decision in itself gives credit to the UAE as a respectable country standing against any act of political opportunism, and affirms the integrity of the Emirati foreign policy, which prefers to solve conflicts through diplomatic methods.

The Palestinian Question

Since the occupation of Palestine by Israel, the UAE has been struggling to find a solution to the Palestinian Question. The UAE gave priority to the Palestinian Question as the most pivotal Arab issue that requiring a decisive solution. According

to the UAE's vision, peace and stability in the Middle East will be accessible only after finding a solution to the Palestinian Question. Historically, the UAE presented tremendous political and financial support to the Palestinians and the PLO leadership as the legal representatives of the Palestinian people. The UAE's diplomacy called for a peaceful settlement for the Palestinian-Israeli conflict, one in accordance to the UN decrees 242 and 425. The UAE also called all parties to maintain their commitment to the "the land for peace" principle, which will put an end to the hostilities between the Arabs and the Jews and ultimately lead to peaceful coexistence between the two sides. Moreover, the UAE supported the Arab initiative which stipulated Arab recognition of Israel in return for Israeli withdrawal from the Arab lands occupied during the 1967 war.

The UAE also criticized Israel on regular basis due to its violations of international conventions and initiatives. The UAE also denounced the recurrent Israeli aggression against the Palestinians and its settlement policy in the West Bank. It is known that Sheikh Zayed frequently criticized the Western countries which supported Israel, particularly the USA.¹⁶ Moreover, the Palestinian Question File is a priority for the UAE foreign policy makers. The UAE foreign policy keeps this file present in its international diplomatic activities. The UAE's diplomacy apparatus also attempted to achieve reconciliation between different Palestinian factions and organizations, especially after the seizure of the authority in Gaza by Hamas. Unfortunately, the internal divisions between the PLO authorities in the West bank and the Hamas government in Gaza widened the gap between the two sides and prolonged the conflict, a development which had catastrophic consequences for the Palestinian issue.

The October War of 1973

In October of 1973, the UAE supported the Arab armies in their war against Israel, when the armies of Egypt and Syria launched an attack against the Israeli forces in an attempt to liberate the territories occupied by Israel in 1967. Although a newly-founded country, the UAE took courageous initiative and decided to impose an embargo on the exportation of oil to the countries which supported Israel, including the USA. In his speeches, Sheikh Zayed repeated his resounding statement: "The Arab oil is not more expensive than Arab blood,"¹⁷ declaring his support for the Arab troops and confirming his challenge to the Western allies of Israel. The UAE offered unlimited financial support to Egypt and Syria, and its citizens participated in several blood donation campaigns. The UAE's forces were mobilized and were put on alert. In other words, the UAE's troops were ready to assist the Arab armies in the war with Israel, had they been asked to engage in the battles.¹⁸ This firm position on the part of the UAE is a manifestation of a foreign policy which prioritizes Arab interests and confronts external aggressions against the Arab nation.

The Iraqi-Iranian War

The UAE's foreign policy primarily aims to achieve stability in the entire Gulf region; therefore, it did not support the war between Iraq and Iran. Consequently, the UAE adopted a balanced policy toward the two fighting parties, and called for terminating the war which destabilized the security of the Gulf. In order to protect the security of the Arabian Gulf and prevent the Iraqi-Iranian war from sweeping the entire region, the UAE, in collaboration with other countries, formed the Gulf Cooperation Council (GCC) in 1981. The UAE and other GCC countries attempted several times to put an end to the war and reach settlement via negotiations, but the

intransigence of the conflicting parties disrupted these efforts.¹⁹

Throughout the war, the UAE took a firm stance which attempted by all diplomatic means to work out a reasonable solution to the conflict. In 1986, when the offshore oil field of Abu Albukhoush came under aerial bombardment, the UAE dealt with the event in a calm manner. The UAE refused to accuse either of the battling parties because it did not want to fuel the flames of the war. Instead the UAE, through the ministry of foreign affairs, pursued a balanced policy toward the war and called for achieving peace in the Gulf. When Iran accepted Security Council resolution 598, which called for a cease-fire, the UAE praised the Iranian response, considering it a courageous decision.²⁰

The rational foreign policy of the UAE succeeded in safeguarding the country from the consequences of the war. Thanks to the UAE's foreign policy, the territories of the country remained untouched by the war, with the exception of the attack on the oil field of Abu Albukhoush. In general, the Emirati foreign policy has implemented a wise and balanced diplomacy in order to keep the UAE away from external threats and trans-border conflicts.

The Lebanese Civil War

The UAE adopted a fixed position toward the Lebanese Civil War, which broke out in 1975. The UAE attempted to stop the war, which jeopardized the strategic interests of the Arab nation. In 1977, the UAE assigned a military unit in the peace-keeping Arab forces which were sent to Lebanon. It was the first time since the foundation of the UAE that Emirati troops were deployed on military missions outside its territories.²¹ On the diplomatic front, the UAE presented an initiative to settle the Lebanese conflict, which culminated in an emergency Arab summit held

in Morocco. The Morocco Summit resulted into the formation of a top-ranking committee authorized to outline an agreement called the Ta'if Convention in 1989, which terminated the war. In the aftermath of the war, the UAE was responsible for removing all the mines planted by the Israeli army in Lebanon, in collaboration with the United Nations and the Lebanese army. The important assistance provided by the UAE to Lebanon during the conflict aimed to end a ruthless war which tore the country apart. The attitude of the UAE foreign policy toward the Lebanese Civil War was a testimony to its ceaseless efforts in supporting the Arab nation during times of turmoil and crisis.

The South Yemeni-Omani Dispute

The UAE played a vital role in settling the Yemeni-Omani dispute which resulted from the offering of support by the People's Democratic Republic of Yemen to the Marxist rebels in Oman (The Popular Front for the Liberation of Oman and the Arabian Gulf). This dissident organization attempted to remove the Sultan of Oman from power, and was subsequently engaged in a war with the Omani army. The UAE, with the help of Kuwait, succeeded in the mediation between the two conflicting countries. In consequence of the mediation efforts, and the Emirati's wise diplomacy, Oman and South Yemen signed a settlement agreement in October 1982. The two countries agreed on establishing mutual diplomatic relations, and the People's Democratic Republic of Yemen pledged to terminate their support for the Omani rebels. Subsequently, the military activities of the rebellious movement came to an end, and its dissident army capitulated. The successful mediation in the Yemeni-Omani conflict is a manifestation of the tremendous efforts of the Emirati diplomacy in serving Arab interests and helping brotherly Arab countries to overcome their differences.

The Return of Egypt to the Arab League

In the aftermath of signing the peace treaty between the Arab Republic of Egypt and Israel in 1979, the majority of Arab countries decided to transfer the Arab League headquarters from Cairo to Tunisia and suspend the membership of Egypt in the League. Despite this decision, the UAE was aware of the strategic importance of Egypt as a central country in the region. The UAE also emphasized the role of Egypt as a major frontline defensive power against external threats and attempts to disintegrate the Arab nation. Due to Emirati efforts, Egypt was allowed to rejoin the Arab League in 1988, and resumed membership in the organization. It is well-known that Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan Al Nahyan was the first Arab president who visited Egypt after its return to the Arab League. The historical visit of the UAE's president to Egypt at that time epitomized the Emirati awareness of the significance of the strategic role of Egypt as a pivotal regional power and an asset to the Arab world.

The Iraqi Invasion and Occupation of Kuwait

The UAE was thunderstruck, on both governmental and popular levels, by the Iraqi invasion of Kuwait on August 2, 1990. The other Gulf countries were also taken by surprise by the invasion and occupation of Kuwait. The Emirati response to the invasion was prompt and straightforward. The UAE denounced the invasion and attempted to achieve the following three aims:

- The complete and unconditional withdrawal of the Iraqi forces from Kuwait.
- The return of the Kuwaiti government to rule.
- Laying the foundations required to prevent the recurrence of such threats in the future.

Subsequently, the UAE participated in the meetings relating to resolving this issue

on all levels. The UAE also coordinated with other Gulf countries in their endeavors to confront the occupation and support the national pursuits to liberate Kuwait. In a related scenario, the UAE provided all required facilities to the Kuwaiti citizens who came to the country during the invasion. In cooperation with other countries preparing to liberate Kuwait, the UAE received combat Arab troops in its territories. When war broke out, the UAE's ground troops and air force participated in the battles against the invading Iraqi army.²²

The UAE's position toward the Iraqi conquest of Kuwait was an expression of the Emirati rejection of any attacks against a sovereign Arab country. It also encapsulated the UAE's commitment to defend any GCC country against external attacks. Further, the UAE's position complied with international conventions, which prohibited the occupation of the territory of independent countries. In fact, the UAE's position, in coordination with the positions of other Gulf States during the Kuwaiti crisis, strengthened the joint defense system underpinning the GCC countries.

Zayed's Pre-emptive Initiative to Prevent the War against Iraq

The USA, led by George W. Bush, used a variety of false pretexts to launch war against Iraq in 2003. Central to these pretexts was the allegation concerning what was called the Iraqi nuclear program to produce weapons of mass destruction. In addition, similar claims were made about the reluctance of Iraq to cooperate with international organizations in the inspection and supervision of its alleged non-conventional weapons program. On March 20, 2003, the USA and its Western allies launched a massive war against Iraq, seizing Baghdad and uprooting the regime of Saddam Hussain. The US military victory was immediately followed by a series of political setbacks, and Iraq was torn apart by insurgencies and a brutal civil war. The

US invasion of Iraq did not bring democracy to the country and did not herald the birth of a New Middle East, despite the promises of the American president. Instead, the American occupation of Iraq provided the spark for ferocious military resistance against the colonizing army and its neo-imperialistic agenda. Moreover, the current deteriorating situation in Iraq, a country devastated by sectarian conflicts and ethnic disputes, was the direct consequence of the relentless US war. Iraq was transformed into a playground for militant groups from all religious sects in the region. Making matters worse, the US army was evacuated from Iraq in 2011, leaving the country prey for regional interferences, terrorist activities and merciless sectarian wars bringing the country backward to the Stone Age. As a result of the US occupation, Iraq which was known for its glorious historical past, is now on the verge of collapse, divided on sectarian and ethnic grounds.

The UAE, under the wise leadership of Sheikh Zayed, was totally against the occupation of Iraq. On multiple occasions, Sheikh Zayed called for solving the Iraqi issue peacefully. When the mobilization of the US forces and its allies reached a peak and the war was imminent, the UAE's president made a last-minute attempt to save Iraq from the horrific consequences of war. During the Arab summit, convened in the beginning of March 2003 in Sharm El- Skeikh, Egypt, the UAE's president presented his famous "Sheikh Zayed's Initiative" to the Arab leaders. The essence of the initiative aimed to evade the inevitable war against Iraq, settle the conflict peacefully, and counter the sinister insinuations of the war mongers who insisted on destroying Iraq. According to the initiative, the Iraqi president and other leaders in the Iraqi government, should step down and evacuate the country within two weeks.

The initiative also stipulated the protection of the Iraqi leadership locally and

internationally, offering immunity from any judicial trials. In accordance with the initiative, Iraq would be put under the supervision of the Arab League and the United Nations during the transitional stage until further decisions regarding self-determination were taken by the Iraqi people. The initiative also stipulated a general and comprehensive amnesty for the Iraqi people inside and outside country.²³ Unfortunately, the initiative was rejected by some Arab countries who considered it an act of interference in the domestic affairs of both an Arab country and a member in the Arab League. These events provide evidence of the genius of Sheikh Zayed and his far-reaching vision. Many catastrophic events and terrorist operations now rampant in Iraq could have been avoided if the Arab leaders had accepted the Zayed's initiative. Today, Iraq, one of the richest countries in the world, has been transformed into a sanctuary for militant Jihadist factions and sectarian militias.

Counterterrorism

Terrorism is a thorny international issue, and terrorist activities are not limited to a specific area or geographical zone. However, the deadly ramifications of terrorism have left their imprints on the Arab region more than any other part of the world. Due to its faith in the importance of peaceful coexistence among nations all over the world, the UAE condemns terrorism in all its forms. Since no single state is able to counter terrorism alone, the UAE considers this evil phenomenon a global problem which requires collective confrontation and international cooperation. Further, the UAE denounces terrorism on the basis of the provisions of the Charter of the United Nations, as well as humanitarian and international laws, including the Geneva Convention of 1949. Moreover, the UAE distinguishes between terrorism and the legal rights of the oppressed peoples of the Earth to defend themselves against

occupation, imperialism and aggression. The UAE's policy upholds the rights of colonized people to gain self-autonomy and self-determination in compliance with the provisions of international law, the United Nations Charter, and international legitimacy resolutions. For example, the UAE supports the struggle of the Palestinian people to achieve their independence and establish their state on their territories.

In its efforts to counter terrorism, the UAE formed the National Committee to Combat Terrorism, a committee including representatives from different governmental sectors, and issued the Anti-Money Laundering Law. Moreover, the UAE has frozen suspect bank accounts and provided information regarding their suspicious activities to other regional and international partners. The UAE also exchanges related data with different countries and monitors bank transactions and money transfers. In a similar context, the UAE prohibits membership in terrorist organizations and has criminalized any attempts to provide support or sanctuary to them or participate in any logistic operations which include the transportation of weapons or provisions to these dangerous groups. Several regulations and laws have been issued to prevent terrorist organizations from using UAE territory as a basis of their operations against other countries. Moreover, the UAE has also strengthened its immigration procedures and tightened control on its borders and all entry and exit ports. The country also joined anti-terrorism international conventions including nuclear terrorism, calling for agreements to make the Arab region and the Middle East free from nuclear weapons.

The Arab Spring Events

The popular uprisings in the Arab world, erupting in 2011, were known as the Arab Spring revolutions. These revolutionary intifadas succeeded in removing deeply rooted and long-term oligarchies and totalitarian systems such as the Tunisian regime

governed by Zain Al-Abedein bin Ali, which was deposed on January 14, 2011, and the Egyptian government of Hosni Mubarak, overthrown on February 14, 2011. Later, the dictatorial Libyan regime led by Moammar Al Qathafi collapsed on October 20, 2011, followed by the Yemeni government led by Ali Abdulla Saleh, which fell on February 21, 2012. These uprisings were triggered by a variety of elements, including the proliferation of rampant governmental corruption, poverty, oppression and other social diseases. The UAE did not oppose these revolutions and showed respect to the Arab nations in their search for self-determination. For example, the UAE introduced unlimited military and logistic support to the Libyan people in their struggle against the coercive regulations imposed by the regime. The UAE also supported the Libyan revolutionary forces on both humanitarian and military levels in their attempt to prevent the tanks and troops of Al Qathafi from invading the city of Bane-Ghazi, and slaughtering the citizens who demonstrated against the regime.

The UAE also supported the GCC initiative to restore peace and stability in Yemen after the revolution of the Yemeni people against the aggression and tyranny of the ruling regime. In essence, the UAE's policy toward the Arab Spring events aimed to end the revolutions peacefully in order to save the lives of the innocent and stop bloodshed. The UAE also struggled to protect the Arab world from division and disintegration due to external interference. The UAE was aware of the evil intentions of hostile countries which tried to exploit the uprisings to achieve dubious political and sectarian agendas in the region under the camouflage of deceptive slogans. The attitude of the UAE toward the Syrian Civil War, which turned the country into a wasteland, is a stark example of the Emirati policy in this respect. The UAE made all possible efforts to put an end to the heinous massacres in Syria, where Arabs and

Muslims are slaughtered on daily basis. In addition to the Emirati endeavors to stop bloodshed in Syria and reach a settlement via negotiations, the UAE has introduced generous humanitarian aid to the Syrian people. Likewise, the UAE provided support to the Egyptian people in their decision to overthrow the Mubarak regime. The UAE also backed the Egyptians when they revolted against the Brotherhood regime of Mohamed Mursi as a result of the chaos which overwhelmed Egypt at that time. The UAE supported the legitimate rights of the people of Egypt, who called for the election of a new president able to restore stability to the country.

The Case of Bahrain

The UAE took a firm position toward the Bahraini issue and provided unlimited support to the government and people of Bahrain. The UAE denounced any external attempts aiming to exploit the sectarian demography of the country in order to destabilize its national security and achieve diabolical religious purposes. In other words, the UAE rejected all endeavors which sought to export the sectarian slogans, disseminated by the Iranian Revolution, to Bahrain. Therefore, the UAE stood against all ventures aiming to transform Bahrain from a country which advocated a progressive conservative governmental system to a state modeled on the political paradigms manufactured by the Iranian Revolution.

The UAE's assistance and support to the people of Bahrain succeeded in restoring the unity and cohesion of all the ethnic and sectarian elements of the country. The UAE aims to safeguard the sectarian coherence of Bahrain, which is fundamental to the stability of the GCC countries. Throughout history, the Gulf region has been characterized by ethnic stability and sectarian harmony among its peoples and tribes. Therefore, the UAE was concerned with supporting Bahrain

in order to help the country transcend internal differences stimulated by foreign conspiracies and maintain its social cohesion.

The Integration of the GCC Countries

The UAE pays unlimited attention to the importance of achieving integration among the GCC countries. The first Gulf Cooperation Council summit was held in 1981 in Abu-Dhabi, the UAE capital, and was an expression of the UAE's desire to proceed forward toward the integration of all the GCC countries. Consequently, the UAE was supportive of all enterprises aiming to achieve integration, including the establishment of the Peninsula Shield, the military wing of the GCC countries. Further, the UAE approved the endeavors to establish the GCC Customs Union, and approved the suggestion to establish the GCC Monetary Union. However, the UAE will not support the GCCMU until it is proved that all countries will play similar and balanced roles and that collective benefits will be distributed on an equal and fair basis. Later, the financial crisis which devastated the European economy in 2011 compelled the GCC countries to make some revisions before the foundation of the GCC monetary union. Similarly, the UAE supported the initiative, presented by King Abdulla bin Abdul-Aziz of Saudi Arabia during the 32nd GCC summit held in Riyadh in 2011, in which he suggested to transform the GCC from union to integration.

Despite the Emirati support for the idea of integration, the country preferred to take precautionary steps and pave the way for the coming stage in order to ensure the success of the initiative. Thus, the UAE argued that it is premature to implement the initiative in the short run because the current conditions in the GCC are not suitable. The UAE preferred to keep the GCC union as it is for the time-being and postpone the integration phase to the future due to fears inspired by the Omani hesitation

to remain in the GCC. The UAE highly appreciated the contributions of the GCC since its foundation until the present time. Hence, the UAE insisted on keeping the organization as it is in the coming few years because any resolution or restructuring of the GCC may lead to its disintegration.

UAE Foreign Aid

As a responsible state within the international order, the UAE considers external aid as part of its foreign policy and as an expression of its commitment to help impoverished and under-privileged countries all over the world. On this basis, the UAE utilized its revenues to provide assistance to the most vulnerable countries worldwide without discrimination. In March of 2013, the UAE contributed to the Ministry of Development and International Cooperation, which is responsible for foreign aid among other missions. The ministry aims to promote the UAE as a major foreign aid donor country. **The ministry is also responsible for the distribution and follow-up of the foreign aid coming from the following donors:**

Federal Ministries and Government Departments

- The Ministry of Presidential Affairs.
- The Ministry of Foreign Affairs.
- The Ministry of Development and International Cooperation.
- The Ministry of Interior.
- The Armed Forces.
- The Department of Finance of Abu-Dhabi.
- The General headquarters of Abu-Dhabi Police.
- The General Headquarters of Dubai Police.
- The UAE Project for Reconstruction and Support of Lebanon.

Independent or Semi Independent Donors

- Abu-Dhabi Fund for Development was established in 1971 in order to provide aid for projects in developing countries in the form of soft loans.
- Khalifa bin Zayed Al Nahyan Foundation for Humanitarian Works was established in 2007 to support the needy and provide relief aid for victims of conflicts and natural disasters.
- The Red Crescent Authority was founded in 1983 and it is the central department in the state which is concerned with the aids activities inside and outside the country.
- Zayed bin Sultan Foundation for Charity and Humanitarian Works was founded in 1992 to provide charity inside and outside the UAE.
- Mohamed bin Rashid Al Maktoum Charitable Humanitarian Foundation was established in 1997 to deliver charity inside and outside the UAE.
- Al Maktoum Charitable Foundation was established in 1997.
- Dubai Cares was founded in 2009.
- International Humanitarian City was founded in 2007.
- Noor Dubai Foundation was established in 2010.
- Dubai Charitable Society was established in 1994.
- Sharjah Charitable Society was founded in 1989.
- The Emirates World Humanitarian Mobile Hospital (Elaaj) launched by Zayed Giving Initiative was established in 2009.
- Sharjah Charity House was established in 1996.
- Mohamed bin Zayed Al Nahyan Species Conservation Fund was established

in 2009.

- Ahmed bin Zayed Al Nahyan Charitable and Humanitarian Foundation was founded in 2010.
- There are also other philanthropic and charitable organizations such as the Emirates Airlines Charitable Foundation, Sultan bin Khalifa Humanitarian and Scientific Foundation and the Ewa'a Shelter for Women and Children.

The UAE Foreign Aid Report

According to the UAE Foreign Aid Report, the United Arab Emirates has introduced 7.74 billion Dirhams (equal to 2.11 billion US dollars) in the form of grants and loans to developmental programs and charity projects in 128 countries all over the world. The UAE's governmental aid comes at the top of the donors' list, scoring 77% of the total foreign aid. The UAE's official foreign aid presented to development programs worldwide constituted 0.62% of the total national income in 2011.²⁴ Accordingly, the UAE has become one of the largest aid donors all over the world. The Global Humanitarian Assistance Report (2013) indicated that the UAE is in the list of the biggest thirty countries providing humanitarian governmental aid to foreign beneficiaries throughout the world.²⁵

Chart number (1) includes information about the UAE's foreign aid provided to different countries worldwide. The substantial financial value of the aid reflects the UAE's policy toward the beneficiary countries. In fact, the UAE aims to help these countries to overcome domestic economic hurdles and meet the requirements of human development. The chart also reveals that most of the UAE's foreign aid is

received by Arab and Islamic countries. By giving priority to these countries in terms of its foreign aid policy, the UAE aims to consolidate Emirati relations with the Arab and Islamic world.

Chart (1)

The Ten Countries Receiving Most of the UAE Foreign Aid in 2012²⁶

1	Jordan	966.90 Million Dirhams
2	Palestine	507.18
3	Afghanistan	366.79
4	Pakistan	354.11
5	Yemen	208.80
6	Azerbaijan	199.11
7	Eritrea	196.96
8	Mauretania	181.40
9	Morocco	156.49
10	Bahrain	140.5

The UAE's Position in Global Indicators

Apart from its recent political history, the UAE has succeeded in occupying advancing positions in several developmental indicators. According to the Human Development Report issued in 2011, the UAE is one of the top countries all over the world in this respect. In the Human Development Index, the UAE occupies the 30th position on the global level and the 1st position on the level of the Arab world. The HDI measures human development in the areas of health, education and living

standards. Undoubtedly, the UAE occupies prominent positions in the regional and international classifications of countries which achieved a breakthrough in the area of human development due to its huge contributions and continued advancement in this respect.²⁷

In terms of the strength of the economy, the UAE occupies the 24th position among 144 countries throughout the world.²⁸ The advancing status attributed to the UAE's economy according to the Competitiveness Report (2012-2013), issued by the World Economic Forum, is an example of its growing success. The World Economic Forum, which measured the economic strength of 144 countries worldwide, focused on the activities and policies of institutions responsible for enhancing the productivity standards and integrating domestic economies in the mainstream global economic structure. The UAE also comes first (simultaneously with Qatar) on the level of the Arab world and occupies the 27th position on the global paradigm in terms of transparency and absence of corruption.²⁹

Regarding the Success Indicator, the UAE comes first on the level of the Arab world and occupied the 29th position among 142 countries on the global level in 2012. The Success Indicator measures several aspects integral to economy, governance, education, health, security and freedom.³⁰ Moreover, Dubai and Abu-Dhabi in 2012 came first as the best cities for living in the Middle East and Africa.³¹ Further, the UAE is considered as the most globalized Arab country according to the KOF report in 2012, which measures globalization from different economic, social and political perspectives.³²

Further, the United Arab Emirates won the right to host the World Expo in Dubai in 2020. This event will place the UAE on the map of the most important business

interfaces all over the world. The World Expo is expected to attract large numbers of international companies and introduce the UAE's products to global corporations. In addition to the World Expo event contribution, the UAE has achieved a prominent status in the area of renewable energy. This status is recognized on the global level, and consequently the UAE was granted the right to host the headquarters of (IRENA), the International Renewable Energy Agency.

Conclusion

In the context of the prior argument, it is obvious that the UAE's foreign policy is characterized by its balanced diplomacy in terms of treatment with the external world. The UAE did not take strict or strained approaches in tackling international issues, but preferred to advocate a moderate strategy. In the international arena, the UAE did not prioritize its own benefits, ignoring other countries, but opted for a dynamic foreign policy based on mutual interests shared with other states. Thereupon, the UAE managed to develop friendly relations with all countries worldwide and succeeded in having diplomatic connections on the ambassadorial level with 146 countries.

As representative of a responsible state within the international system, the UAE's foreign policy is also characterized by its unwavering commitment toward the stability of other countries. It provides support to any efforts and initiatives aiming to promote security throughout the world. Furthermore, the UAE encouraged the efforts seeking to reinforce mutual cooperation among countries in its regional sphere and on the global paradigm. The UAE's membership in regional and international organizations enabled the country to deliver aide to a variety of countries in different parts of the world, which succeeded in strengthening stability and achieving its goals of development. The distinguished contributions of the UAE in different economic,

social, political, humanitarian and philanthropic fields enhanced the status of the UAE worldwide, according to the reports issued by global development indicators. In the light of these indicators, the UAE was able to consolidate its global competitiveness status. Likewise, the stunning success of the UAE's foreign policy, due to the use of balanced diplomacy and perpetual presence in major global forums, has gained the respect and admiration of the international community. Therefore there is no surprise that the UAE succeeded in winning the right to host the World Expo in 2020. As a result of the UAE's persistent and successful efforts toward achieving transition to sustainable energy, the country won the right to host the headquarters of (IRENA), the International Renewable Energy Agency.

Notes

- ^{1.} For example see the definitions mentioned in Mohamed Elsayed Selim. (1998). Anatomy of Foreign Policy. Cairo: Maktabat Alnahda Almasriyya, p.7-12.
- ^{2.} Regarding the new approach it is accurate that it is inherent in theories such Liberalism, Neo-Liberalism and to some extent in Neo-Realism. On the other hand, the conventional approach historically conflated with the Realistic theory considers the states as the only key players in international relations.
- ^{3.} Matt Resenborg. The Number of Countries in the World, at about.com geography.
- ^{4.} The classical Realistic theory in international relations and the Neo-Realistic theory operate from the hypothesis that the international order is governed by anarchy in the sense that it is horizontal rather than hierachal. Therefore all the countries play similar roles within the world order.
- ^{5.} The UAE Constitution, Article 10.
- ^{6.} Ibid, Article 12.
- ^{7.} Ibid, Article 47.
- ^{8.} Ibid, Article 123.
- ^{9.} Ibid, Article 54.
- ^{10.} Ibid, Article 51.
- ^{11.} www.mofa.gove.ae
- ^{12.} www.mofa.gove.ae
- ^{13.} The UAE Constitution, Article 60.
- ^{14.} Yousef Abu Al Shih. (2005). Potential patterns in the Gulf regional order and the Independence of the UAE Foreign Policy (1971-1997). Ras Al Khaimah, and Documentation and Studies Center.
- ^{15.} Mohamed AlFil. (1999). The UAE and the Dilemma of the Iranian Occupation of the Emirati Islands. The Gulf Book Center, p.260-263.
- ^{16.} William Row. (2003). “The Features of the Defense and Diplomacy Policy of the UAE”. Abu-Dhabi: Emirates Center for Strategic and Research Studies. The UAE Lectures Series no. 73, p.32.
- ^{17.} Sultan bin Mohamed Al Qasimi. (2010). Memory Talk / Hadith Al Dhakera. Sharjah : Al Qasimi Publications, P. 65-67.

- ^{18.} Abdul-Khalil Abdulla.(2001). Initiatives and responses in UAE foreign policy. Abu-Dhabi: Emirates Center for Strategic and Research Studies, P. 65.
- ^{19.} Ahmed Jalal Al Tadmuri. (2002). “ Features of National Strategy in the political approach of Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan Al Nahyan”. Abu-Dhabi: Emirates Center for Strategic and Research Studies. The UAE Lectures Series no. 59, p.19.
- ^{20.} Abdul-Razzaq Al Taei. Reading in the GCC Countries Position toward the Iraqi-Iranian War (1980-1988). Baghdad : Regional Studies Center.
- ^{21.} William Row. (2003), p.52-55.
- ^{22.} Ibid, p. 37.
- ^{23.} Ibid, p. 73.
- ^{24.} Zayed's Initiative to evade the war against Iraq. Retrieved from <http://www.alamuae.com>, on 6-4-2-12.
- ^{25.} Foreign Aid Coordination Office of the UAE., Foreign Aid in 2011, Abu-Dhabi, 2012. UAE Ministry of Development and International Cooperation.
- ^{26.} www.devinit.org
- ^{27.} United Nations Development Program, Global Human Development Report (2011), Sustainability and Equity, Better Future for All.
- ^{28.} The World Economic Forum, Competitiveness Report 2012/2013.
- ^{29.} World Transparency Report : www.transparecy.org
- ^{30.} The Legatum Institute, the 2012 prosperity Index. www.prosperity.com
- ^{31.} See the survey study by the Mecer 2012, Quality of the Living Survey.
- ^{32.} www.globalization.kof.ethz.ch. KOF Index of Globalization 2012.

References

- Abdulla, Abdul-Khalil.(2001). Initiatives and responses in UAE foreign policy. Abu-Dhabi: Emirates Center for Strategic and Research Studies, P. 65.
- AlFil, Mohamed. (1999). The UAE and the Dilemma of the Iranian Occupation of the Emirati Islands. The Gulf Book Center.
- Al Qasimi, Sultan bin Mohamed. (2010). Memory Talk / Hadith Al Dhakera. Sharjah : Al Qasimi Publications.
- Al Shih, Yousef Abu. (2005). Potential patterns in the Gulf regional order and the Independence

- of the UAE Foreign Policy (1971-1997). Ras Al Khaimah: Documentation and Studies Center.
- Al Tadmuri, Ahmed Jalal. (2002). “ Features of National Strategy in the political approach of Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan Al Nahyan”. Abu-Dhabi: Emirates Center for Strategic and Research Studies. The UAE Lectures Series no. 59.
 - Al Taei, Abdul-Razzaq. Reading in the GCC Countries Position toward the Iraqi-Iranian War (1980-1988). Baghdad : Regional Studies Center.
 - Row, William. (2003). “The Features of the Defense and Diplomacy Policy of the UAE”. Abu-Dhabi: Emirates Center for Strategic and Research Studies. The UAE Lectures Series no. 73, p.32.
 - Selim, Mohamed Elsayed. (1998). Anatomy of Foreign Policy. Cairo: Maktabat Alnahda Almasriyya.

Chapter Six

Social Systems in the Emirati Contemporary and Traditional Society



Chapter Six

Social Systems in the Emirati Contemporary and Traditional Society

Dr. Maitha Salem Al Shamsi

Introduction

Social systems incorporate basic patterns of social life resulting from social organization. A given social system consists of two major parts: the structure which underpins the backbone of the system and the social functions it performs.¹ For example, the production of food is the function of the agricultural system whereas the function of the family system is concerned with the upbringing of young people. In terms of their unity and interdependence, social systems constitute a comprehensive and coherent social structure.² Thus, people are supposed to comply with the norms inherent in social systems. Moreover, social behavior is determined by the goals, both explicit and implicit in social systems which are created by society. These social systems are characterized by spontaneity and changeability which parallel simultaneous transformation in society on the cultural, economic and political levels.³ Social systems also overlap and may affect each other as in the case of the connection between family and tribal systems. Regardless of the seemingly superficial simplicity of a given social system, it is obvious that it contains a complex structure of social relationships.⁴

Social Systems in the UAE Traditional Society

The social structure of the UAE society comprises a variety of social systems which incorporate embedded social patterns. The traditional Emirati society includes overlapping and interconnected social systems, whether the family, or the tribal systems, or other social communication systems based on solidarity and sponsorship.

These integrated social systems have provided momentum to the UAE society and have contributed to its continuity throughout history. These social systems also have performed their functions in compliance with current economic circumstances and in the light of the requirements of domestic social life.

The family and the tribe constitute the core of social life in the pre-oil era in the UAE. The prevailing economic and political conditions at that time precipitated the formation of a large-scale family and tribal system by configuring corporate and allied social units with a hierachal nature, starting with the family and ending with the tribe. These allied social units are governed by political leadership. Accordingly, a political system was constructed on a family and tribal basis from the bottom up. The top of the social pyramid, within this hierachal system constitutes a central leadership, including gradual positions occupied by the elders of clans and tribes.

The Traditional Family System

The traditional family system in the UAE is similar to the rest of the family systems in the Gulf and Arab communities influenced by Arabic culture and Islamic civilization. Since the family system constitutes the basis of the tribal system, the following section demonstrates the most important structural, functional, and marital characteristics of the traditional family:⁵

The Structural Characteristics of the Family

The Extended Family: The traditional family is distinguished by extension, and due to this peculiar characteristic, it comprises the backbone of the social structure. The concept of the extended family means a family composed of a man and his wife in addition to their married and unmarried sons and daughters. The extended family

also includes the wives of the sons and the grandchildren. In the Emirate society it may also encompass brothers and sisters and paternal/maternal uncles besides other relatives. Therefore, the extended family in the UAE constitutes a wide network of interconnected and overlapping family relationships.

The Patriarchal Family: The extended family in reality is a patriarchal family encompassing parental kinship and paternal authority. In this context, the patriarchal family in the UAE is constructed on a patrilineal basis affiliating the children to the male parents. Thus, a man is referred to as “the father of so and so.” The patrilineal system also results in the emergence of reciprocal rights and duties between parents and children related to inheritance, housing and succession. All these rights and duties are established on a patriarchal basis and are transmitted from parents to children. In a related context, it is accurate to say that tribal affiliation in itself is constructed on the same patriarchal ground.⁶

In a related scenario, patriarchal authority entails that the traditional family depends on the authority of the father over all members of the family in all aspects of life including work, marriage, divorce and housing. According to this system, the father is responsible for running the affairs of the family. In fact, he is the source of the commands and prohibitions in the family, providing guidance to his married and unmarried sons and daughters in matters related to their conduct, education and work. If, for some reason, the father of the family is absent, he is replaced by the grandfather or the elder brother.⁷

To a great extent, the absolute patriarchal authority over the family has been associated with the traditional mode of production in general and the economic situation of the head of the household in particular. The pattern of traditional

production required the collaboration and participation of all members of the family. The head of the family was responsible for running the affairs of the family and the revenues collected from the financial returns of its members. The status of the father is determined by his success in leading his family and upgrading its economic and social position.⁸ The head of the extended family plays a central role in social life through the distribution of functions within the family where every member has a role in the continuity of the family system and the preservation of its unity. The head of the family is also authorized to organize the roles of other individuals according to economic necessities. For example, the roles and tasks allocated to the males are usually linked with available resources and the nature of the economic system adopted by the family. Furthermore, social roles are automatically derived from the customs and traditions of society. For example, the Great Mother is responsible for the performance of the affairs of the house besides distributing the burdens and responsibilities among women in the family. She also supervises other required tasks in order to ensure their completion. In the extended family, the children learn from the male and female the nature of the roles required from them. Moreover, the principle of respect for age is central to the extended family where the youngest respects the elder until the chain of respect reaches the eldest source of power and authority, the father who enjoys the greatest respect. The Great Mother, it should be noted, also enjoys the respect and obedience of all the wives in the family.⁹

In extended families, there is no place for individuality: all the family members abide by the collective responsibility toward the family. In extended families, furthermore, relationships are determined on the basis of age and sex.¹⁰ The family manifests its power through the performance of effective social roles. The status of a

family is reinforced by consolidating kinship relations and blood ties. Likewise, the tribe gains prominence due to its power and glory.

In the traditional UAE society, women used to play a limited social role. They were subject to the authority of the male community. The obedience of women to men was key among the social conventions rampant in the country. Women were not allowed to make any decisions regarding the household affairs or the affairs of the children without consulting the male members of the family. However the Great Mothers in the extended family sometimes took the role of the men. In other words, some women, due to their experience, wisdom and positions, had a role in the consultation process through expressing their views, providing guidance, and occasionally intervening in the decisions made by the patriarchal figures in the households. Women usually gained their social status in the light of their roles in the education of their children, their ability to assume responsibilities, and take care of housekeeping. In the case of the absence of the husband, especially in the fishing and diving communities, the woman bears all the responsibilities, and serves as head of the family. On behalf of the absent husband, she takes care of her family and runs the children's affairs. She also makes all decisions regarding the management of the household. The decision-making process is often shared between men and women; however, there are some decisions that are exclusively limited to the males of the family.

The Functional Characteristics of the Emirati Family

As the basic unit of social fabric, the family constitutes the first life experiences of its individual members through its biological, social, and economic functions in all related spheres. Apparently, all these functions are interlinked and are performed to serve the needs of society at large. Therefore, the continued prominence of the family

as a social institution is due to the effectiveness of the functions it provides to the society at large. Thus, the family is deeply ingrained as part of the social structure, and the patterns of behavior in the family are also deeply rooted in the society. As the most important element in the social construct, the family maintains mutual interaction and a reciprocal relationship with the different components of society.¹¹

Several bodies of research dealing with the family have emphasized the importance of its role in society and its core functions which could not be compromised regardless of the development and alteration of the shape of the family. The moral function of the family is central in this context. The family usually provides its members with inherited ethics, public morals, rules of conduct, customs and traditions. By virtue of the family, its members become aware of the broad meaning of good and evil and the standards of virtue and vice. In other words, the family familiarizes its members with a general morality connected to all its religious and spiritual components, not merely morality in the narrow pedagogical sense limited to the upbringing of children since birth, domesticating them and orienting them toward the meaning of vice and virtue.

The most significant functions of the family could be summarized as follows:

The Reproductive Function

Since the beginning of creation, reproduction has been the most important function of the family. This function has gained great importance everywhere, especially in traditional societies which depended on the reproductive function of the family to increase the number of children. The rise of the number of the family members in traditional societies has had a positive impact on its structure and status. Due to the importance of increasing reproduction in the traditional family in the UAE society, the family has been keen on taking a number of helpful measures, such as encouraging

early marriage and supporting young couples by providing them with the necessary living needs. The extended family also helps assist newly married couples in the process of socialization within its surroundings. **The importance of these functions could be summarized by the following three points:**

- **Supporting the social status of the family:** The social status of the Emirati family is determined by its size while the individual members derive their position from the status of their large families. Each family member has to exhibit the best representation of his family in the sense that he is supposed to be a good example of it in terms of commitment to moral values. The family member's respect of values and his desirable behavior reflects the strength of his family and promotes its reputation. Similarly, the central patriarchal figure (the lord of the family) derives his status from the moral and social positions of his male sons, particularly if they play prominent roles in society and if they are known for their courage and generosity.
- **Participating in economic activities:** The number of the family members is important to accomplish tasks that require work necessary for their needs and livelihood. This problem is contained only if the number of working hands from the same family are maintained so as to be available to fulfill the previous tasks of the older generation.
- **A main pillar for the defense of the tribe:** The increase of family members provides the tribe with sufficient male fighters able to defend the tribe along with its principles and properties. Furthermore, reproduction in traditional families complies with the teachings of Islamic Shariah. The prophet Mohammed instructed directive: "marry and beget children for I'll be proud

of you before the nations on the Day of Resurrection".¹² This prophetic saying (hadith) is popular in traditional circles, though prominent Islamic scholars and specialists in prophetic traditions emphasized that the (hadith) is false and likely fabricated.

The function of socialization

Socialization is the process of upbringing, learning, education, instruction and social integration. This process is based on social exchange, and aims to acquaint human beings with behavioral norms and societal trends throughout the consecutive stages of growth.¹³ The family is one of the most important socializing institutions due to its vital role in this respect. It serves as an influential mediator in the self and in the personality construction process integral to each individual in society. Through the family, the child acquires the values and culture of society and learns ways of thinking prevailing in the surrounding environment. By virtue of the family, the child is imbued with habits and trends, ideas, and methods of cooperation and communication with others within a given social milieu. As a microcosm of society, the family is a living and dynamic unit aimed at helping children to engage in healthy social growth.¹⁴

The traditional family tackles two phases in the process of socialization: The first phase has a cultural aspect which includes the familiarization of the individual within the values, customs and traditions of the society. The network of relationships with relatives and friends in the house and the neighborhood within the vicinity of the extended family plays an important role in the process of identification. The overall social and cultural climate during the early years of the child's life shapes and to a large extent formulates his experience of coexistence in a social context. It also shapes the formation of his emotional horizon in addition to his view of the self, the

universe, and others. The second phase has a social dimension which comprises by necessity the education of the children of some trades, professions and businesses that will make them productive participants in their families. In traditional societies, these professions are usually inherited from one's ancestors. The individual acquires his position in his family and his tribe from the status of his profession or career and as a result of his participation in the economic life of the community. As educational catalysts and cultural intermediaries, religious norms and values along with cultural heritage play an active role in shaping the cultural climate for the individual and making it compatible with the social fabric and all other societal systems for the purpose of the construction of identity and the reinforcement of affiliation within the family and the tribe. It is relevant to argue in this connection that identity is determined by methods of upbringing built on traditions and customs as well as religious and societal values promoted by family and kinship mechanisms.¹⁵

The Economic Function

In traditional societies, the extended family formulated an economic unit in the dominant mode of production whereas the division of labor was cooperatively distributed within the same family.¹⁶ In the communities in which the economy is based on agriculture, the cultivatable lands were limited because of the lack of water sources, except in the vicinity of the oases where water springs are (were?) found. The majority of agricultural production depends (depended?) on the cultivation and full exploitation of palm trees which provide people with dates, while the trunks of the trees were used in the construction of their houses. Further, the palm fronds were used in many traditional industries, especially those related to domestic inputs.

Nevertheless, the scarcity of water resources constituted the most difficult problem encountering the farmers seeking to irrigate their lands. Therefore they largely depended on wells and the Aflaj water system due to the scarcity of rain.¹⁷ The lack of water compelled the domestic populace to search for alternative irrigation dynamics to guarantee fairness in terms of the distribution of water among farmers seeking to irrigate their farms and trees.

Regarding communities in which the economy is based on fishing and diving, members work in fishing, diving, or trade depending on the training and education received by males through their parents in the extended family. The males of some particular families may work in the fishing business whereas the males of other families may be engaged in the trade sector, and some others would take up the profession of diving as a way to earn their living, particularly within the coast communities. The pearl trade generated substantial financial resources and the economy of the coast communities flourished accordingly. Hence goods and supplies were often bartered between the coast communities and the residents of the agricultural areas. Furthermore, some families often came in summer, the season of (extreme heat), to agricultural areas for two reasons : first, to spend the summer in areas where fresh water, dates, fruits like mango and guava are available in addition to the abundance of palm trees (and they also moved toward areas where the summer heat is bearable); second, to exchange commodities or any other kind of trade including goods such as dates, rice and dried fish. These visits also aimed to enhance social relations between families and tribes.

In the herding communities, the division of labor is very important to facilitate the economic function of the family. In these communities, each single family divides

tasks among its members in the pasture and grazing areas. Some of them are allocated the task of the search for safe grazing places, whereas others are assigned the task of herding camels and sheep. Other family members are involved in related activities resulting from this profession, as in the industries of wool-weaving and the building of tents. Finally, a group is concerned with the milking of camels, cows, sheep and goats and the producing of cattle dairy products.

Other Social Functions

In addition to the aforementioned functions, the family tackles the following tasks:

- **Identifying the social position of the individual:** This position is determined by the status of the family and the tribe of a potential individual within the social ladder.¹⁸
- **Supporting the social status of the tribe:** the extended family indirectly reinforces the tribe to which it belongs since family derives its power from the tribal system. Alternatively, the family should consolidate the position of the related tribe to guarantee its security and the continuity of its competitiveness in a society based on tribal conflicts.

Marital characteristics

The UAE traditional family system is distinguished by some marital characteristics in harmony with domestic economic and social circumstances. [The marriage institution in the UAE in the past was characterized by the following:](#)

- **Early Marriage:** Young people used to marry in their teens: the boy at the age of eighteen and the girl at the age of fourteen. Future wives were selected during their childhood. In most cases the couples are from the same family.

The sons often marry the daughters of their paternal or maternal uncles and aunts and vice versa. In the past marriage was not a matter of personal choice for either the males or the females. Instead, marriages were prearranged by the senior members of the family while the future couples were very young. Nevertheless, early marriage was socially accepted in traditional societies and it was encouraged for a variety of factors. Economically, it contributes to increasing the numbers of the family members through reproduction. Early marriage also enables the young family members to build their families and households at an early age, which leads to social stability. It empowers the young couples and reinforces their potentialities and helps them to be responsible citizens.

- **Endogamy:** Marriage cases in the traditional UAE society primarily take place among relatives. For males and females, it is often preferred to marry a cousin or someone from the same family rather than from outside the family circle. However, in a few cases people were allowed to marry from outside their families. Endogamy derives its importance from the fact that marriage from the same family is better for the family members and fulfills other functions. For example, the family is able to achieve marital compatibility among its members in an easy manner. Furthermore, if there is a bond of kinship between couples they will be merged with their extended family in a smoother way. Endogamy also consolidates the economic status of the family. In certain cases collective marriages take place between young couples connected by the bond of kinship. For example, in some cases male and female cousins marry at one time. In

this bartering marriage system, the husband is not compelled to pay a dowry to his bride like other forms of traditional marriage. Prospective wives and husbands are nominated by the senior members of the family. In other words, the selection process is done through the families of the couples. It should be noted that it is rare to have a young man or woman reject marrying someone recommended by the parents. Marriage is usually consummated through consensus and satisfaction of the parents, who are often relatives from the same clan or extended family or tribe.

Preparing the Boys and Girls for Married Life

During the process of socialization, parents do their best to provide their children with the necessary skills for their married life in the future. In the extended family, the girl is prepared to be a wife and mother in the future. At the age of fourteen, the girl learns from her mother how to cook properly and how to take care of the affairs of the household. She is also equipped with other skills integral to married life. In a similar scenario, young men are acquainted with the rights and duties associated with marriage and are informed of the responsibilities attached to married people.

The preceding preparation process aims to achieve marital adjustment between the couple. It also provides prior knowledge to the young couple about their conjugal rights and duties. In traditional marriages women are always obedient and in compliance with the resolutions of their husbands. They make great efforts to please their husbands and their families in addition to maintaining the sustainability of their marriages. In traditional marriage, divorce rarely takes place and the parents usually do their best to help the couples transcend the hurdles which lead to divorce in less traditional societies.

The main characteristics of marriage in the traditional Emirati society could be summarized as follows:

- Marriage is mostly common among couples from the same family; thus the pair are connected by a bond of kinship
- Marriage is consummated at an early age.
- Marriage is prearranged by the parents of the young couples.
- Marriage is characterized by a process of adjustment and learned compatibility.
- Marriage is characterized by cohesion and stability.

The women in the traditional Emirati society played important social roles, however they were subject to the authority and the rule of the male members. Moreover, the established customs and traditions of society entailed that women should show their obedience and adherence to the opinions of the men. For example, women were not allowed to leave their houses without the permission of their husbands. Nevertheless, husbands usually consulted their wives regarding difficult issues but the final decisions were left to the male community.

The Tribal System

The UAE society is characterized by an ancient, authentic, and organized tribal system underpinning the backbone of the social structure. The tribal system which was constructed and established in the desert and the coastal environment of the UAE was augmented by the kinship relationships which constituted its lifeline. The aforementioned kinship relationships provided the tribal system with rigidity and loyalty until it was transformed into a solid social organization from which a set of patterns emerged, including genuine values and deeply-seated traditions. This

network of values and traditions generated a general framework in which the Emirati society grew up and flourished.¹⁹

The UAE tribal society was formulated as a result of the interaction of a variety of elements, including the geographical dimensions of the country and its social systems which generated a construct of social life rooted in inherited customs and traditions. Due to the existence of a complex pattern of traditional morality triggered by religious ethics based on solidarity and interconnectedness, the tribal Emirati society remained coherent and homogenous for centuries. The previous elements played a pivotal role in the construction of the Emirati identity and consolidated the mutual relations of respect and commitment between the UAE people and the tribal system governing them.²⁰

The Emirati tribes are divided into two main groups. The first category includes the inland tribes living in the desert cultivating the fertile lands of the oases and raising cattle. The second category comprises the tribes living in the coastal areas who depend on fishing and diving activities. These tribes were also engaged in maritime business and the pearls trade.²¹ The ancient and well-established tribes in the UAE include Bani Yas and Al Qawasim and both of them have key allies, such as Al Manaseer, Al Awamer, Al Sharqiyyeen, Al Na'im and Al Ali. Historically, all of these tribes played significant roles in the region. In the UAE, big tribes are divided into clans which are subsequently subdivided into branches.²² Each clan or branch lives independently in a particular location and has autonomous authority over domestic economic activities. The tribal system in the UAE is not predominated by a central totalitarian apparatus, but each clan or branch operates independently in its own premises. In times of danger and emergency all the branches and clans

inside the central tribe are summoned to deal with any potential contingency.²³

A patriarchal tribal system prevailed throughout the UAE in general whereas the local population descended from Semitic origins. These tribes are also linked by bonds of kinship, lineage and blood, and all of them descend from the same genealogical roots. It is possible for the members of the UAE tribes to trace back their genealogy to five generations or more.²⁴ In a related context, it is known that extended families constituted the core of the tribal system in the UAE. The UAE society is characterized by its peculiar culture which distinguishes it from other neighboring communities. Nevertheless, the UAE society shares common and joint cultural norms with surrounding nations. Geographically, the UAE is split into three regions with different environmental variations: Desert and agricultural areas in addition to the coastal / urban region. The location of the UAE on the Arabian Gulf Coast made the population dependent on the sea as the main source of livelihood. In the waters of the Arabian Gulf, the Emiratis have searched for pearls and took up the fishing profession as a career.²⁵ Throughout the UAE, the tribal system was more predominant in the desert, where the tribe represented the pivot of the social structure underpinning different traditional modes of production either in the inland regions or on the coast. Moreover, **the traditional tribal system was characterized by the prevalence of different forms of solidarity among the tribes which could be summarized as follows:**

Social Solidarity: This refers to the solidarity and cooperation of the people of a given tribe regarding the social obligations that unite them both in good times or bad.. Therefore, extended families are characterized by strong links and solid blood ties which in turn reflect the strength of the relationships among the clans and the

branches affiliated with the tribe. This tribal spirit of solidarity leads to solidarity and social convergence and reinforces communication among the different tribal components. It simultaneously provides a sense of mutual appreciation of the roles of the individual and the tribe. The same spirit of solidarity enhances the values of tolerance and altruism among the tribal community.

In the traditional tribal system, the individual seeks to serve others. This kind of social service is reflected on his social status to a great extent. The more the individual is capable of serving his family and his clan, the more respect and appreciation he gains from the surrounding society. In this regard, the tribal chieftain should be taken as an ideal example to be emulated. Therefore, the tribal Sheikh works very hard to manage the affairs of his tribe and seeks to support social solidarity and communication among its members using different dynamics, including encouraging them and assigning them key tasks to enhance their social status in the tribe.

Social control is also utilized as an effective monitoring mechanism integral to the process of social solidarity implementation. Social control is determined by applying the principle of accountability followed by guidance to ensure the commitment of the individuals to their duties and rights. This process inevitably contributes to the strengthening of their social status, and achieving the status of the family, the clan, and the tribe respectively. The Majlis / council of the tribal chief where he exchanges opinions with the elders and the tribal leaders represents a model for the exercise of the Shura / consultation principle. The Majlis is also a venue for taking decisive decisions regarding many domestic issues and family conflicts. On this ground the Majlis of the tribal chief participates in the implementation of social stability and security in the domains of the tribe.

Economic Solidarity: In the UAE traditional tribal system, the division of labor is considered an important aspect of economic solidarity; because the role played by the individual aims to promote the interests of the tribal community. The individual in the tribal society participates in collective team work such as like groups working in fishing and grazing, and harvesting agricultural crops. Hence, economic solidarity is fulfilled through individual work in the context of the group. This policy also unifies the mutual interests of the individual and the tribe. **Tribal economic solidarity is marked by a number of characteristics which could be summarized as follows:**

- **Economic Balance:** The economic solidarity in the framework of the tribe strikes some kind of equilibrium between the sources of wealth and methods of exploitation. In other words, it attempts to establish a balance between production and consumption.
- **Economic Overlapping:** Economic solidarity in the tribal society is an integral part of people's life in all its aspects; it is an integrated mechanism with a straightforward correlation between the economic system and other systems of life in the community.
- **Self-Censorship:** Economic solidarity in the tribal society is characterized by self-censorship by individuals. In this system, there are no official supervisory bodies or institutions to monitor related activities. Transparency emanates from human conscience and the hearts of individuals. It is manifested in concrete social acts and reflected in the cohesion and linkage

of the individuals. It is crystallized in their determination to adhere to the standards and ethics defined by Islamic values which stipulate fairness, justice and honesty in economic transactions.

Additionally, economic solidarity distinguishes between individual property and collective property. However, economic solidarity in tribal societies considers both individual and collective properties as instruments to serve public interests. This process emphasizes the social status of property in the tribal society partly based on pastoral economy. The tribal chieftain plays a prominent role here including the economic management of the affairs of the tribe. He is also responsible for the protection of the traditional economic rights of the tribe, especially in the event of any disputes or conflicts over grazing areas and water resources.

Political Solidarity: Political solidarity within the tribal context includes the responsibility for providing security and protection to all the members of the tribe. It is exemplified in the form of alliances between various clans in the same tribe, and the unification of tribal decisions at times of peace and conflict with other tribes. Political solidarity is also highlighted by instilling the values of courage, strength and loyalty to the tribe throughout the process of socialization tackled by the extended family. The act of socialization primarily aims to support the spirit of political solidarity, and makes the tribe a formidable force able to defend its members. In this sense the tribe fulfills its role as a caregiver to and protector of its members.

Within the traditional tribal system, the chief of the tribe is the military leader who takes fatal and existential decisions during war and peace, bearing the consequences of these decisions alone. As the military commander of the tribe in situations of conflict and war, he is responsible for providing protection to the tribal members. The

tribal chief is also authorized to make reconciliation with other rival tribes if he sees the need for it. In general, he is responsible for promoting the interests of his tribe and maintaining its status and strength.

Communication and Social Cohesion System

On the basis of its social structure, the traditional Emirati society erected a system of communication and social cohesion deeply rooted in religion and social tradition exemplified in Islamic ethics and tribal conventions. Within these religious and social parameters the communication and social cohesion system manifested itself in the religious paradigm represented by the mosque and in the social paradigm epitomized by the tribal Majlis/council. The functions of the mosque and the roles of the Majlis could be summarized as follows:

- **Religious Functions:** This is the main function of the mosque in all traditional and modern Islamic societies. In the UAE, members of the society perform the five daily prayers in the mosque, according to the Islamic faith. The commitment to religious duties manifested by performing prayers in the mosque usually reflects the integrity of the worshipper and gives him credit among his peers. The young males in the UAE are accustomed at an early age to the habit of performing prayers in the mosque. This habit reflects the sublime religious values entrenched in society and cherished by the Emirati people. In addition, the mosque provides advice and guidance through the religious sermons delivered by the imams and preachers. These clerks provide feedback to young men who are interested in inquiring about religious matters and other related obligations in their daily lives.
- **Educational and Instructional Functions:** The education process in the past was confined to the ability to read, recite and memorize the Koran. People also

learn writing through studying the texts of the Koran. Mosques in traditional society played an important role in carrying out the educational process by the allocation of part of the mosques to teach the Koran. In the mosque, young people also learned reading, writing, and arithmetic lessons. This task is usually undertaken by the Imam of the mosque (*almutawe'* in the local dialect). Under some conditions, the education of pre-pubertal male and female children took place in the same location inside the mosque. This co-education dynamic, however, was not permissible if the students were in their early adulthood stage. In such a situation a female preacher (*almutawe'a*) became responsible for teaching the adult girls in an area in the mosque vicinity separated from the place in which the males received their education at the hands of the Imam. The cost of the educational process was very cheap. It only required a few copies of the Koran and some small wood panels used for writing. The young learners paid for their education every Thursday (*Youm alkhamis*; therefore it was called *alkhamissiyyah*). The cash or non-cash fare was paid to the Imam (*almutawe'*) in return for his services.

- **Communication Functions:** The mosque has always been considered as a communication arena and a meeting place for the members of the tribal community. After the performance of prayers local folks usually talk with each other about the conditions of family and friends and discuss religious and worldly issues. In such atmosphere, religious values such as gratitude and compassion are implanted in the collective conscience of the young people and eventually contribute to their upbringing and behavior. Throughout the mosque as a communication facility, these

ethical values are transmitted from generation to generation.

- **Political Functions:** These embody the role of the mosque as a symbol of sanctity, tolerance and Islamic eminence; therefore it becomes a place for reconciliation between adversaries, whether individuals, families or tribes, especially if the causes of rivalry require solutions based on religious grounds.
- **Other Functions:** The mosque performs other functions. For example it may be used as a temporary shelter for the passers-by where they are provided with food and drink until they find a house or residence. The Imam of the mosque is sometimes familiar with some prescriptions consisting of popular medicine and natural herbs. The community members may resort to the Imam to help them be cured from illness. The Imam's treatment sometimes involves reciting particular verses from the Koran in the presence of the patient coupled with other religious rituals (such as alroqya alshar'iyya).

The Majlis

is a place of sitting or gathering and an assembly venue used in the context of a council: As one of the cornerstones of governance in the UAE and the most important communication and social cohesion system, the Majlis / the council performs a vital role in the social life of the traditional Emirati society. On the other hand, it contributes to the promotion of social control mechanisms aiming to monitor the behavior of the members of the society. Historically, the Majlis has gained an important position in the traditional society of the UAE because of the multiple functions it performed on regular basis. In essence, the Majlis is a place annexed to the house and dedicated to the reception of male guests and visitors. The council / Majlis has been established in all destinations of the traditional Emirati society including the coastal communities

whose inhabitants live on the sea and trade resources. It also once existed in the farming communities and the oases in addition to the desert. The Majlis vicinity is usually built of palm trunks and fronds or mud in the coastal and farming communities. In the desert regions, the Majlis is convened in the winter season in tents made of the wool of sheep or camels and in summer it is held in the open air. There are three main kinds of Majalis (plural of Majlis) **which have played different roles in the Emirati society as follows:**²⁶

1. The Majlis of the Sheikhs/the Council of the Sheikhs: The venues of these councils are typically affixed to the place of residence owned by the ruling chieftain. In each Majlis there is a place for a kitchenette for the preparation of coffee. The council of the tribal sheikhs is bigger in terms of size because it receives substantial numbers of people affiliated with the tribe. All the members of the tribe are supposed to meet with the ruler or the chief during the regular meetings held in the Majlis. These meetings entail a mechanism for mutual discussions and consultations regarding individual and collective issues. They also provide a venue for the members of the tribe to consolidate their connections with the sheikh of the tribe. The Majlis also functions as a congress in which major decisions are taken to tackle social, economic and political issues. In the Majlis, the elders and the tribal sheikhs periodically meet for consultation purposes concerning working out strategies aiming to settle tribal conflicts in addition to policies integral to tribal alliances. **The functions attributed to the Majlis of the Sheikhs could be summarized as follows:**

- Providing a forum for consultation / *shura* regarding issues of governance.
- Unifying efforts and taking decisions regarding tribal alliances.
- Settling the conflicts erupting between the clans and the tribes.
- Providing consultations and suggesting solutions regarding individual issues.
- Strengthening the relationship between the ruler and the tribal community.
- Engaging the senior and wise men of the tribe in the decision-making process and issuing legal and just decisions based on the principles of arbitration which comply with tribal and Islamic conventions.

2. The Majlis of Traders and Notables: These Majalis/councils are gathering places annexed to the houses of the rich traders and notables located in coastal communities where economic activities depend on trading, diving and fishing. Ship-owning traders working in the pearls business are keen on constructing this kind of Majalis which serve as reception venues for guests and merchants. **The functions of the traders and notables Majlis could be summed up as follows:**

- Providing a platform for traders to meet and hold commercial deals.
- Exchanging news and information associated with economic matters.
- Discussing the professional and operational problems encountering divers during the pearl-searching operations.
- Providing entertainment activities such as popular narratives and folklore / nabati poetry recited by tribal poets.
- Consolidating social ties and relations among the tribal community.
- Activating social solidarity mechanisms and communication systems.

3. The Majlis of the Common Folks: These Majalis / councils constitute an integral part of the Emirati society whether in the herding communities of the desert or the farming communities located in the oases or the sea-side communities in the coastal regions. The gathering places of these councils are relatively smaller in size compared with other kinds of Majalis. Initially, the common folks Majlis is an assembly / reception locale constructed by families to meet with their guests. This Majlis plays a vital role in the socialization process within the boundaries of the extended family. It functions as an acculturation dynamic and a forum for transmitting knowledge from the tribal elders to the young generation. In other words the Majlis of the Common Folks operates as a mediator and catalyst bridging the cultural gap between different generations. It also functions as a mechanism for maintaining social control by monitoring the behavior of the younger generation. In this Majlis the young generation is familiarized with inherited traditions, good manners and ethical values based on respect and obedience. **The major functions contributed by the common-folk Majlis are as follows:**

- Promoting the traditions of respect, appreciation, cooperation, modesty and tolerance.
- Familiarizing the younger generations with the ethical bases of good manners.
- Providing a consultation forum for the members of extended families.
- Serving as an entertainment venue where pastime activities are practiced such as poetic readings and story-telling.

- Serving as an educational forum for acquainting younger generations with popular folklore and inherited proverbs and aphorisms.

The Social Solidarity System

This system is integrated into the core of the social structure in traditional society. The social solidarity system also stems from inherited conventions deeply rooted in Islam and prophetic traditions – the sayings / Hadiths of prophet Mohamed (PBUH). Abu Musa, one of the Hadith narrators, reported that the prophet said that “**the believer to the believer is like a building whose different parts support each other.**” Furthermore, the social solidarity system is also concerned with economic and moral dimensions besides the social paradigm.²⁷

The format and pattern of values promoted by this system is embraced by the majority of the Emirati population. Therefore, manifestations of solidarity and social synergy are reflected on the solid relations and ties uniting the members of the UAE community. According to the Emirati social solidarity system, the aid provided to the people is not a charity but it is their right. Donating aid should not deviate from the framework of established Islamic ethics taking into account the pride, dignity and privacy of the under-privileged sectors of society. **The most essential aspects of social solidarity in the UAE society could be demonstrated as follows:**

Alms and Zakat

Zakat is one of the five pillars of Islam, mandatory for all Muslims. In other words, it is a form of obligatory alms-giving and religious tax in Islam. Zakat constitutes the right of the needy and the poor amidst the wealth of the rich in Islamic communities; the person who is not committed to pay his share is not

a true Muslim. The Koran has classified the categories of people who deserve Zakat and the mechanism of payment in addition to the amount of Zakat, which is measured in the light of the total value of personal properties involving gold, silver, cash, livestock and lands, among other things. Despite the difficult living conditions and the lack of sufficient financial resources in the traditional Emirati society, the Emirati people were committed to the payment of their Zakat. In this context, the payment of Zakat contributed to the sustainability of the community and support its social structure. Likewise, the members of the community were also committed to donate to charity according to the teachings of the Islamic Sharia laws. Members of the society were keen on donating charity in a strictly confidential manner in order to be rewarded. In Islam, charity-givers are highly rewarded only if their donations are done in secrecy. Charity is provided in different forms including cash, food and clothes. Apparently the tradition of Zakat payment have contributed in the creation of social convergence and cohesion among the people of traditional societies.

Alshofa

This is a local Emirati term used to describe an aid-providing dynamic functioning in times of emergency and in particularly contingent conditions. In the social paradigm, Alshofa, which is categorized under the social solidarity umbrella, personifies the strong relationship between the ruler and his subjects. According to this system, all the members of the traditional society are responsible for providing all kinds of support and assistance to their ruler in several social and religious occasions and in times of crises, conflicts and wars in order to help him transcend any hurdles confronting him or his community.

Alsharha

This is a social solidarity mechanism contributing to the enhancement of the relationship between the ruler and his subjects. According to this system the ruler of the traditional society provides annual aid to the members of his community, whether in cash or in other forms. As a social solidarity system consolidating the ties between the ruler and his people, Alshofa has existed in the Emirati society for many years even after the establishment of the UAE Union. The UAE community is proud of this system, which promoted sublime values and strengthened the relations between the ruling Sheikh and the members of his community.

Alfaz'a

The tribe, the clan and the extended family are committed to providing moral and/or material assistance to some individuals or groups affiliated with them in times of need. This assistance is called Alfaz'a in local Emirati dialect and it is provided in times of adversity and prosperity. Alfaz'a may take the form of a political act when a certain tribe or clan was subject to surprise attack by other parties. In this event, allied tribes or neighboring clans or any other groups which have good ties with the tribe under attack rise for rescue. In most cases Alfaz'a takes a social form in the event of the death of the head of household or when an individual is subject to a fatal disease or unable to work, or in cases of marriage and building a shelter for the family. Alfaz'a is also conflated with providing assistance to community members in the event of a natural disaster or social distress. In general, the societal members constituting the extended family and the tribe are usually committed to providing material

or moral assistance to the vulnerable within the framework of coordinated cooperation and solidarity values underpinning the basis of Alfaz'a system. In this scenario, Alfaz'a as an aid mechanism strengthens the social relations among members of the society and promotes social cohesion.

Alejara or Aldakhla

This is another social solidarity system meant to provide protection and safety for individuals and tribal groups in cases of exposure to the circumstances of disputes or hostility or animosity or litigation or prosecution for any reason. In the absence of the capacity of individuals or the community to provide protection and security for themselves, they resort to the ruling or tribal sheikh or any notable figure in the society. In this case, the ruling Sheikh or the important person who is committed to providing security and protection for vulnerable individuals or groups does not allow any other parties to stain their reputation or expose them to harm. In case the vulnerable section of the populace is not protected, they seek help from another ruler or Sheikh. Eventually, the reputation of the top-ranking person who fails to provide protection for the vulnerable is stigmatized to some extent. Obviously, this system reflects the strength of the ties and the social connections between the individuals and their tribes.

Blood Money

This is the money paid to the family of a person who is killed by mistake or money paid as compensation for an assault on property. Blood money is one of the social solidarity systems derived from Islamic law and mentioned in the holy Koran. This system is an incarnation of the interdependence and social

solidarity in the traditional society where the members of the tribe collectively participate in collecting the blood money required from one of their kin as compensation for manslaughter or assault against individuals or property. The value of the blood money is determined in accordance with the norms and laws generally accepted between tribes. The participation in the payment of the blood money is an expression of social support social which brings about cohesion among family members, extended families, and tribes. It also contributes to the establishment of the principle of justice according to the laws and legislations derived from Islamic sharia and the corresponding jurisdictions. The blood money system still exists in the UAE and is organized by the current laws set by the state which are based on Islamic legislations.

The Transformation of Social Systems

The transformation of the UAE from a traditional to modern society took place in accordance with simultaneous and gradual evolutions shaping the political and economic spheres, coupled with subsequent transformations in the basic component of the social system structures. In this regard, acknowledgment is due to the significant role played by the founder of the Union and the builder of the state, the late Sheikh Zayed Bin Sultan Al Nahyan in addition to their Highnesses, rulers of the Emirates, who paid extensive efforts in the nation-building process. Due to their wisdom and rule of justice they were able to lead the tribal Sheikhs and make them partners in the building of a unified federal state. The socio-political and economic unity which followed the establishment of the federation has contributed to its success. Eventually, the UAE federation grew in popular demand before it was metamorphosed into political reality.

The social systems in the UAE have passed through many stages and underwent several changes and adjustments as follows:

Transformations in the Tribal System

In consequence of the enormous economic and social transformations, many of the functions and roles of the tribe faded away. For example, the tribe did not have any economic functions anymore. Instead, state institutions, such as the Ministry of Economy and the Ministry of Social Affairs, replaced the tribe and became responsible for tackling major economic tasks. Additionally, other government departments concentrated on diversifying the economic production sectors and creating appropriate employment opportunities for the Emirati citizens. The UAE government introduced vital strategies, sophisticated programs, and effective mechanisms in order to make the citizens partners in economic development. This process placed the UAE on the map of the world economy where the country occupies a leading position among civilized nations. Due to the high level of accomplishment economically, different development sectors of the UAE achieved a breakthrough in economic growth.

The role of the tribe with regard to the issue of social solidarity underwent radical transformations. The tribe is not authorized any more to play these social roles. The country's leadership brought the tribal people together in one community, and provided them with a social environment that contributed to the preservation of their customs, culture and heritage. Similarly, the tribe is not responsible for maintaining social stability and implementing the principle of justice. The state has created the Ministry of Interior, the courts, and developed domestic judicial institutions. Moreover, the function of the tribe in the political sphere also faded away. The government has established the Ministry of Defense and the Ministry of Interior and entrusted these

two institutions with the responsibility of ensuring the protection of the territory of the UAE and the security of the inhabitants. Since the foundation of the UAE federation, and due to their commitment to participate in the service of their homeland, a large number of people from different tribal communities have applied for jobs in the Ministry of Defense and the Ministry of Interior.

The most important aspects of change that came over the tribal system could be summarized as follows:

- **The integration and merging of the members of the tribes** in the society as citizens constituting an integrated community in harmony with the requirements of the political and economic upheavals. In other words, the tribal communities are assimilated into the mainstream culture as an integral part of a new social structure compatible with the modern social, economic and political transformations. The functions of the tribe in the pre-oil era are assigned to government institutions and civil society organizations which help the tribal communities to be effective players in society and participate in achieving the objectives and requirements of development according to the visions, strategies, programs and action plans advocated by the government.
- **The process of social, economic and political solidarity with the tribal system resulted in the redistribution of functions and tasks traditionally allocated to the tribes.** These tasks and functions are assigned to governmental economic and political institutions. Furthermore, new legislations are enacted to ensure the empowerment of the tribal community members and secure their needs. New laws and regulations are also issued to support their participation in economic activities, and provide protection and security to them.

- Prioritizing affiliation and belonging to the country rather than the tribe occurred and integrating all tribal people in society as equal citizens also transpired. Consequently, the tribe became no more than a referential symbol of traditions and relationships. Engaging the tribal communities in productive participation in activities aiming to serve the nation. After more than four decades since the founding of the UAE federation, the Emirati citizens are still committed to solidarity and social cohesion. Such spirit of solidarity is inspired by an inherited moral pattern that has been prevailing among their ancestors in the tribal system for centuries. This inherited moral pattern includes sublime values and ethical norms deeply entrenched in Islamic traditions and legislations. These Islamic ethics which underpinned the UAE social structure in the past empowered the Emirati people and enabled them to survive with pride among other Arab communities, and provided them the will and power to defend their land against invaders and the greedy.

Alterations in the Family System

The shift of the UAE society from a traditional tribal system to a modern federal state with well-established institutions led to **the creation of several alterations in the family system as follows:**

Changes in the Structural Characteristics of the Family: The traditional society is marked by the existence of the extended family, which includes more than one generation and is characterized by the presence of the grandparents, the parents and the grandchildren who live in one place. The family structure changed in the aftermath of the political, economic and social transformations took place across the UAE society. Consequently, the extended family gradually disappeared and was replaced

by the nuclear family, including the parents and their children only. The emergence of the nuclear family in the modern UAE society does not lead to the isolation of the married couples from their own families. Instead, the nuclear family represented by the married couples (and their children) maintain regular communication and exchanges of visits with their parents and relatives on numerous occasions. Until the present time, many families prefer to build new houses for their newly married sons and daughters and attach them to the residence of the family in order to foster and maintain relationships between parents and their children.

Changes in the Family Relations: The social relations that bind the individual to his family play an influential role in the development of his spiritual and moral condition.²⁸ The changes in the family system triggered a new pattern of relationships and communication among the family members. In some cases, personal happiness becomes a desired value and the family consequently loses its integrity, particularly when some individuals insist on disengaging themselves from the membership of the family.²⁹ Under these circumstances, the young family members, both male and female, are able to express their opinions and participate in taking decisions regarding their education, work and marriage. There is no doubt that the number of extended families is very limited in the modern UAE society and most of the married couples are interested in living in independent houses. Unlike the extended family, the nuclear family is affiliated with an increasing divorce rate. Regardless of the enormous changes in the family, the relations between the nuclear family and the families of the married couples are still characterized by harmony and interdependence. Therefore, the communication between both sides is achieved in a way different from the traditional methods used in the past due to the existence of new

technologies such as mobile phones and other venues of communications. Since most of the nuclear families live far-away from their families of origin due to education or work circumstances, communication between the two parties is fulfilled mostly via modern methods rather than direct visits. However, the nuclear family members keep communication with their parents and relatives as part of their commitment to the inherited values of the UAE community, which esteems the honoring of one's parents. Due to such sublime traditions based on kindness and compassion which are entrenched in the UAE culture, the majority of senior people live with the families of their sons and daughters.

The Change of the Status of Women: The different changes in the family include the transformation of the status of women and the diversity of their role. Great opportunities have been made available for women who have been given access to all fields of education and work like men. In terms of education, the new UAE women no longer accept less than a university degree. Thanks to the vision of wise leadership, the government provided plans and strategies for women to join all areas of economic activities in addition to other fields such as aviation, industry, medicine, education, police and the security sector. The accessibility of education and employment opportunities for women resulted in major changes in their role and status. Their empowered positions made them partners with men in the construction of the family and the performance of its functions. This partnership brought about a new family culture based on collective participation involving all the family members in the decision-making process and in taking responsibility for the family affairs. Apart from all these changes in the role and status of the head of household, wife and children, the Emirati family still cherishes the inherited values that the family was

based on such as cooperation, respect and tolerance.

Alterations in the Functional Characteristics of the Family

The family system in modern UAE society witnessed several changes in the functions of the family. **The most important aspects of these functional changes could be summarized as follows:**

The Reproductive Function of the Family

Reproduction is the most important function of the family. This function has undergone some changes in most societies in terms of determining the number of children in the family. The number of children begotten in the family is subject to a variety of economic and social factors, including the responsibilities affiliated with the process of upbringing and education in addition to women's insistence on joining the work force and their reluctance to stay at home. The rate of reproduction and the number of children begotten in the modern Emirati family have decreased because most families have advocated family planning strategies, resulting in the begetting of a limited number of children. According to the UN report "The World's Women 2010," the fertility rate of Emirati women is the lowest rate in the Gulf region. The fertility rate has dropped by more than half during the past thirty years. During the five years between 1980 and 1985, it fell from 5.2 to 2.3 per woman.³⁰ According to a report issued by the Health Authority in Dubai, the UAE women's fertility rate is still low. There are no significantly higher changes in the fertility rate in 2011 and 2012. It is almost the same in both years. The report pointed out that the latest statistics showed that the fertility rate for UAE women in the age group of 15 to 49 years dropped to 2.3 children while the fertility rate fell to 1.8 per each non-Emirati woman in the same age group. Previously, the Health Authority in Dubai issued a report in 2012

which revealed that the fertility rate for Emirati women was 5.7 children, but it fell in 2011 to 2.3 children per each Emirati woman.³¹ In 2013, the UAE women's fertility rate dropped to 1.8 child for each woman.³² The policy of family planning and birth control which results in the procreation of a limited number of children may not be a positive sign in a community seeking to increase its local population. Therefore, the UAE government has encouraged procreation within a social policy which provides incentives for Emirati men who marry Emirati women. Generous financial support is provided by the Marriage Fund Foundation to facilitate and accelerate domestic marriages. Moreover, free allocation of a premium for newly born children within each family is added to the monthly salary of the husband in order to help him support his growing family.

The Function of Socialization

The socialization process aims to acquaint the individuals with the moral values and beliefs in addition to the objectives of the community in which they live. However, in modern societies, the family is not the only institution responsible for the process of socialization. Instead, there are a number of social, educational and media institutions which actively participate in the constructing, refining and molding of individual personalities. Other social groups engaged in mutual relations with the individual also participate in the socialization process including the peers and the surrounding local community.³³ The Emirati family works hand-in-hand with the government to help its individuals become better citizens. The family makes full use of the work opportunities available for its members. The family also utilizes the sophisticated level of care services provided by the government in the areas of housing, education, and health in order to prepare a generation armed with science and knowledge and

equipped with inherited values and sublime ethics. **The most important features of change in the function of socialization could be summarized as follows:**

- **Relying on Domestic Workers in the Education of Emirati Children:** This shift jeopardizes the essence of the UAE family and has a negative impact on the construction of the identity of Emirati children. The exposure of children to alien languages, foreign concepts, and patterns of behavior which may not be compatible with the local values of the UAE family lead to unfavorable consequences.
- **Marriage to non-Emirati Women:** The social transformations that hit the UAE family were mostly triggered by the openness of the UAE to the world and the influx of a large expatriate population to work and take up residence in the country. These social changes included the opportunities provided by society with regard to the emancipation in marriage issues which allowed a number of Emiratis to marry foreign women. Thus, the social and cultural fabric of UAE families underwent major changes. The children of foreign wives found themselves in many cases divided between two different cultures and two affiliations. They have advocated, in some cases, values, concepts and patterns of behaviors that may be closer to the foreign culture integral to their mother's original community rather than to the traditions of the Emirati father.
- **The Use of Technology in Family Communication:** The relations among the members of the modern Emirati family are affected by the use of smart technological applications and techniques particularly in the field of social media. Social networking applications have created a kind of isolation

among family members, and made it possible for the a global culture to penetrate bringing positive and negative information from the Internet. Therefore, it is crucial to improve the skills of the parents regarding the use of modern technologies in order to impose control on their children who are exposed to the Internet sites and the social networking applications. This process will help the parents protect children and keep their national culture and identity intact. However, this process requires adequate time on the part of the parents to be given to their children. Parents should not ignore their essential role in the care, control and guidance of their children. This role should not be overshadowed by any other commitments to household tasks or work responsibilities. Leaving children to be exposed to the internet without control leads to psychological risks and may hinder their educational achievements. It will also undermine their inherited values and domestic traditions.

- **Family Stability:** Many families in the UAE community have been affected by the current developments, which left their imprints on the function of socialization that in its turn was influenced by factors threatening family stability. For example, divorce cases have increased among male and female citizens according to the study of the Marriage Fund, from 1622 cases in 2006 to 1807 in 2011, with an increase of 11.4 % in the period of study.³⁴ Moreover, the process of socialization was negatively affected due to the absence of one of the parents as a result of divorce, which does not allow children to get a balanced social upbringing. Cases of divorce were also found in the traditional UAE society but they were few, and the presence of children among extended family members

compensated, in part, for the absence of their divorced parents.

The Economic Function

After the transformation of the UAE from a traditional tribal society to a federal State with various institutions, the family is no longer entitled to perform the same economic function which was carried out in the past. **The changes of the economic function of the family could be summarized as follows:**³⁵

- **Family Economy was replaced by societal economy** and consequently the state institutions with all sectors accommodate the family members, providing them with work opportunities. All the family members participate in the economic development process. This participation resulted in the economic independence of the family members, including women.
- **The educational institutions provided vocational training to the children of the UAE families** in order to enable them to play an effective role in all spheres of economic activity, while the extended family was responsible for preparing the children for professions such as agriculture, hunting, grazing and diving.
- **The decline of traditional occupations** such as grazing, fishing and diving as well as traditional crafts such as the spinning industry and leather tanning industries dependent on palm trees.
- **The dependence of the family on the State in terms of living.** The State has ensured for individuals secure housing, education and health care. The State also provided social security for vulnerable categories of the population such as orphans, widows, and the elderly.

- **The family's reliance on domestic labor** in the performance of the affairs of the house, such as preparing food and cleaning, has contributed to the dependency of the UAE children on foreign labor to secure their household needs. Subsequently, they do not master the basic skills required for keeping a family. Within this system, the Emirati girls in particular are not acquainted with the household skills integral to their future lives as mothers and wives.
- **The family's reliance on modern technology** to carry out house-work is the most important positive shift in this respect. The use of technological applications in the household reduced the time and effort required, and made it possible for individuals in the family to perform other duties.

Changes in Marriage Patterns

Significant changes in the UAE marital characteristics prevalent in the UAE traditional society were **subjected to significant changes as follows below:**

- **Delaying the age of marriage compared to the past** for both males and females. This change hit all Arab and Gulf societies.
- **The emergence of the phenomenon of marriage from non-Emiratis** both males and females. According to a study performed by the UAE Marriage Fund,³⁶ there was an increasing tendency of the UAE males to marry non-Emirati women throughout the country. The number of marriage contracts between UAE males and non-Emirati females was 1488 in 2006 and the number was raised to 1850 in 2011, with an increasing rate of 24.3% estimated at the time of the study and an annual average rate of 4.7%. Further the number of marriage contracts between Emirati women and non-Emirati males witnessed a rise from 650 to 824

contracts all over the country with an increasing rate of 26.8% estimated at the time of the study and an annual average rate of 5.1%. This rate, however, varies from Emirate to Emirate.³⁷

The marriage of the UAE males to non-Emirati women has contributed to delaying the marriage age of the UAE women, reducing their chances of marriage from local citizens. The lack of marriage opportunities on the part of Emirati women drove some of them to marry non-Emiratis. **The factors that contributed to the marriage of UAE citizens to non-Emirati women include the following:**

- The high cost of marriage in the UAE.
- Cultural openness and growing involvement in expatriate cultures.
- The change in youth attitudes toward marriage and social responsibility.
- The availability of greater freedom for young people in the issue of choice in marriage.
- Endogamy, which once held a great status in the traditional society, is no longer the preferred pattern of marriage. Males and females are not obliged anymore to accept endogamy as the only available form of marriage, and they were given more freedom in terms of selecting their partners.

Changes in the System of Social Solidarity

The social solidarity system participated in sustaining the social structure of the traditional society by contributing to the construction of a sort of balance among the members of the tribal community, resulting in the securing of population needs in the light of the prevailing living conditions and the limited economic resources available at that time. The modern system of social solidarity is currently represented

by the roles played by social welfare institutions. However, some traditional social solidarity systems still exist, such as the Zakat and charity organizations financed by donations from individuals who comply with the duties of citizens in the Muslim UAE community as stipulated in the teachings of Islamic Sharia. As for Alcoa and Aldakhla systems, they have faded away because of the positive and growing role of the governmental institutions which secure social assistance for all members of the society and provide them with means for a decent life in order to raise their level of welfare and preserve their dignity. The government institutions also ensure that all the needs of the citizens are fulfilled; they also provide security and protection for all Emiratis. In a connected context, Alfaz'a system continued to exist but on a very limited scale.

Changes in the Social Communication System

The latest shift from the tribal community to modern society led to a number of changes in the social systems. The social communication system went through some alterations which were not so drastic compared with other areas of social mobility. The communication tools inherited from the traditional society still play a role, although this role has gradually diminished to a great extent. For example, [the mosque](#) retains its distinctive position as a place of worship where people perform their prayers and listen to the Friday sermons. Until the present day, each mosque includes a center for teaching the Koran which is usually attached to the mosque premises. Nevertheless, the educational process is carried out by the official educational institutions, which provide young people with all types of scientific information and literary knowledge. For years, the government has built mosques in all regions and neighborhoods according to the latest architectural designs. As for the traditional councils (Majalis),

they have lost some of their basic educational and economic functions. Regardless of the dramatic changes in the functions of Majalis, they still constitute the focus of the leadership and the citizens. In fact, the traditional functions of the councils (Majalis) have been taken over by a number of government agencies and establishments, such as the Ministry of Economy, chambers of commerce and other educational and information institutions.

The councils (Majalis) of the rulers and the elders still have a great importance, even at the present time, as the meeting place which combine the country leadership with their subjects.

These councils (Majalis) formulate a perfect picture for a balanced relationship between the leadership and the UAE citizens. In these councils, the leaders of the nation give priority to the complaints raised by the people, do their best to solve their problems and meet their requirements. Finally, these councils operate in accordance with the open-door policy as a model of private models of democracy, particularly regarding the leadership's treatment of the issues and the demands of the citizens. These councils promote communication between the citizens and their leaders which results in the achievement of the principles of good governance that contribute to the dissemination of justice and strengthening the spirit of loyalty and deepening the sense of belonging to the homeland.

Notes

- ^{1.} Qiyadi Mohamed Ismail. (1989). *The Foundations of Social Structure*. Alexandria: Manshat Almaaref. p.78.
- ^{2.} Hussain Abdul-Hamid Rashwan. (1993). *The Development of Social Systems and their Impact on Individuals and Society*. Alexandria: AlMaktab AlJameie. P.49-50.
- ^{3.} Ibid. p. 49.
- ^{4.} Ibid. p. 49-50.
- ^{5.} Abbas Ahmed and Maitha AlShamsi. (1997). Social Systems. In *Emirati Studies*. Alain: UAE University. p.91.
- ^{6.} See Mohamed Nabil Jamee. (2010). *Family Sociology*. Alexandria: Dar AlJamea AlJadida. p.68-70. Alia Shukri. (1982). *Contemporary Trends in Family Studies*. Alexandria: Dar Almarefa Aljameiyya. P.103. Abdul-Aati Alsayed. (1997). *Studies on Family Sociology*. Alexandria: Dar Almarefa Aljameiyya.p.9.
- ^{7.} Abbas Ahmed and Maitha AlShamsi. (1997), P. 92.
- ^{8.} Ibid. p. 92-93.
- ^{9.} Ibid. p. 92.
- ^{10.} Hussain Abdul-Hamid Rashwan. (1993). P.81.
- ^{11.} Rashad Ghoneim, et al. (2008). *Studies on Family Sociology*. Alexandria. P.24-25. Mohamed Yusri Ibrahim Deebees. (1997). *Family Education and Social Development*. Cairo. P 59-60.
- ^{12.} Hadith. Prophetic traditions.
- ^{13.} Ahmed Jamil Hammoudi. Arab Family and Socialization. (22-6-2008). See: www.ahewar.org/debatlshow-art.asp.
- ^{14.} Ibid.
- ^{15.} Ministry of Labor and Social Affairs in the GGC Countries. Socialization between The Impact of Modern Media and the Role of the Family. *Labor and Social Studies Series(5)*. Riyadh:1995. P.53.
- ^{16.} Mohame Abu-Elainayn. (1998). Social and Economic Transformations in the UAE and their Impact on the Family. *The Association of Sociologists*. p. 147.
- ^{17.} Fawzi Ramadan AlArabi and Farouq Moustafa. (1985). *Social Structure*. Alexandria: Dar Almarefa Aljameiyya. P. 142.
- ^{18.} Abbas Ahmed and Maitha Al Shamsi. (1997). P.97.
- ^{19.} Ibid. p.97. Also see: Maan Alomor. (2000). *The Emirati Society and Gigantic Impacts*. Alain: Dar AlKetab Aljamee. P.110.

- ²⁰ Emiratis Center for Strategic Studies and Research. H.H. Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan Al Nahyan: The Leader and the State. (2013). Abu-Dhabi. P. 27. Also see: Edward Henderson. (1988). *This Strange Eventful History: Memoirs of Earlier Days in the UAE and Oman*. London: p. 27,28,29,30.
- ²¹ Ibid. p. 32. Also see: Michèle Barrault, Translated by Terence Lehane & Anne Pargoud. (2001).The United Arab Emirates. France. p. 15.
- ²² Mohamed Suliaman Altayyeb. (2008). *The Tribes of the UAE*. Riyadh. P. 78.
- ²³ Shaker Moustafa Salim. (1983). Trans. *Introduction in Social Anthropology*. Baghdad: Ministry of Culture Publications, Dar AlHurriyya. P.415..
- ²⁴ Fawzi Ramadan AlArabi and Farouq Moustafa. (1985). P.155.
- ²⁵ Ibid. p. 151. Also see: Christopher M. Davidson. (2005). *The United Arab Emirates: A Study in Survival*. USA. p. 5,9,10
- ²⁶ Abbas Ahmed and Maitha Al Shamsi. (1997). P.212. Also see the following: -Peter Vine & Paula Casey. (1988). *Arab Gold: Heritage of the UAE*. London : p. 109; -Diana Darke, (1998). *Discovery guide to The United Arab Emirates*. London: p. 26,27,28,29,49,50.
- ²⁷ Mohamed Farouq AlNabhan. (2001). The Impact of Religious Values on Family Stability in Islamic Societies. In *The Crisis of Values and the Family Role in the Development of Contemporary Society*. The Moroccan Kingdom Academy. Rabat. P. 250.
- ²⁸ Ehsan Mohamed Alhasan. (1988). *Sociology: Analytic Study of Theories and Social Systems*. Ministry of Education and Scientific Research. P. 181.
- ²⁹ Fawzi Ramadan AlArabi and Farouq Moustafa. (1985). P.147.
- ³⁰ The UN Report: Women of the World-2010-2011.
- ³¹ Report issued by the Dubai Health Authority in September 2013.
- ³² Albayan on 15 November 2013: www.albayan.ae/across...use.
- ³³ Hussain Abdul-Hamid Rashwan. (1993). P.79.
- ³⁴ UAE Marriage Fund Foundation. Statistical Study of Marriage and Divorce in the UAE. (2006-2011). Abu-Dhabi. 2012.
- ³⁵ Abbas Ahmed and Maitha Al Shamsi. (1997). P.205.
- ³⁶ UAE Marriage Fund Foundation. Divorce in the UAE: Reasons, Effects and Solutions. Abu-Dhabi. 2005.
- ³⁷ UAE Marriage Fund Foundation. Statistical Study of Marriage and Divorce in the UAE. (2006-2011). Abu-Dhabi. 2012.

References

- Abu-Elainayn Mohamed. (1998). Social and Economic Transformations in the UAE and their Impact on the Family. The Association of Sociologists.
- Ahmed, Abbas and Maitha AlShamsi. (1997). Social Systems. In Emirati Studies. Alain: UAE University.
- AlArabi, Fawzi Ramadan and Farouq Moustafa. (1985). Social Structure. Alexandria: Dar Almarefa Aljameiyya.
- Alhasan, Ehsan Mohamed. (1988). Sociology: Analytic Study of Theories and Social Systems. Ministry of Education and Scientific Research.
- AlNabhan, Mohamed Farouq. (2001). The Impact of Religious Values on Family Stability in Islamic Societies. In The Crisis of Values and the Family Role in the Development of Contemporary Society. The Moroccan Kingdom Academy. Rabat.
- Alomor, Maan. (2000). The Emirati Society and Gigantic Impacts. Alain: Dar AlKetab Aljamee.
- Alsayed, Abdul-Aati. (1997). Studies on Family Sociology. Alexandria: Dar Almarefa Aljameiyya.
- Altayyeb, Mohamed Suliaman. (2008). The Tribes of the UAE. Riyadh.
- Davidson, Christopher M. (2005). The United Arab Emirates : A Study in Survival. USA.
- Deebes, Mohamed Yusri Ibrahim. (1997). Family Education and Social Development. Cairo.
- Darke, Diana, (1998). Discovery guide to The United Arab Emirates. London.
- Ghoneim, Rashad, et al. (2008). Studies on Family Sociology. Alexandria.
- Hammoudi, Ahmed Jamil. (2008). Arab Family and Socialization. www.ahewar.org/debatlshow-art.asp. 22June.
- Henderson, Edward. (1988). This Strange Eventful History : Memoirs of Earlier Days in the UAE and Oman. London.
- Ismail, Qiyadi Mohamed. (1989). The Foundations of Social Structure. Alexandria :Manshat Almaaref.
- Jamee, Mohamed Nabil. (2010). Family Sociology. Alexandria: Dar AlJamea AlJadida.
- Rashwan, Hussain Abdul-Hamid. (1993). The Development of Social Systems and their Impact on Individuals and Society. Alexandria: AlMaktab AlJameie.

- Salim, Shaker Moustafa. (1983). Trans. Introduction in Social Anthropology. Baghdad: Ministry of Culture Publications, Dar AlHurriyya.
- Shukri, Alia. (1982). Contemporary Trends in Family Studies. Alexandria: Dar Almarefa Aljameiyya.
- Vine, Peter and Paula Casey. (1988). Arab Gold : Heritage of the UAE. London.

Chapter Seven

Social Development in the UAE



Chapter Seven

Social Development in the UAE

Dr. Salama AlRohomi

Introduction

This chapter explores the manifestations of social development in the UAE. Within the context of this chapter, social development means social services that are offered to members of the community in order to provide them with basic physical and moral needs. Further, social development also involves the training of community members in order to empower them as part of their preparation for the productive work market. Therefore, an individual, within the parameters of this process, is considered as the means and target of social development at the same time. Subsequently, this chapter is divided into two parts. The first part provides a brief overview of the meaning of social development and related social services. The second part discusses the social development and social services in UAE contemporary society by addressing the following topics: social security, child care, care of elderly people, care of people with special needs, care of the New Muslims (People converted to Islam), women's empowerment, youth support, public welfare associations, productive families, volunteering, housing services, health security, and human development indicators in the UAE.

The Meaning of Social Development and Social Services

“Man is the end and the means of social development”

The message of development is directed to human beings in general, in the first place,

because it is based on the principle of the human right to have basic services and a decent as well as better life. While the regulatory foundation of development policy deals with its form, the social basis embraces its content and essence because human beings (that is, UAE citizens) are the means and targets of the development policy. The overall development process contains a social dimension centered on human beings (UAE citizens) as an absolute necessity called for by several reasons, including: the dynamic development of cultural and civilized systems in modern societies; the evolution of scientific and practical methods; the development of the concepts of economic and social functions, and the concentration of international organizations on the process of social development. Sociologists define “social development” as a series of planned operations, aimed at creating social changes, in order to satisfy specific needs and solve particular societal problems.¹

On the basis of this principle, human needs are given priority when mapping out the development policy and outlining its plans. Human beings who constitute the social basis of development are considered the most important factor determining the success or failure of the development process. Thereupon, they are given a high degree of attention and consideration.

The social basis of the development policy includes the identification of all matters related to human values, ideas, beliefs, knowledge and relationships integral to the construction of sound development policy-making. In a related scenario, the investment in health, education and housing is first and foremost an investment in human beings. For example, education provides the individual with information, experiences, skills, concepts, and values which make him/her capable of developing himself/herself as an individual and a human being with an integrated personality combining all mental,

spiritual, physical, emotional, social, moral, and aesthetic aspects. Likewise, the development of society is achieved through enhancing productive manpower within the economic, political, cultural, and social (short-term, medium-term or long-term) development plans. This is what we mean by human development which is initially the cause of the success or failure of any potential progress.²

The Concept of Social Development and Social Services

The development process indicates the practical efforts aiming at the investment and mobilization of various material resources and human potential to achieve the objectives of society. The process of development is defined as the planned efforts aiming at bringing a sequential series of social changes in order to enhance the welfare of members of the society and transfer the society as a whole to a better position.

This development process depends on controlling the size and quality of the available material and human resources and bringing them to their maximum advantage, in the shortest possible period, in order to achieve the desired social well-being of the majority of the members of the society, especially the neediest groups. There are those who look at the issue of development as a social consensus process seeking to satisfy the social needs of the individuals and developing their energies to the fullest possible extent. Nevertheless, the concept of development, according to the United Nations, involves growth and change happening together. Consequently, it is essential that quantitative and qualitative change should take place simultaneously in the social, cultural, economic and political spheres. We conclude from the foregoing argument that development depends on individuals who interact with each other and dedicate their efforts to improve the social conditions in their community.³

The concept of social development has been associated with social welfare which

aims to achieve the growth of human resources, in the sense that the focus in this context is on enhancing the human capital as the real basis for development. Therefore, the concept of development has focused on the services provided in several areas, including education, health, and housing in addition to the provision of services to the neediest groups in society, such as people with special needs, the elderly, and young people. Moreover, some scholars believe that social development is basically conflated with social change and aims to meet the social needs of individuals, particularly the neediest and most vulnerable groups in society.⁴

Social Development in the UAE Contemporary Society

Historically, the values, norms, customs, and traditions inherited by members of UAE society have replaced the legislation and laws issued by the UAE state after its foundation in order to streamline the lives of individuals, groups, and Emirati society as a whole. In UAE society prior to the foundation of the federal state, the paths of development and social welfare were determined by systems and frameworks approved by society. These systems stemmed from Arabic and Islamic traditions to which members of the UAE community owed allegiance and respect. For example, the “Social Solidarity” system advocated by the UAE population was utilized to serve them in all their affairs and relationships, and was founded on traditions derived from the teachings of the Islamic religion. Integral to the essence of the social solidarity system are the Zakat tradition, charity, altruism, wills, grants, endowments, hospitality, and feeding the hungry, in addition to inherited social practices, including “Alshofa” and “Alfazaa”. In UAE society in the past, “Al-Mutawa”— local clergy man— was committed to the religious education of boys and girls, without financial compensation from the

government, and without a mandate from any authority. The initiative was based on “Al-Mutawa” who used an area located at one of the corners of his house as a classroom to teach students how to read and recite the Koran. This place is called “AlKuttab”, and, in addition to being an isolated part of the house of Al-Mutawa, it is sometimes an extension of the neighborhood mosque.⁵

Casting an accurate insight into the reality of the UAE society in the period before the establishment of the Union, one discovers that several properties and values determined the course taken in the satisfaction of the basic needs of individuals on the social, economic or educational level. Explicitly, social development policies in all fields have relied on several key pillars, including personal connections, kinship, extended families, blood relations, socio-political alliances, taxes, social insurance, social solidarity, charity, Zakat, and other local traditions such as “Alshofa” and “Alfazaa”.⁶

Before the establishment of the Federal Union, the UAE was a tribal society consisting of clans connected by lineage relationships based on blood links and residential unity, whether in Deira (urban quarter or district), or the desert, or the village (in agricultural areas), or Alfreij (urban alley) in coastal cities. Marriage relationships were based upon descent lineage determined by local customs and traditions which governed the role of the individual on the levels of the tribe and society. “Alliance” was the second tribal basis upon which the movement of human growth and development was constructed. “Alliance” stipulated peace and refraining from fighting, in addition to adopting the logic of cooperation, tolerance, and mutual dialogue. “Alliance” formed the basis

for the cooperation of individuals in the provision of social services for the needy members of the tribe.⁷

The UAE citizen was aware of the phenomenon of social solidarity and the protection of individual rights. There have been positive manifestations of the social solidarity phenomenon, which have prompted UAE citizens to stick to it. In the past, the Emirati people were involved in the diving business and they strayed far- away from their families in search of a living. They were confident that other members of the family or the tribe or the community would help them in their calamities and stand next to them in their joys and delights. Under these circumstances, social solidarity was implemented by virtue of the large extended family. Manifestations of solidarity and cooperation were exemplified at times of prosperity and adversity. At hard times, all members of the alley (Alfreij) or the village or the Deira would rush to offer assistance to those folks stricken by calamity. They hastened to raise money for people overwhelmed with sadness after the loss of their houses or properties. Their neighbors and kinsmen would compensate them for their lost boats or houses in order to alleviate their suffering and make them feel comfortable during times of hardship.

Even religious occasions and seasons have been utilized by Emirati citizens as a social solidarity dynamic to promote cohesion and coherence among the different sectors of society. For example, the month of Ramadan has been characterized by a radical change in ordinary people's lives in terms of social solidarity and charity donations. Equally, manifestations of harmony and communication among the Emirati people have been obvious in times of joy and grief as well as at wedding ceremonies.⁸

Responsibilities of Social Solidarity

The foundation of the State of the Union in 1971 and the pursuit of its various institutions to provide modern social services to society members led to strengthening the relationship between the individual and the state. It also resulted in raising the life standards of the population and linking their living security to the state after it had been associated with extended family structures and extended kinship groups. The UAE has prioritized the interests of its citizens, placing them at the forefront of its goals and concerns. The UAE has paid substantial attention to the provision of various welfare programs and services for its citizens in order to enable them to contribute effectively in the development of their society. The UAE has endorsed the concept of a welfare state constructed on humanitarian, social, economic, cultural, and religious foundations.⁹

Since the sixties, development plans have started in the UAE with the establishment of several committees and bodies tackling the development projects in the country. This development policy was preceded by the establishment of the Council of the UAE rulers in the early fifties to consider from all directions matters related to the domestic conditions. The “Trucial States” Development Fund was established in 1965 to emphasize the beginning of a new stage of development in the UAE. Perhaps the discovery of oil in 1958 and its exports in 1962, in addition to the advent of the rule of Sheikh Zayed in Abu Dhabi, has contributed to accelerating the implementation of many development projects in the country. Attention has been focused on the development of education and

agriculture, as well as the construction of roads to link the parts of the UAE with each other. During that time, the foundations of the development process were laid down and several committees were formed to monitor the implementation of the development projects. Since that period there has been an increasing interest in vocational and technical education.¹⁰

The establishment of the UAE Federal Union has strongly pushed forward the development projects, especially in light of the presence of many of the ministries and institutions responsible for the planning and implementation of the development projects. Consequently, many decrees and laws have taken into account the importance of development in the UAE as a basis for the growth and progress of the state and society. In this respect, the issuance of Federal Law No.3 of 1973 concerning the National Planning issue is considered one of the important political indicators of the attitudes of the state towards development and, in addition to the national interest in the value of scientific planning. Federal Decree No.40 of 1974 concerning the Ministry of Planning, as amended by Federal Decree No. 20 of 1978, has emphasized the features of this new trend with regard to planning and development. In fact, the preceding decree stressed the tasks and powers granted to each department of the Ministry of Planning. The article number (2) of the Decree emphasizes the necessity of consultation with other ministries and relevant authorities in the UAE in order to follow up the implementation of the general plan of social development in the country.¹¹

Shouldering the burden of social development, the UAE became the

responsible for planning and the development of services as well as being a state of institutions. In this context, the United Arab Emirates has embraced the concept of the “welfare state” in the sense that the government has become responsible for providing the needs of the community in the areas of income, education, health, food, and housing. The Constitution of the United Arab Emirates reflects the philosophy of comprehensive social development in the second part, focusing on the basic social pillars of the UAE Federal Union.¹² **This issue becomes accurate by examining the explanation and interpretation of “Article 14” of the UAE Constitution related to the social development in the UAE as follows:**

- Equality, social justice, the provision of safety and security and equality of opportunity for all citizens shall be the bases of the community. Mutual co-operation and respect shall be a firm bond between them.
- The State of the UAE considers a range of challenges in the area of the elimination of all forms of racial discrimination, such as political participation, religious freedom and the empowerment of women and youth in addition to the integration of people with special needs in the community. There are other challenges in the health and social care sectors as well as education, employment and human trafficking.
- The UAE state has acquainted its citizens with the importance of political participation. The Supreme Council Resolution No.4 of 2006, concerning political participation has been issued. The decree includes a new image of political participation.

- The judiciary is the basis of social justice in the UAE society where the Constitution and the law guarantee to all people the right of litigation and the right to complain without discrimination.
- The UAE is a country which advocates well-established Islamic values and pays full respect to the rights and freedoms of others in the practice of their religions. The UAE ensures religious freedom, enshrined in the Constitution in “Article 32”, where the government has sought to facilitate the process of the establishment of places of worship for many religions and religious sects. The UAE has given free land to people of other religions to build places of worship. Currently there are many churches for the Christian communities, and a number of temples for Hindus and Sikhs.
- The UAE always works towards strengthening the principles of justice and equality in its national legislation and regulations based on the values of the Islamic religion as the main source of legislation. The people of the UAE advocate the values of tolerance, interdependence, and friendship with different peoples and races all over the globe.
- The UAE is keen to maintain a high standard of living for its citizens by investing in education. The Ministries of Education and Higher Education have sought to include in their curriculums a number of topics connected with human rights, children’s rights, women’s rights, and the principles of the Universal Declaration of Human Rights, in addition to topics dealing with countering racial discrimination in order to promote

religious and ethnic tolerance among all students.

- The texts of the labor laws aim to protect workers' rights. These laws affirmed equality in employment and occupation among all workers regardless of their nationalities, religion, political beliefs or on any other grounds of discrimination. Likewise these laws work toward the protection of wages. In other words, the wages are regulated by the law. The law ensured the fulfillment of wages as an essential pillar in the employment contract. The working hours are determined by the law according to international labor standards so that they do not exceed eight hours a day. The law emphasizes the employer's obligations to provide the means of prevention to protect workers from the dangers of occupational injuries and diseases.
- With regard to combating human trafficking, the UAE has issued Federal Law No.51 of 2006 concerning the fight against human trafficking, and other various forms of exploitation, particularly those that fall on women and children, such as sexual exploitation and child labor. In the framework of the protection of victims of human trafficking, many shelters for women and children have been established in the UAE. The most important of these sheltering centers are located in Abu Dhabi to accommodate women and children victims of human trafficking. There are other centers in Dubai including the Dubai charitable institution for the care of women and children.¹³

Social Welfare

In the modern era, social welfare represents an important input into the social, economic, humanitarian and human development process. It also marks an important transition for communities aspiring to achieve social welfare and the state of welfare. In this context, social welfare triggers social change and leads to the improvement of the standard of living, according to modern definitions of social welfare.¹⁴

Characteristics of Social Welfare

- The Emirates has been able to expand the scope of delivery of social services to the UAE citizens. In this sense, social welfare not only includes the basic needs of the citizens, but goes beyond that to fulfill the growing aspirations of the UAE people. Social welfare delivery was reflected on the steady growth in the basic services such as the high number of public schools, health facilities and centers for people with special needs, centers for the elderly, and nursery facilities.¹⁵
- Anyone who has followed the history of social welfare in the UAE can observe that social welfare has shifted from the traditional concept limited to the provision of in-kind and material assistance in addition to the treatment of some segments of society, to take preventive and developmental methods as well as therapeutic dynamics.
- Historically, social care was initially based on celestial laws and regulations stipulated by religions. Later, social care was sanctioned by man-made bylaws and customs / traditions approved by the community.
- Social welfare focuses on the rights of the UAE citizens as the most important assets in society who are leading the development movement in the country.

Social Welfare and Development

The UAE has sought to implement many services in the sphere of social welfare and in the social development realm within the following areas : Health services, educational services, cultural, housing services, youth support services, new Muslims support services, social and family care services, services aiming to improve and enable the status of women implemented by several institutions, **including the following**: Ministry of Social Affairs, the social security system, social development centers, associations of public interest, child care associations, associations taking care of young people, in addition to the Marriage Fund, and associations concerned with the welfare and rehabilitation of juveniles. Social welfare services also include other sectors within the UAE society particularly the neediest groups such as orphans, widows, people with special needs and the elderly.

Social Insurance

The UAE Ministry of Social Affairs is one of the federal agencies entrusted with the social security for individuals and families covered by the provisions of Federal Law No.2 for the year 2001 in respect of social security, which included 21 categories of society. The Social Security Administration provides social assistance to the beneficiaries through Social Affairs offices distributed throughout the country. In 2008 the UAE had 65 offices, which in their turn provided services to 68.722 beneficiaries. The number of the male beneficiaries is 22.794, constituting one third of the total number, whereas the rest (45.982) are female beneficiaries.

Table Number (1)**The number of cases and the total costs of social assistance in Dirhams during the years (2009-2013)**

Years	2009	2010	2011	2012	2013
Number of Cases	39,242	40,476	39,723	41,140	41,256
Costs	2,325,363,749	2,322,575,807	2,330,082,450	2,725,423,437	2,752,827,086

It is noted from Table (1) during the years (2009-2013) the rise of the costs of social assistance received by beneficiaries via the Social Affairs offices distributed in the country from AED 2,325,363,749, in 2009, to AED 2,752,827,086 in 2013. The first category of the beneficiary groups taking the best advantage of this aid are the elderly, divorced women and married students, followed by widows, abandoned wives, non-Emirati wives, orphans, people suffering from health disability or physical disability, families of prisoners and children with unknown parents, in addition to the disabled and exceptional cases including needy and vulnerable individuals.¹⁶

Relief Aid

Federal Law No.(2), for the year 2001, was issued regarding the social security and Council of Ministers Resolution No.(11), for the year 2002, was issued concerning the relief assistance. The Ministry of Social Affairs provides emergency relief assistance to families and individuals to meet the public and private calamities and disasters according to specific criteria including designated conditions and terms of assistance entitlement.

Table Number (2)**Relief Cases and Assistance Value in Dirhams according to the Type of Damage (2011-2012)**

Report Year	Burnt House		Capsized Boat		Others		Total	
	Number	Value	Number	Value	Number	Value	Number	Value
2011	58	2,126,272	3	43,238	4	113,000	65	2,282,510
2012	55	1,708,570	2	27,570	21	503,300	78	2,239,440
Increase / decrease rate	-5%	- 20%	-33%	-36%	More than 5 times increase	More than 4 times increase	+20%	-2%

According to Table (2), the number of relief cases has risen by 20% during 2012 compared to 2011. This increase is due to the increasing number of aid cases that have been introduced in the Emirates of Fujairah and Sharjah due to natural disasters such as the floods sweeping the East Coast region.¹⁷

Child Care

Nurseries are the most important institutions dealing with children in the early stages of their ages (from 45 days to 4 years). The Council of Ministers issued a decree to establish nurseries in government institutions as a key supporter to enhance the contribution of women in the labor market. On this basis, the working mother would feel comfortable about the presence of her children in a government nursery providing excellent services for nominal fees. The number of government nurseries reached 32 in 2012.

Obviously Table 3 displays an increase in the number of nurseries by 13 %. This is due to the following: The adoption of the standard quality of services provided for

children in nurseries and an increase in the rate of crimes committed by domestic workers against infants in particular. Finally, the interest of working mothers in nurseries is due to increasing awareness on the part of the working mother that her child is safer at that nursery rather than at home under the supervision of the nanny (the domestic worker).

Table Number (3)
Number of Nurseries in the UAE on the Emirates' Level (2011-2012)

Emirate	2011	2012	%
Abu Dhabi	92	105	+14%
Dubai	122	131	+7%
Sharjah	78	79	+1%
Ajman	6	7	+17%
Umm Al Quwain	4	5	+25%
Ras Al Khaima	14	19	+36%
Al Fujairah	5	8	+60%
Total	312	354	+13%

Wadima Law For Child Protection

This law aims to regulate the rights of children and all areas related to the provision of a secure and stable life. The law contains 73 items distributed along 12 chapters, including the definitions and objectives assigned to concerned

authorities and stakeholders. The law also involves general provisions as well as the basic rights of the child on the familial, health, social, cultural, and educational levels. Moreover, the law provides for children the right to protection, in addition to measures and protection mechanisms implementing the law and leading to sanctions imposed on people who assault children physically or psychologically. The law also contains sanctions imposed as a result of child abuse and negligence.¹⁸

The UAE is part of the International Convention on the rights of the Child. Therefore “Wadima Law” took a new name: the “Rights of the Child” law, in alignment with the International Convention on the Rights of the Child. The change in the name of the bill took place after discussing the law in the Federal National Council. Nevertheless, the word “Wadima” is still mentioned next to the “Rights of the Child” phrase. It was known that the UAE Vice President, Sheikh Mohammed bin Rashid Al Maktoum, proposed the “Wadima Law” as a domestic child protection bill after the tragic incident of Wadima, an 8-year-old girl who was brutally tortured by her father and his girlfriend. Wadima was killed as a result of the atrocities of the father, who had divorced her mother. He secretly buried her in the desert, but the crime was revealed after the confession of Wadima’s younger sister, who witnessed the murder incident.

The draft law regulates the rights of the child, and identifies all areas related to the life of children that should be protected. The draft law also sets up mechanisms to provide a secure and stable life for children. Likewise, the draft law includes severe

penalties to deter anyone who might be tempted to commit any act that could seriously affect the emotional, psychological, physical, moral, or social balance of a child.¹⁹

Care of the Elderly

Care of the elderly has been a top priority since the second half of the twentieth century. The proportion of health care and services reached an exceptionally high level, which was reflected in an increased life expectancy. There has been a rise in the numbers of elderly people throughout the world. In the UAE, the number of elderly has been growing rapidly due to the rising average survival rate, which reached 79 years in 2013.²⁰

The Department of Family Development in the Ministry of Social Affairs supervises the elderly community through the elderly care centers. These centers are in fact a network of social institutions designed to accommodate senior citizens who are above the age of 65. These institutions provide the elderly with the necessary social and psychological support, in addition to regular health care.²¹

The number of the elderly constitutes 34% of the total number of cases that get social assistance, in view of the prestige attached to them by the government to ensure the provision of a decent life for this age category. The State also provides a mobile unit to take care of the elderly. This unit is equipped with a specialized team consisting of a social worker, a doctor, a physiotherapy specialist, a nurse, and a medical service assistant. The team conducts home visits to the elderly to provide necessary services in their homes and among their families. The unit also works toward raising the local folks' awareness regarding the treatment of the

elderly. Guidance is also provided for the elderly families concerning different ways of caring for the elderly community.²²

It is observed that the number of the elderly in the UAE reached 13,845 cases and the assistance to be provided by the Ministry of Social Affairs for them was estimated at AED 1,059,593,361 in 2012.²³

The Care and Rehabilitation of the Disabled

The Article XVI of the UAE Constitution included the disabled among the groups who are sponsored by the State and supported by the community. The rehabilitation of the disabled aims to integrate them into the society as productive groups.²⁴ The Council of Ministers Resolution No.1 of 1977 on the Ministry of Social Affairs system emphasizes the assistance of the needy and the care of the disabled and elderly members of the community. The Resolution also emphasized the establishment of institutions and centers of vocational training integral to providing assistance to juveniles, orphans, children of unknown parentage, the blind, the elderly, and the disabled. Governmental authorities are responsible for the supervision of public and private institutions and centers working in this field. There are many institutions and associations dealing with people with disabilities, which are either affiliated with the federal Ministry of Social Affairs or with local governments, or are licensed by the Ministry of Social Affairs to practice related activities. In the UAE there are 45 centers for the care of people with disabilities, including 5 federal institutions affiliated with the Ministry of Social Affairs, 15 institutions affiliated with local governments, and 25 centers associated with the private sector.²⁵

Table Number (4)
Number of Disabled Students Registered in Federal, Local and Private Institutions (2011-2012)

No	Sector	2011	2012	Increase/Decrease Rate
1	Governmental/Federal	546	459	-16%
2	Governmental/ Local	2166	1692	-22%
3	Private Sector	1799	1968	+9%
	Total	4511	4119	-9%

The Ministry of Social Affairs centers dealing with the care for the disabled is concerned with the education, training, and rehabilitation of these groups. These centers also provide psycho-social treatment enabling the disabled to be integrated into the mainstream community through vocational training and rehabilitation. It is clear from the contents of Table (4) that the number of disabled students in the care and rehabilitation centers fell by 16% in the federal government sector. Further, their number fell by 22% in the domestic sector as a result of their adopting the policy of integration. An increasing number of disabled are integrated in the public school system, particularly cases with light and medium disabilities who are capable of learning.

Care of Juveniles

Juveniles' care is bound by Federal Law No. (9) of 1976 concerning juvenile delinquents and the homeless. Juveniles' care is also bound by other laws which include articles concerned with children's affairs. According to the data provided in table number (5), there is a significant increase in the total number of juveniles

located in social education houses and correctional centers. In 2012, the rate of increase was almost 87% compared to previous years. This increase in the number of juveniles located in social education houses was due to the active role of the official institutions working in the areas of social control and law enforcement. In this context, it is noteworthy to state that theft was more frequent in 2012. The rate of robberies amounted to 31% in 2012.²⁶

Table number (5)
Number of juveniles in Social Education Houses in (2011-2012)

No	Center	2011	2012	Increase / decrease rate
1	Social Education House - boys / Abu Dhabi	267	515	+93%
2	Social Education House - Boys / Sharjah	13	37	+185%
3	Social Education House - boys / AlFujairah	35	56	+60%
4	Social Education House - girls / Abu Dhabi	11	16	+45%
5	Social Education House - girls / Sharjah	16	14	-13%
Total		342	638	+87%

Social Development

Public Welfare Associations

According to the Federal Law for the year 2008, Article (2), an association of public interest or non-profit organization is: Each group which has an organizing recipe to continue for a specified or indefinite period and shall be composed of natural or legal persons, in order to achieve social, religious, cultural, scientific,

educational, professional, feminist, creative, or artistic activity, and / or provide human services for the purpose of achieving charity and solidarity, whether through its auxiliary material or moral or technical expertise. It shall seek in all of its activities the public interest alone without financial gain. It shall be open to membership for all in accordance with the provisions of this law. Its objectives shall be determined by the purpose for which it was created.²⁷

Table number (6)
Distribution of Non-Profit Organization According to their Type
1991-2012

Type of Organization	Year	1991	2012
Religious		6	3
Women		7	8
Professional		10	30
Popular Art		26	28
General / cultural		8	33
Humanitarian/Charitable		6	19
Theaters		8	12
Foreign Communities		17	15
Total		88	145

The Ministry of Social Affairs has sought in light of the strategic plan of the ministry to focus on non-profit organizations through the promotion of the concept of social responsibility and the importance of effective partnership with the private

and civil sectors. Several initiatives were launched and implemented to activate the civil work. It is noted from table number (6) that there was an increase in the size of the association index in 2012 compared with 1991, as a result of increased awareness in the community of the importance of social and voluntary work. In a related context the number of members in the public welfare organizations was estimated at 66,796 members in 2012 compared with 34,333 members in 1991.²⁸

Cooperative Societies

Cooperative societies contribute to the growth and development of the social and economic performance of the community. There is a variety of activities performed by different kinds of societies such as the consumer cooperative societies, the housing cooperative societies, and other cooperatives in the area of service delivery. These societies also play roles in the promotion of social development in the country.

Table number (7)
Distribution of Cooperatives According to their Type 2012

No	Type of Society	2012
1	Cooperative Unions	2
2	Consumption	16
3	Housing	1
4	Fishermen	13
5	Leasing	1
6	Consumer / Services	3
Total		36

Family Development

The family constitutes the most important element of society and it is an essential pillar of social security. Thereupon the government focused on the support of the family as a pivotal factor in achieving the cohesion and unity of the community. The family also contributes to the consolidation of values, customs, traditions, and heritage. The family is a unifying force aiming at achieving intergenerational solidarity so as to enable individuals to fulfill their objectives.

Productive Families: The Productive Families program is one of the important endeavors to support productive families enterprises and enable the family members who have skills manufacturing, producing and marketing of various commodities to increase their income and improve their standard of living. Table number (8) shows that (125) new productive families were registered in 2012 scoring a rate of 25% of the total number of productive families registered at the ministry. Apparently there is an increase in the number of productive families in 2012 compared to 2011.²⁹ This increase is due to the inauguration of new service centers opened in Umm Al Quwain, Ajman and Fujairah, which enabled many productive families to receive more training and rehabilitation. Throughout these centers the productive families were able to market their products through the exhibition halls available.

Table number (8)
Participations of Productive Families (2011-2012)

No	Year	2011	2012	Increase / decrease rate
1	Number of Productive Families	500	625	+25%

Ministry of Social Affairs Report (2011-20120. UAE –Executive Summary

Women's Empowerment

The advancement of human societies is contingent upon investment in the energies of every individual. In a related scenario, it is accurate to say that the empowerment and care of women is one of the main indicators of the progress of society and a manifestation of its development. The world has witnessed the progress and development taking place in United Arab Emirates. According to statistics, the United Arab Emirates occupied a privileged position in the empowerment of women. In the UAE women constitute two-thirds of the work force in the public sector.³⁰

In the UAE, women have occupied senior positions in society, including the judiciary, the diplomatic corps, the police, the military, and the business and finance sectors. At the political level, women occupy four seats in the Council of Ministers. In 2011 one woman was elected and six women were appointed in the UAE Federal National Council. In the field of women's empowerment achievements, the UAE ranked thirty-eighth among 187 countries in terms of gender issues in 2011, according to the United Nations Development Program Index.³¹

In 2014, the UAE ranked first in the world in Women's Respect Index, according to the World Economic Forum report.³² This index measures the level of social development of women in the UAE compared with the social development of women in other parts of the world. It also includes the assessment of the provision of social services for women to achieve their ambitions and potential.

In the pre-Union era, the Emirati women were responsible for the education and care of their children. Women took important decisions in family life during those days. Women –with some education- were responsible for teaching the holy Koran. In most cases women did several kinds of work, such as sewing, embroidery, and

the grinding of grains. They were responsible for poultry and livestock, in addition to fetching water from the wells. They participated in the planting, irrigating, and watering of the land. They were also involved in land cultivation and in the home-made industries like the manufacturing of mats, baskets, carpets, tents, and any other business integral to the life of Emirati society at the time.

The journey of struggle experienced by Emirati women in the pre-oil era was highly estimated by Sheikha Fatima Bent Mubarak, who said: “Every human being who lived on this earth has witnessed the experience of struggle in the recent past. Women, who have participated in this experience of struggle under the most extreme conditions, should enjoy the fruits of the present and the future.”³³

Historically, UAE women played a prominent role in ancient times. They paid tremendous efforts in the upbringing and preparation of the generations who participated later in the construction and building of modern UAE society. **The empowerment of women in the UAE could be clarified through the following:**

Women in the thought of Sheikh Zayed

The articles of the UAE Constitution were not the only factors that paved the ground in front of the Emirati women to start their successful progress toward the future. The words of Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan Al Nahyan regarding the importance of women’s work provided the spark for their march toward a better life. His encouragement was an incentive for Emirati women to move forward on the way of science and community building. But this encouragement was conditional on women’s commitment to the principles of Islam. From the sayings of Sheikh Zayed Bin Sultan Al Nahyan; I agree on the work of women in any place and in all work sites where they find respect and reverence. They should

not hesitate to work in any location as long as it is appropriate to them. As I said several times, I support what is supported by Islam and oppose what Islam opposes.³⁴ Sheikh Zayed also said: “I encourage the employment of women in positions that are commensurate with their nature in order to preserve their respect, and dignity, as a mother and maker of generations. Emirati women should represent their country in women’s conferences abroad, to show the international community that the UAE is moving with fixed steps toward an era of development, a national renaissance. Women who participate in international activities should reflect the bright picture of UAE society, and the Islamic religion which gave them all the rights.”³⁵ Expressing his aspirations for a bright future for all UAE women, Sheikh Zayed added: I hope to see a female doctor, a female engineer and a female diplomat among the UAE girls. I am looking forward to the day when I see our daughters doing their jobs and playing the role played by Arab girls in the sister countries.”³⁶ Sheikh Zayed also said: “The achievements of women in the United Arab Emirates in a short period makes me happy and assured that the seeds planted in the past will bring forth fruits in the future. We thank God that the distinguished role of women in society has placed them on the right track to achieve more success for the benefit of the current and future generations.”³⁷

Women under the Federal Union

There is no doubt that the UAE Union has strengthened the position of women, most notably through the development of a legal and legislative framework which promotes the status of women, and emphasizes her central role in the community. These frameworks are necessary implementations of the Constitution of the State,

and the statements of the President (Sheikh Zayed), who was a lover of his people, keen to achieve the well-being of men and women alike. Ostensibly, the United Arab Emirates is a Gulf –Arab- Islamic state. Consequently its Constitution stems from Islam and Arabism. As a country it is part of the Arabian Gulf region and its surroundings. Since Islam has honored women and offered them the same rights like men in many areas, the UAE Constitution has given priority to many key issues related to women elevating their status in society.³⁸ **Several Constitution articles give credit to women as follows:**

- **Article (14):** Equality, social justice, the provision of safety and security and equality of opportunity for all citizens shall be the bases of the community. Mutual co-operation and respect shall be a firm bond between them.
- **Article (17):** Education shall be a primary means of social development. It shall be compulsory in its primary stage and free at all stages within the Union. The law shall prescribe the necessary plans for the propagation and spread of education at various levels and for the eradication of illiteracy.³⁹
- **Article (20):** Society shall esteem work as a fundamental basis of its development. It shall strive to ensure that work is available for citizens and to ensure that they are prepared for it. It shall take such steps as are necessary to ensure this by providing legislation to protect the rights of the employees and to protect the interests of the employers, bearing in mind developing international labor legislation.
- **Article (35):** Public service shall be open to all citizens on a basis of equality of circumstances between them, in accordance with the provisions of the law. Public service shall be a national service entrusted to those

undertaking it. The public servant shall aim, in the execution of his duties, at the public interest alone.

These constitutional articles in their great vocabulary confirm that women enjoy all the rights enjoyed by men. Providing employment opportunities for both sexes is crucial to the UAE government. Explicitly, social Equality is the pillar of the UAE society, as well as the right to education.⁴⁰

Sheikh Khalifa's Women Empowerment Initiative

In the framework of the continuous efforts of His Highness Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed in improving the participation of UAE citizens in the decision-making process, and in the consolidation of the progressive exercise of democracy, the Federal National Council second round of elections held in September 24, 2011, has witnessed a qualitative development. Twenty candidates, including women, representing half of the council members, were elected. Engaging women in the election process was integral to the women's empowerment initiative endorsed by Sheikh Khalifa, which aimed to improve women's status and qualify them to play effective and productive roles in society. The objectives of the initiative came to fruition through the participation of women in the election process. This policy enabled the women to occupy a prominent place in UAE society. Women have become involved in the three sovereign authorities including the executive, legislative and judicial branches. Their representation in the Federal National Council has risen to the ratio of 22.5% after the election of a woman and the appointment of eight. In 2008, there was also an increase in their representation in the Council of Ministers from two to four Seats. Three women ambassadors were appointed to serve the UAE abroad. UAE women constitute 70% of the total university graduates. Moreover,

Emirati women occupy 60% percent of government jobs⁴¹ throughout the country. Emirati women currently constitute 15% percent at the level of boards of directors in the UAE. Further, more than 11,000 women work in the Business Administration sector in the UAE.⁴²

The Role of HH Sheikha Fatima bint Mubarak in the Encouragement and the Empowerment of Women

Women's activities were launched in the UAE in 1973. The establishment of The Abu-Dhabi Association for Women (Jamiyyat almaraa aldhebyaniyya) under the leadership of H.H Sheikha Fatima marked the beginning of the Emirati women Renaissance. The activities of the Association achieved tremendous success and spread all over the countries providing the stimulus for similar institutions to be founded in the rest of the Emirates. Due to the unity of the aims of the women's movement in the UAE, The General Women's Union was established in 1975. Sheikha Fatima was elected the Chairperson of the Union which aimed to achieve a multiplicity of desired goals. The Union seeks to enhance the advancement of women culturally, socially and politically, and involve them in the development process hand-in-hand with Emirati men.⁴³

Sheikha Fatima is also the president of the Family Development Foundation which has attempted to deploy its services to women throughout the UAE in order to promote their status by providing social, cultural and health activities. Sheikha Fatima stressed, in the statement presented on behalf of Her Highness by Noura Khalifa Al Suwaidi, Director of the General Women's Union, before the fifty-eighth session, held at The United Nations Headquarters in 2014, that "the United Arab Emirates pledged to continue its efforts to promote gender equality and the empowerment of women via various national development plans". There is no doubt that this statement

reflects the deep faith of Sheikha Fatima in the important role played by women, and the importance of activating this role for public benefit and community service.⁴⁴

Support and Care for Young People

Ministry of Culture, Youth and Community Development

The Ministry of Culture, Youth and Community Development supervises the youth sector through the Public Authority for Youth and Sports. It is also concerned with practical planning and supervision of the various youth activities. The ministry also offers a range of services and cultural programs to community members. The cultural centers' facilities and affiliated libraries, established by the Ministry, aim to raise the level of the community's cultural awareness and to support talented and creative citizens. This process, which includes the promotion of different sport activities and cultural programs, works toward the development of intellectual and creative community.

This integrated system constitutes a network of cultural radiation centers at the community and state levels to serve the society in a variety of fields, in addition to creating an environment suitable for the development of the creative energies of the local citizens, the consolidation of national identity, and communication with other cultures.

This system falls under the following cultural centers:

- The Cultural Center in the Western Region.
- The Cultural Center in Ras Al Khaimah.
- The Cultural Center in Umm Al Quwain.
- The Cultural Center in Al Fujairah.

- The Cultural Center in Delma.
- The Cultural Centre in Dibba Al Fujairah.
- The Cultural Center in Masafi.

These cultural centers operate in perfect harmony to achieve the vision and mission of the Ministry of Culture, Youth, and Community Development. The geographical circle of cultural centers and libraries Extends to reach all the different areas in the UAE. These centers consists of a set of cultural facilities, which include a variety of public libraries seeking to provide new sources of knowledge and modern services in all areas. Their collections have exceeded 45,000 titles. These cultural centers also contain modern theaters, equipped with the latest world-class systems and which have a capacity of up to 1,000 people. These theaters host various activities and events throughout the year. Moreover, the cultural centers include exhibition halls, multi-purpose auditoriums, and spacious facilities for training and other services.⁴⁵

The Public Authority for Youth and Sports Welfare

The Public Authority for Youth and Sports Welfare is the supreme body concerned with the welfare and care of the youth and their activities in the UAE. It is also a competent administrative authority in all matters related to the care of youth and sports affairs, including taking decisions on the complaints and grievances brought before it. All other parties should abide by and implement the decisions of the Public Authority for Youth and Sports Welfare.⁴⁶

The Institutions That Support Youth Projects at the State Level :

■ Emirates Foundation for Youth Development

Investing in young people developing their abilities on the economic, technological, scientific and social level is central to the success of any country. This is precisely

what was done by the Emirates Foundation for Youth Development in the United Arab Emirates. This institution was founded in 2005, in Abu Dhabi, in order to create a way for the private sector to achieve its obligations towards the UAE society. The Emirates Foundation has established a partnership between the public and private sectors in the country to provide grants to organizations and members of the civil society, and support the initiatives of the young Emiratis in a wide range of areas.⁴⁷

This institution operates in accordance with a charity work model based on social investments centered on young Emiratis through six basic programs:⁴⁸

- **Coming Together:** A social program to promote a culture of volunteerism across the United Arab Emirates.
- **Competencies:** A program to empower young people and train them on leadership and personal skills in order to enable them to deal with the private sector and increase their awareness about the opportunities offered by it.
- **Think Scientifically:** The contest encourages young people to specialize in the field of science, especially in the sectors of oil and gas, aviation, semiconductors that need Emirati human resources.
- **Sanid (Support):** An organization which secures volunteers trained to respond in case of emergency and provide help local and national authorities in the event of major incidents.
- **Elimination of financial illiteracy:** A national program that helps young people to learn how to manage their own money, and their debt in particular.
- **Kayani (My Entity):** A program which establishes sustainable social companies to provide job opportunities for young people with special needs. These new initiatives have received very positive feedback from young people so far.

Currently, 80% of the members of the Emirates Foundation belong to the young people category. Further, more than 28.000 registered volunteers are included in the organization.⁴⁹

■ Khalifa Fund for Enterprise Development

The Khalifa Fund for Enterprise Development was inaugurated on the third of June 2007 in order to create a generation of Emirati entrepreneurs. Currently, the Fund, which has a capital of two billion dirhams, provides low-interest financing solutions for a variety of feasible projects adopted by young people and are expected to flow into the national economy. Under the umbrella of the Khalifa Fund, several programs were launched such as ([Step “ Khotwa” - Beginning “Bedaya”](#) - Increase and Manufacturing [“Zeyada wa Tasnee”](#)) to cover all segments of projects, in addition to offering a number of initiatives such as [“Sougha”](#) directed at people mastering handmade traditional crafts, [“Al Radda”](#), directed at inmates in correctional centers, [“Ishraqa”](#), affiliated with the National Rehabilitation Center, directed at those who have recovered from addiction, and the [“Amal/ Hope”](#) program, directed at people with special needs.⁵⁰

■ Mohammed Bin Rashid Establishment for Young Business Leaders

Mohammed Bin Rashid Establishment for Young Business Leaders was established on June 12, 2002, in order to embrace and nourish the spirit of initiative and leadership, and to provide encouragement and facilities for business development activities and leadership among young Emiratis. It also aims to stimulate the spirit of creativity and the culture of entrepreneurship as a key pillar of economic development in the UAE. The Foundation also seeks to foster entrepreneurs, and encourage and support young Emiratis to participate actively in the country's economic growth. It aims to

facilitate the procedures for the establishment of small and medium-sized enterprises and provide access to the government procurement activities.⁵¹

■ Sharjah Foundation to Support Pilot Projects “Pioneers”

The Sharjah Foundation was established to support pilot projects in 2005 for the purpose of supporting small and medium enterprises in the Emirate of Sharjah by creating an environment suitable to the establishment and development of these projects and the provision of appropriate funding opportunities according to the rules and regulations of Islamic finance. The Foundation has supported individual enterprises and small and medium-sized companies held by the citizens in the Emirate of Sharjah. It has also provided financial and technical support as well as financial services on a competitive basis according to the systems of Islamic finance. Additionally, it operates as a liaison between the public and private sectors to remove obstacles and facilitate the development of pilot projects. Moreover, the Foundation has thoroughly examined successful domestic and international experiences in the area of the development of pilot projects and discussed possible ways to take advantage of them in a way appropriate to the nature and circumstances of the Emirate.⁵²

■ Saud Al Mualla Program for the Management of Youth Projects

The program aims (according to the Emiri Decree No.3 of 2009) to encourage the young citizens' projects of both sexes. The program aims to help the young Emiratis to promote their economic activities and achieve their aspirations for prosperity and development. This process will be achieved through the youth's choice of their projects and their supervision of their initiatives in cooperation and coordination with the program and all federal and local authorities. The

program also aims to provide assistance to these projects through the discussion of youth initiatives by local and national institutions. Arrangement, coordination and communication between the young Emiratis and the institutions concerned with supporting their projects.⁵³

■ **Saud bin Saqr Al Qasimi Program to support Youth Projects**

This program is affiliated with the Chamber of Commerce and Industry of Ras Al Khaimah,. It was officially inaugurated on 28/05/2008. The program has aimed at the development of business and the promotion of creative and innovative ideas.

The program receives financial support from different funding sources. Youth projects are exempt from any taxes or fees for a period of three years, starting from the date of their establishment. Exemption includes three local government departments (Economic Department and the Chamber of Commerce and Industry, in addition to the municipality) as well as the Ministry of Labor. The program services have varied between exemptions, training, consulting, information, and funding.⁵⁴

Government Housing Services

Housing is considered a milestone in the progress and development of any nation. Housing is crucial factor for stability in the lives of individuals and societies. Therefore the State and the Government paid keen interest in the provision of adequate housing for all the citizens. In a related scenario, housing has become the most important motive of the evolution and growth of the construction industry. Housing also constitutes the largest and the most widespread employment sector. Observers of the history of the UAE are fully aware of the enormous efforts that were devoted to the development of the housing sector since it was founded by

Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan Al Nahyan. The housing policy in the UAE aims to provide adequate and appropriate housing for the UAE nationals and expatriates. This policy is not only concerned with the provision of residential buildings, but it also provides an integrated residential environment. In other words, this policy aims to provide the residential areas with all basic infrastructure services in the areas of transport, communication, education, health and other spheres.

The housing process takes different forms, including:

- Free government housing for low-income Emiratis.
- Financial assistance to citizens who possess residential land to help them build their own houses.
- Financial assistance to citizens who possess houses and want to modernize or improve or renovate them.
- Long-term interest-free loans for personal housing projects.

Financing the Housing Sector

■ The Federal Government

The federal government, represented by the Ministry of Public Works, has constructed some small communities to meet the urgent needs for the resettlement of nomads. This initiative was known as the People's Housing Project. In 1976 a Decree was issued with the purpose of building new houses for the citizens in the old cities.

■ Sheikh Zayed Housing Program:

A law was released in 1999 establishing the Sheikh Zayed Housing Program, which aimed at improving the living conditions of Emiratis as an integral part of the constant and comprehensive social care policy devoted to UAE citizens.⁵⁵

■ The Abu Dhabi Housing Loans Authority:

This was created in July 1990, by Law No. 3 of 1990, for the purpose of granting Emiratis interest-free loans either to build new housing units or to expand / renovate their existing houses. In 2008, UAE President Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed Al Nahyan, in his capacity as the Ruler of Abu Dhabi, increased the private housing loans from one million two hundred thousand dirhams to two million dirhams, in addition to providing other advantages to UAE citizens in the Emirate.⁵⁶

■ Mohammed Bin Rashid Housing Establishment:

This is a general government institution with legal capacity, aiming to provide adequate housing for Emirati citizens. It was founded in 2006, with a primary capital of 12 billion dirhams. It seeks to provide adequate housing, suitable residential land, and housing loans for Emiratis in Dubai.⁵⁷

■ Sheikh Saud Housing Program:

Out of concern for the provision of all means of decent life for the people of Ras Al Khaimah, Sheikh Saqr bin Mohammed Al Qasimi, the ruler of the Emirate, established a program for housing in Ras Al Khaimah. Accordingly, Resolution No. 24, dated 07/13/2008, was issued for the same purpose. In light of the aforementioned resolution, applications to take advantage of the housing program were received from all tribes and people from all regions in Ras Al Khaimah.⁵⁸

■ The Housing Department in Sharjah:

The Ruler of Sharjah, Sheikh Dr. Sultan bin Mohammed Al Qasimi, issued the Emirati Decree No. 11 of 2010, on the establishment of the Department of Housing in the Emirate of Sharjah. The department of housing aims to contribute to the stability and development of the community through the following:

- Securing adequate housing for the eligible citizens of the Emirate by providing housing assistance to meet their needs according to the best standards and technical specifications.
- Unifying government housing mechanism in the Emirate in terms of accreditation, implementation, supervision and delivery of services.
- Finding and activating sources of funding for the housing department in order to ensure the achievement of its plans and policies.⁵⁹

Health Safety

The Standard of “Health Safety”

The Standard of “Health Safety” means the citizen’s awareness that all health services are available in an efficient and effective manner to guarantee the treatment of disease (any kind of disease) if it occurs. The Health Safety Standard is not only limited to the individual’s sense of the availability of efficient and effective health services. It also aims to make the cost of those services affordable by the citizen. In this context, a third dimension called “health safety” can be added to “health services” in addition to the basic preventive and therapeutic dimensions of the health services.⁶⁰

Health safety means that the citizen feels that he/she is always under the umbrella of the health care policy provided by the government. The citizen does not know when he/she will need to be covered by this health care umbrella, and the citizen may not require its services throughout his or her life. Nevertheless, under conditions of severe health crisis, the citizen will surely need full health coverage, particularly in cases of emergency incidents, in cases of serious physical or mental injuries, or in cases of chronic diseases such as cancer or tuberculosis. In many situations, the

individual alone may not be able to cope with these emergency matters and may not be able to handle the high cost of treatment of such serious diseases. The cost of treatment will explicitly exhaust all the savings collected throughout his/her life. The cost may also creep up on the origins of one's wealth and his/her assets.⁶¹

Health safety also means that the individual and all his/her family members have access to health care even in cases of job loss, change of workplace, start of a new business, or in case of pre-mature retirement (before the legal age). Health safety is also achieved if the elderly and people with disabilities throughout the country feel that they are covered by the health care umbrella which will enable them to receive health care in their place of residence. Health safety is achieved when health and preventive services spread to include all segments of society, especially the most vulnerable groups such as children and pregnant women.⁶²

Health Insurance

Health Insurance in Abu Dhabi

Daman “Guarantee” Company was founded on September 26, 2005 under the Emiri Decree No. 39 for the year 2005. This project is considered a qualitative leap in the history of health care in Abu Dhabi. A contract was signed with the Munich Re Group as a strategic partner of the Daman Company. In fact, the Munich Re Group is one of the leading re-insurance companies.⁶³

Daman is the first and largest specialized health insurance national company in the UAE. It offers its customers a wide variety of insurance programs, including Theqa “trust” program, which has seen a great success. Thirteen insurance companies fall under the umbrella of Daman. These companies are health coverage providers which bear the costs of the health services provided for their beneficiaries.⁶⁴

Health Insurance in Dubai

In Dubai, a health insurance law was issued which included all Dubai government employees and their families. According to the law, all Dubai government employees and their families are covered by the health insurance system known as Enaya “Care”. This Enaya “Care” system stems from a strategy for health insurance partnership between Dubai Health Authority “DHA” and the “Neuron” company. Enaya “Care” provides all Dubai government employees and their dependents with a comprehensive medical coverage with levels depending on the degree of the government employee. In addition to normal health conditions, the system also covers dental and eye treatment and the treatment of chronic diseases. The diseases suffered by an employee covered by the system are treated in public and private hospitals and clinics.⁶⁵

Since the beginning of February 2010, the costs of treatment in private hospitals and clinics have changed. The employee or his/her affiliate is supposed to pay 20% of the health costs, whether the treatment is inside the hospitals or the clinics or abroad. Furthermore, other costs will be paid, including 20% of purchased drugs, 50% of eye treatment, and 30% of dental cases. However, treatment at government hospitals remains free for the UAE citizens. Expatriate government employees and staff and their affiliates have to pay a nominal fee of 20 dirhams for treatment in government hospitals.⁶⁶

Health Insurance in the Emirate of Sharjah

The Emirati Decree No. 8 of 2012 was published in the Emirate of Sharjah concerning the establishment of the Sharjah Health Insurance Authority to cover all categories of staff of the Government of Sharjah, including citizens and residents. The decree stipulated the foundation of the Sharjah Health Insurance Authority as a financially and

administratively independent corporate entity. According to the decree, the Sharjah Health Insurance Authority has the legal capacity to direct all actions and procedures that ensure the achievement of its objectives and goals, as regulated by law and the powers and functions of the Authority. The SHIA will carry out cooperation with the concerned authorities in the Emirate to select the best practices in the field of health insurance.

Caring for New Muslims

Zayed House for Islamic Culture:

Zayed House for Islamic Culture was established on the basis of Resolution No.10 for 2005. Under the auspices of the UAE President, Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed Al Nahyan, the Resolution was issued to establish a cultural Islamic institution to be concerned with the provision of necessary social and familial care for new Muslims in order to integrate them into society. Zayed House for Islamic Culture also aims to activate a method of coexistence to enable the people newly converted to Islam to be assimilated into the mainstream Muslim community. Zayed House for Islamic Culture also aims to familiarize people who are interested in gaining knowledge about Islam with the truth and essence of Islam and its spirit of tolerance characterized Zayed House for Islamic Culture. ZHIC is considered as a leading foundation in the United Arab Emirates, which provides integrated services and programs for the converts.⁶⁷

The Department of Islamic Affairs and Charitable Activities in Dubai:

This department also developed a comprehensive policy for the care of the new Muslims. This program aims to provide religious education and instruction to them throughout the year. The policy ensures the success of the functions of the Department of Islamic Affairs and Charitable Activities with regard to the New Muslims category.

The strategic plan of the department aims to provide full care for the New Muslims community on material, physical, social and religious levels.⁶⁸

Volunteer Work in the UAE Society

The public service volunteering initiative in the traditional UAE society was based on the teachings of the Islamic religion which guaranteed by social solidarity and commitment of the population of the UAE society to use the Zakat and charity revenues in helping the orphans and the needy who deserve assistance. These services depend on the UAE social heritage, which dates back in its origins to social and tribal structures.

Volunteering services are positive initiatives stemming from the spirit of social solidarity in the UAE. After the foundation of the Union and the evolution of modern institutions in society, the volunteering activities have expanded in the country thanks to the efforts of civil society and non-profit organizations. These organizations have attempted to keep pace with internal and external developments and provide assistance to different communities in the country in cases of natural disasters and major accidents and wars. These organizations provide a variety of volunteering services in cooperation and coordination with other institutions working in the field of relief. Some institutions have tended to set up by-laws governing and regulating the activities of individuals interested in participation in volunteering tasks. **The following are among the most prominent institutions in the UAE contemporary society in the field of volunteering activities:**

- Zayed bin Sultan Al Nahyan Foundation for charity work
- Mohammed bin Rashid Al Maktoum Charity Foundation

- Khalifa bin Zayed Foundation for Charity
- The Emirates Foundation Takatof
- The Tender hands of the Dubai government program
- Medical Program Noor Dubai to face the phenomenon of eye diseases in the world
- Mohammed bin Rashid Al Maktoum program to prepare young people.

Red Crescent also plays a large and distinctive role in this respect. Among the other institutions concerned with volunteering Emiratis come The Volunteers Association and The Sharjah Award for Voluntary Work (SAFVW). The SAFVW was launched to strengthen ties with other Arab voluntary organizations. In general, there are 15 licensed charity organizations (in the UAE) on the federal or local governmental levels, in addition to 9 women's associations working in coordination with the General Women's Union. There are also 132 public non-profit organizations licensed by the Ministry of Social Affairs. These associations provide an access to all members of the community in all areas regardless of age or sex (male or female) to participate in volunteering or charitable and humanitarian work.⁶⁹

Human Development Indicators

Human development measurement indicates an expression in digital (numerical) manner about the situation and status of human development in a given community. For example, one may say that the status of human development in one of the towns in the Emirates is equal to 55% rather than to say that this case is good or bad. Ostensibly, digital (numerical) expressions are clear and specific, while verbal expressions may exhibit multiple and different meanings.

Human Development indicators of the UAE

The UAE has occupied the top ranking position in the Arab world in the annual report of the United Nations Human Development Program which was issued in 2010 and included rates of progress in all countries around the world. For the first time since its release twenty years ago, the report includes extended assessment and measurement of Human Development rates for several years in order to monitor the achievements and progress accomplished by different countries in the fields of health, education and economic growth, as well as gender equality. The report also involves the evaluation of human growth in many countries around the world over the last forty years in order to measure the significant differences between countries with high human development rates and others lagging behind.

The UAE Arab occupied the first rank among all Arab countries, and was ranked at the position number 32 at the global level. This means that the UAE climbed up five places in the overall standing compared to its situation in 2005, which reflects the size of the achievement accomplished by the country at the level of human development during such a short period. The report depended on its assessment and measurement of the mentioned period on the rate of high income and progress that had been achieved on the health and educational level within a particular timeline. This measurement places Asian and Arab countries to share together the top ten positions in the overall evaluation of human development in the world.⁷⁰

In 2011, the UAE ranked first on the level of the Arab countries, and jumped to the 30th global ranking among 187 countries mentioned in the global Human Development Report. The United Nations Development Program in cooperation with the Emirates Competitiveness Council and the Department of Economic

Development in Abu Dhabi launched the Global Human Development Report (2011) in the Emirates Centre for Strategic Studies and Research in Abu Dhabi in recognition of the outstanding stature achieved by the UAE, and in recognition of the unprecedented achievements which enabled the country to take the lead on the level of the Arab world.⁷¹ The follow-up of the human development reports give a clear picture of the achievements made by the UAE in the field of human development. Obviously, the indicators of human development emphasized the improvement of the quality of life for UAE citizens.⁷²

Conclusion

Thanks to the construction of the modern state in the UAE, the social development and welfare in the country has transformed the traditional concept of social welfare. Social welfare no longer means the mere services or aids provided to the citizen. It means the empowerment of a positive human being capable of interacting with the community. In other words, it means that the focus has shifted to the empowerment of human beings in order to help them expand available options and potential. Social welfare aims to provide development opportunities and develop the skills of local citizens, which fulfills the United Nations definition of social welfare.

The UAE is considered an example to be emulated in the area of development due to the gigantic societal shift it achieved on the level of the Arab countries. The significant shift in the social paradigm was accompanied by an interest in the Emirati and the development of his or her capabilities in accordance with the international criteria set by the United Nations in this area. Moreover, social welfare and social development are characterized by the feature of inclusiveness in all social welfare programs and services, as well as the ongoing adjustment in

legislation and laws related to different areas of social welfare in order to meet the basic human needs of the UAE. Further, social welfare and services are included in some areas related to expatriate employers and workers with regard to the laws of labor and childhood. Social development is not only limited to securing social needs, but it also extends to include the provision of psychological and educational needs for all the beneficiary social classes. Finally, social development is apparently constructed on the basis of criteria deeply rooted in humanitarian development, thus it widened the options available for the UAE citizen. In the light of this argument, the UAE has occupied advanced positions in the area of human development, according to United Nations' standards and specifications.

Notes

1. Mohamed Tuhaih Asaad and Yosef Sharab. (2011). Emirati Society : Originality and Modernity. AlFalah Library. P.168. UAE.
2. Al-Taher Mohammed Awad Allah and Khaled Ahmed Mustafa Hajar. (1995). Theory and Practice in the Field of Development of Policy Formulation. The Ministry of Higher Education, Umm Al Qura University Scientific Research Center. The social science research series. Saudi Arabia. P.88
3. Mohamed Tuhaih Asaad and Yosef Sharab. (2011). Emirati Society : Originality and Modernity. AlFalah Library. P.168. UAE.
4. Mohammed Abdullah Al-Mutawa. (1991). Development and Social Change in the United Arab Emirates. Lebanon Printing Company. Beirut: Dar Alfarabi. P. 57-58.
5. Saad al-Kubaisi. (2004). UAE society, Chapter X : Social Development, Sociology program, College of Humanities and Social Sciences, UAE University. P.190-191.
6. Ibid. p.191.
7. Ibid. p.190.
8. Ibid. p.192.
9. <http://www.alamuae.com/uae/showtopics-814.html>.
10. Kazim Aqil, The United Arab Emirates, A.D. 600 to The Present: A Socio-Discursive Transformation in the Arabian Gulf (Dubai: Gulf Book Center, 2000), P.300-332.
11. Mohammed Abdullah Al-Mutawa. (1991). Development and Social Change in the United Arab Emirates. Lebanon Printing Company. Beirut: Dar Alfarabi. P. 68-69.
12. Saad al-Kubaisi. (2004). UAE society, Chapter X : Social Development, Sociology program, College of Humanities and Social Sciences, UAE University. P.195.
13. <http://www.mohamoon-uae.com/default.aspx?action=displayNews&type=3&ID=8426>
14. Osman Sirajuddin Fateh Al- Rahman. Social welfare between State Conventions and Local Laws : the United Arab Emirates as a Model. P.82
http://strategicvisions.ecssr.com/ECSSR/ECSSR_DOC DATA_PRO_EN/Resources/PDF/Rua_Strategia/Rua-Issue-04/rua04_052.pdf
15. Constitution of the United Arab Emirates (2000), p. 6. included Article XVI of Part II of the Constitution of the United Arab Emirates DEALING with disabilities among special groups.
16. Mohamed Tuhaih Asaad and Yosef Sharab. (2011). Emirati Society : Originality and Modernity.

AlFalah Library..p. 235. UAE

17. The report of the Ministry of Social Affairs - the United Arab Emirates, 2011-2012, Executive Summary. P. 32-33.
18. Emirates Today: Wadima Law. www.emaratalyoum.com/local-section/other/2013-11-11-1.622302.
19. <http://www.albayan.ae/across-the-uae/news-and-reports/2013-12-12-1.2019220>.
20. Aqil Kadhim. Population and Urban Areas, Chapter VII of Emirati Studies. UAEU. 2014.
21. Mohamed Tuhaih Asaad and Yosef Sharab. (2011). Emirati Society : Originality and Modernity. AlFalah Library. P.265-266. UAE.
22. The report of the Ministry of Social Affairs - the United Arab Emirates, 2011-2012, Executive Summary. P. 36-39.
23. The report of the Ministry of Social Affairs - the United Arab Emirates, 2011-2012, Executive Summary. P.40.
24. Constitution of the United Arab Emirates,p.6.
25. Saad al-Kubaisi. (2004). UAE society, Chapter X : Social Development, Sociology program, College of Humanities and Social Sciences,UAE University. P.215.
26. The report of the Ministry of Social Affairs - the United Arab Emirates, 2011-2012, Executive Summary. P.40
27. <http://www.uaepedia.ae>.
28. The report of the Ministry of Social Affairs - the United Arab Emirates, 2011-2012, Executive Summary. P.26.
29. The report of the Ministry of Social Affairs - the United Arab Emirates, 2011-2012, Executive Summary. P.25-31.
30. <http://www.uaepedia.ae/index.U4cHYXKazCQ#/PHP>
31. <http://www.uaepedia.ae/index.U4cHYXKazCQ#/PHP>
32. <http://www.uaepedia.ae/index.U4cHYXKazCQ#/PHP>
33. <http://www.uaepedia.ae/index>.
34. <http://www.uaepedia.ae/index>.
35. <http://www.uaepedia.ae/index>.
36. <http://www.uaepedia.ae/index>

- ^{37.} <http://www.uaepedia.ae/index>.
- ^{38.} Constitution of the United Arab Emirates (2000).
- ^{39.} After the new ministerial decree education becomes compulsory up to the secondary stage.
- ^{40.} <http://www.uaepedia.ae>
- ^{41.} Fortune Magazine (17). Emirates Women : the road to the summit. December 2012. p. 51.
- ^{42.} Saad al-Kubaisi. (2004). UAE society, Chapter X: Social Development, Sociology program, College of Humanities and Social Sciences, UAE University. P.210.
- ^{43.} <http://www.alittihad.ae/wajhatdetails.php?id=78014>
- ^{44.} <http://www.alittihad.ae/wajhatdetails.php?id=78014>
- ^{45.} <http://www.mcycd.ae/ar/theministry/pages/centerslisting.aspx>
- ^{46.} www.abudabi.ae/portal/faces/ar/departments/department_detail?docName=ADEGP_DF
- ^{47.} <http://m.emiratesfoundation.ae/ar>
- ^{48.} <http://m.emiratesfoundation.ae/ar>
- ^{49.} <http://m.emiratesfoundation.ae/ar>
- ^{50.} <http://www.alkhaleej.ae/mob/detailed/a922472b-3d18-4d8e-80b8-4c95e68a97f2/bda68614-52b6-4d6c-92d5-57330905931d>
- ^{51.} <http://www.potential.com/ar/for/um-topic>
- ^{52.} http://www.potential.com/displayArticle.php?article_id=5406
- ^{53.} http://www.potential.com/displayArticle.php?article_id=5406
- ^{54.} http://www.potential.com/displayArticle.php?article_id=5406
- ^{55.} Research study. Government housing strategies (in collaboration with Sheikh Zayed Housing Program). 1 Nov. 2008- 15 Feb. 2009. P.6-7.
- ^{56.} http://www.iskan.gov.ae/SSH_P.aspx
- ^{57.} Research study. Government housing strategies (in collaboration with Sheikh Zayed Housing Program).1 Nov. 2008- 15 Feb. 2009. P.8.
- ^{58.} http://www.iskan.gov.ae/SSH_P.aspx
- ^{59.} <http://www.iskan.gov.ae/SGHC.aspx>
- ^{60.} Talaat Ibrahim Eldemerdash. The Economics of Health Services. the city library, Zagazig, Egypt. 2000. P.34.
- ^{61.} Ibid.

62. Ibid.
63. www.seha.ae/seha/ar/Pages/Daman.aspx
64. www.seha.ae/seha/ar/Pages/Daman.aspx
65. www.dubai.ae/ar/lists/Articles/DispForm.aspx?ID=101&category=citizens
66. www.dubai.ae/ar/lists/Articles/DispForm.aspx?ID=101&category=citizens
67. <http://www.zhic.ae/ar/Default.aspx>
68. <http://www.albayan.ae/across-the-uae/1138359216489-2006-01-28-1.886306>
69. Saad al-Kubaisi. (2004). UAE society, Chapter X : Social Development, Sociology program, College of Humanities and Social Sciences, UAE University. P.210.
70. <http://www.alkhaleej.ae/alkhaleej/page/d05c2bff-c2d7-4f51-afa4-442374f82e03>
71. <http://www.alittihad.ae/details.php?id=2633&y=2012>
72. Osman Sirajuddin Fateh AlRahman. Social welfare between State Conventions and Local Laws : the United Arab Emirates as a Model.
73. http://strategicvisions.ecssr.com/ECSSR/ECSSR_DOCDATA_PRO_EN/Resources/PDF/Rua_Strategia/Rua-Issue-04/rua04_052.

References

- Al-Kubaisi Saad. (2004). UAE society, Chapter X : Social Development, Sociology program, College of Humanities and Social Sciences, UAE University.
- Al-Mutawa,Mohammed Abdullah. (1991). Development and Social Change in the United Arab Emirates. Lebanon Printing Company. Beirut: Dar Alfarabi.
- Al-Rahman,Osman Sirajuddin Fateh. Social welfare between State Conventions and Local Laws : the United Arab Emirates as a Model.
- Asaad Mohamed Tuhaih and Yosef Sharab. (2011). *Emirati Society : Originality and Modernity*. AlFalah Library. UAE.
- Awad Allah, Al-Taher Mohammed and Khaled Ahmed Mustafa Hajar. (1995). Theory and Practice in the Field of Development of Policy Formulation. The Ministry of Higher Education, Umm Al Qura University Scientific Research Center. The social science research series. Saudi Arabia
- Eldemerdash Talaat Ibrahim. (2000). The Economics of Health Services. the city library, Zagazig, Egypt.

- Kadhim Aqil. (2014). Population and Urban Areas, Chapter VII of Emirati Studies. UAEU.
- ----- (2000). The United Arab Emirates, A.D. 600 to The Present: A Socio-Discursive Transformation in the Arabian Gulf (Dubai: Gulf Book Center).

Websites

- www.abudabi.ae/portal/faces/ar/departments/department_detail?docName=ADEGP_DF
- [http:m.emiratesfoundation.ae/ar](http://m.emiratesfoundation.ae/ar)
- [http:m.emiratesfoundation.ae/ar](http://m.emiratesfoundation.ae/ar)
- [-http/www.uaepedia.ae](http://www.uaepedia.ae)
- www.seha.ae/seha/ar/Pages/Daman.aspx
- www.dubai.ae/ar/lists/Articles/DispForm.aspx?ID=101&category=citizens
- <http://www.uaepedia.ae/index. #/PHP>
- <http://www.uaepedia.ae/index.U4cHYXKazCQ#المؤشرات/>
- [tthp://arkipe.widia.org/wiki](http://arkipe.widia.org/wiki)
- <http://www.alamuae.com/uae/showtopics-814.html>
- <http://www.mohamoon-uae.com/default.aspx?action=displayNews&type=3&ID=8426>
- http://strategicvisions.ecssr.com/ECSSR/ECSSR_DOC DATA_PRO_EN/Resources/PDF/Rua_Strategia/Rua-Issue-04/rua04_052.PDF
- www.emaratalyoum.com/local-section/other/2013-11-11-1.622302
- [.http://www.albayan.ae/across-the-uae/news-and-reports/2013-12-12-1.2019220](http://www.albayan.ae/across-the-uae/news-and-reports/2013-12-12-1.2019220)
- <http://www.iskan.gov.ae/SGHC.aspx>
- <http://www.uaepedia.ae/index>
- <http://www.alittihad.ae/wajhatdetails.php?id=78014>
- <http://www.mcycd.ae/ar/theministry/pages/centerslisting.aspx>
- http://www.iskan.gov.ae/SSH_P.aspx
- <http://www.zhic.ae/ar/Default.aspx>
- <http://www.albayan.ae/across-the-uae/1138359216489-2006-01-28-1.886306>
- <http://www.alkaleej.ae/mob/detailed/a922472b-3d18-4d8e-80b8-4c95e68a97f2/bda68614-52b6-4d6c-92d5-57330905931d>

Chapter Eight

Population and Urban Regions in the UAE



Chapter Eight

Population and Urban Regions in the UAE

Dr. Aqil Kazim

Introduction

This chapter explores population and urban growth in the UAE society. The current chapter includes two sections dealing with the argument integral to related demographic issues. The first section discusses the UAE demographic structure and its variables whereas the second section analyzes the development of urban regions in the country. Apparently, a study of population is contingent upon a demographic investigation of society. By analyzing available data, vital events and population censuses, such demographic investigation involves a scientific pursuit of the causes resulting in demographic changes and the consequences of these changes.¹

Demography is concerned with an analysis of the population variables in terms of size and growth in addition to other population factors, such as births, deaths, and migration. As a science, demography also examines the relationship between population variables and economic, political, social and cultural development. In a related context, it is noteworthy to argue that an urban area is defined as an area which is larger than a hundred square kilometers including within its territory a central city and several small towns in addition to shopping centers. It may also include academic cities, sports, health, industrial and recreational centers besides small villages. An urban area is also supposed to include open green landscapes interconnected through a network of highways and communication technology.

Population in the UAE Society

This section discusses the population of the UAE society through the main sources of information such as population censuses and available vital data on demographics. The UAE is one of the countries that attributes utmost importance to the population data at the federal and local levels since the establishment of the UAE Union. This policy aims to take advantage of the proper planning of the community, enhance the awareness of the citizens, propose solutions crucial to policy development and decision-making in addition to planning in the short and long terms. For the fulfillment of the preceding objectives, the federal government had created the Ministry of Planning since the establishment of the UAE Federation for the purpose of obtaining demographic information and population data collection. Within the parameters of this strategy, the UAE has conducted the first census in 1975. In the period from 1975 to 1985 the UAE continued to process a census every five years. Afterwards, the government conducted a census every ten years. The last two censuses were conducted in 1995 and 2005 and currently the government has started the preparations for the 2015 census.²

The census is a comprehensive statistical process carried out by the UAE to count the population and collect related economic and social information through direct visits to every person or every family at a specific time once every five or ten years. Eventually, this data is supposed to be published in a special book.³ Concerning vital registration of events, it is obvious that it involves a procedure carried out by the UAE government during one calendar year with the purpose of the registration of vital incidents and events. Vital

events include the registration of births, deaths and immigration cases, and cases of marriage and divorce, and traffic accidents as they occur.⁴ Prior to the year 1976, there was a registration mechanism recording cases of births and deaths that take place in hospitals and cities in the UAE, as well as births and deaths for expatriates in various regions of the country.⁵ The UAE began to apply the vital events registration system since 1976. Afterwards, the registration of vital events became mandatory by the force of law for all residents of the state of the UAE, whether nationals or expatriates. For example, a newly born baby must be registered within one month from the date of his/her birth.⁶ For deaths cases, the deceased must be registered during the seventy-two hours from the date of his/her death.⁷

The best data for demographic analysis is the available population data to be taken directly from population censuses, vital registration, and official reports prepared by the federal and local government departments. Most of these data on population contain information regarding population numbers, gender, age, the level of health, the number of births / deaths, laborers' wages, working hours, unemployment and crime rates.⁸ This pre-prepared data became available in the UAE in paper and electronic forms. The data is available to all in several languages and is posted on the site of the National Statistics center t and the sites of local statistics centers as well.⁹

These sources of population data are of methodological importance to the mechanism by which demography operates. Demography is the science which studies population statistically. It is concerned with the facts that can be articulated in a quantitative manner. These facts are based on population numbers, and

measuring the rates of population besides an analysis of population variables, population size, population growth, population structure as well as monitoring the main factors in population growth, such as births, deaths, and immigration, in addition to an examination of the relationship between population and economic, social and cultural development.

The research argument in this section engages a method of quantitative analysis, in addition to a statistical and historical comparative approach depending on the description and analysis of the causes and consequences of population changes through the study of available population data integral to the various stages of the history of the UAE society. In this context, the first section deals with the following topics: population size, population growth, and factors inherent in population growth in addition to related demographic characteristics and population diversity.

Population Size

The size of the population means the number of individuals in a specific place at a specific period of time. Thereupon, changes in population size should be monitored throughout different time periods.¹⁰ The size of the population was not stable in the UAE community and the numbers in the local population increased and decreased from time to time due to economic, political, social and cultural circumstances peculiar to the UAE region in different periods. The population statistics related to the periods before the foundation of the UAE Federation were scarce due to the lack of major sources of required information, such as population censuses data. In this connection it is relevant to state that the census of the population of the

UAE in 1968 was not comprehensive or accurate.¹¹

Through the collection of data from different sources, a general perception of the size of the population in the UAE in the pre-Union periods could be formulated. After the establishment of the Union, demographic data has become more abundant and accurate due to the concern given by the UAE government with regard to population censuses and the registration of vital events. Table (1) below shows the historical development of the size of the UAE population.

Examining the table reveals several changes in the size of the population in different places and times in the present and the future. The available data shows the increase or decrease or stability in the size of the population rates by scrutinizing the population growth factors and their relationship with economic, social, political and cultural circumstances experienced by the UAE society. According to the data in the table, the size of the population of the UAE area in 1800 was almost about 390,000 people due to the expansion of the AlQawasem naval force which dominated the economy and trade activity in the Indian Ocean.¹² In 1913 there was a decrease in the size of the population to 200,000 people despite the fact that this period is considered as the peak of prosperity and development of the pearl trade in the Gulf region.¹³ The decrease in the population numbers is due to the control of the colonial British forces of the Arabian Gulf and the Emirates region in the period following the 1820. As a result of colonization the number of the operating ports in the UAE region and local commercial ships were reduced.¹⁴

Table (1)
population growth in The UAE (1800-2015)

Year	Population Size	Change Rate	Year	Population Size	Change Rate
1800	390,000		1990	1,920,000	+39.1%
1913	200,000	-95%	1995	2,410,000	+25.5%
1950	70,000	-65%	2000	2,900,000	+19.9%
1970	226,000	+222.9%	2005	4,106,427	+41.6%
1975	560,000	+147.8%	2010	8,248,865	+100.9%
1980	1,016,000	+81.4%	2012	9,260,100	+12.3%
1985	1,380,000	+35.8%	2015	10,765,000	+16.3%

This table is based on censuses from 1975 to 2005 to 2010 and according to the Ittihad Newspaper Report 2015 and the World Bank Report 2013.¹⁵

In 1950, a decrease in the size of the population of the UAE area happened and their number was reduced to 70,000 compared to 200,000 in 1913. The population decrease was due to the collapse of the pearl industry in the Gulf region at the end of the twenties and early thirties of the last century as a result of the proliferation of the Japanese cultivated pearls in the commercial markets in addition to the collapse of global equity markets in the United States in 1929 and the subsequent global economic downturn, which led to a lack of demand for the Gulf Pearls. The population decline was also due to the Economic Depression which reached culmination with the outbreak of the Second World War that led to the collapse of the economic situation in the Emirates. This

condition subsequently led to the deterioration of the standard of living and the level of health-care resulting in the spread of diseases, unemployment and poverty and the migration of young people abroad.¹⁶

According to the table above, it is noted that the size of the population in 1970 reached 227 000 due to the economic growth in the UAE region. For example, at the end of the fifties and sixties of the twentieth century, the Emirate of Dubai turned into a center for re-export after the implementation of administrative and economic projects including the establishment of the Dubai Municipality, the Dubai Electricity water Authority, the telecommunications company in addition to the establishment of hospitals and airports and the development of the port of Dubai and the road network as well as the creek of Dubai..... etc.¹⁷ In Abu Dhabi, the administrative and economic projects began at the end of the fifties of the preceding century after the discovery of oil in 1958. The oil revenues significantly participated in the economic development of the Emirate of Abu Dhabi, especially after Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan came to power in 1966. The founder of the Federation began to develop the administrative and economic projects in the Emirate in a vigorous manner.¹⁸ In the mid- sixties of the last century the northern Emirates got economic support via The Office of the Trucial States Sheikhs Council and through the mechanism of the Trucial States Development Fund. The goal of the Fund was to help the Northern Emirates in the field of education, health and others. The Emirate of Abu Dhabi contributed to most of the budget of this Fund after Sheikh Zayed took the reins of power in the country.¹⁹

In 1975 the size of the UAE population reached 560,000 people. This was a

period of political and economic upheaval ushering in a new phase of the history of the UAE due to the foundation of the UAE Federation in December 2, 1971 and the subsequent overall economic development as a result of the investment of the oil revenues in the development of the infrastructure after the increase of oil prices in the aftermath of the Arab-Israeli war in 1973. The UAE ‘s oil production had risen from 1.2 million barrels in 1972 to 1.7 million barrels per day in 1975. Further, the price of a barrel of oil rose from 2.54 \$ in 1972 to 15.49 \$ in 1975.²⁰ Simultaneously, the size of the population, according to the table (1), continued to increase in the years after 1975 until it reached 4,106,427 people in 2005.

It is also observed that the size of the population doubled in 2010 as it was estimated at 8,248,865 people thanks to the rapid economic development, especially in the services sector in general and in the real-estate sector in particular after the issuance of the freehold real-estate law. This period coincided with a boom in the price of oil, bringing it to more than 100 \$ a barrel.²¹ There was an increased in the size of the population in 2012, bringing it to 9.26007 million people and it is expected to reach 10.765 million in 2015.²²

Population Growth

From a demographic perspective, population growth means changes in population rates positively or negatively. Population growth is the output of subtracting the size of the population during a previous period from their size during a subsequent period. The question that arises in this context is : What are the immediate causes that lead to the change in population size from time to time? The answer is that there are two reasons for population change. These reasons are due to either the birth of new individuals in the community or the death of members of the same community.

The rise in number of births compared to the number of deaths in a specific period means an increase in the size of population. In demography, this process is called the natural increase of a population. Human societies are open spaces where individuals enter and others leave therefore there was another reason for population increase. This reason is contingent upon the difference between the number of people who join a given community via immigration and those who leave the same community at the same period of time. Population growth rapidly occurs with the increase in the number of immigrants into the country compared with the number of immigrants going outside the country and vice versa.²³ Apparently the net migration rate is either low or high.

Looking at the population growth in the UAE region through table (1), it is noted that it passed through a number of different points of time where change is characterized by the movement and mobility of the population either towards the negative direction as a result of a decrease of the population or toward a positive growth due to the increase in the population size. Through a study of the percentage change, one can observe the difference in population growth between the different historical periods in the Emirates Society. As mentioned earlier, there are three factors dominating population growth: namely, births, deaths, and migration.

In the period from 1800 to 1913, the UAE the region experienced an enormous decline in the population growth and the negative growth rate was estimated at 95%. Although the year 1913 was one of the best times of economic recovery and prosperity with regard to the pearl industry, the period after the year 1820 and in the aftermath of the English occupation of the Gulf region witnessed a deterioration in commercial ships and foreign trade besides the collapse of the historical role of the UAE region in

the business of re-export of the commodities and goods brought by the merchants and sailors. This historical collapse is the reason for local migrations to countries outside the UAE region. The same historical collapse resulted in an increase in mortality numbers which negatively affected the rate of the natural population growth in all the regions of the Emirates because all these areas were interrelated, indivisible and dependent on each other.²⁴ For example, the population of the UAE belonging to the Alliance of AlQawasem was more than 390,000 people in 1800, but that number shrank to 50,750 inhabitants in 1900.²⁵

In the period from 1913 to 1950, the growth rate was very low and negative growth was 65%. This period came after the gradual collapse of the pearl industry in the Arabian Gulf and the UAE which led to the deterioration of the positive natural population growth.²⁶ Gradual economic collapse also led in this period to transform the Emirates region into a territory which expelled its population, especially at the end of the thirties and forties and early fifties of the last century. Equally, migrations from abroad to this area reached a standstill.²⁷ The main reason behind the population collapse is due to the British colonialists' policy. In the period between 1869 and 1945, the British colonial authorities linked the region with the world capitalist markets through the production of a single commodity, which was the pearl. After 1820, economic devastation was inevitable due to the lack of alternative economic patterns in the UAE region.²⁸

Despite the rise in the crude mortality in general and the mortality rate of infants and children in particular, the values of the community in this period, which encouraged frequent and multiple childbearing in addition to early marriage traditions integral to the requirements of social status contributed to the balance of births and deaths and

protected the community from exposure to the risk of extinction.²⁹

The period from 1950 to 1970 was characterized by the beginning of developmental changes and transformation at all levels throughout the entire region of the Emirates, including administrative organization and building institutions and government departments in addition to the establishment of infrastructure such as electricity, water, telecommunications, ports and road networks. Population growth has been increasing in this period (1950- 1970) as a result of external migration, especially temporary labor which was brought in to fill the shortage of local labor. But as a result of the British domination of the region most development projects were controlled by English companies that completely relied on cheap labor forces recruited from the Indian sub-continent because of their abundance and availability and their willingness to work outside India. The Indian labor force contributed to the increasing profits of companies undergoing existing development projects. Moreover, the Indian labor force was peaceful from a political perspective in light of Britain's colonial experience in India.³⁰ This period witnessed an improvement in the level of population health, which contributed to a reduction in mortality leading to a high birth rate compared to the previous period. According to the table above, the population growth rate in 1970 had become too high and reached a positive growth ratio estimated at 222.9 %, which is four times equal to the previous period.

The previous table shows the period from 1975 to the present day where the UAE population continued to grow. According to the table above, the positive growth of the population was due to natural increases. For example temporary external migration has actually contributed to the population growth which was doubled several times. In 1975 the population growth was very high, and the rising ratio stood at 147.8 %.

The UAE population in this short period has increased more than twice due to the foundation of the UAE Federation and the high oil prices coupled with an increase in revenues. Furthermore, the use of the oil revenues was used by the government in infrastructure development in addition to the provision of essential services to the people. The UAE government has built schools, hospitals, housing besides the delivery of electricity, water to the houses and the pavement of the roads... etc.

In this scenario and due to the lack of Emirati manpower, the private companies which have implemented the previously mentioned giant projects had to bring labor from overseas, especially from the Indian sub- continent which has become a model for manual labor since the fifties of the twentieth century. After the year 1980, strong infrastructure was available but the oil prices fell down which triggered other economic sectors to contribute aggressively in the Gross Domestic Production – GDP. Afterwards, the dependence on oil retreated to a large extent and there was a slight drop in net external migration rate compared with 1980; however, the natural growth rate continued to rise in this period.

In the years between 1980 and 2005 there was a stabilized rate of change in population growth but the rising ratio was not substantial. Subsequently, the population change rate started to decrease. But in 1990, the population growth rate rose again to 39.1%, and in 2005 the ratio had risen to 41.6 %.

In 2010 the population was doubled again and the ratio of population change reached 100.9 % I due to enormous population growth. The steady population rise was due to higher income resulting from the increase in oil exports and foreign investments, which have doubled several times in the period between 2005-2010. The population rise was also due to the increased external migration to the UAE after

the government granted of long-term residence permits for non-UAE citizens who owned properties in the freehold areas in after 2005.

The UAE state has invested in large and distinctive development projects especially in the field of infrastructure such as the construction of Sheikh Khalifa Port in Abu Dhabi, the development of Abu Dhabi International Airport in addition to the renovation of Dubai International Airport and the establishment of Al Maktoum Airport.....etc. The preceding developmental growth included distinctive development that has occurred in this period involving the establishment of joint stock companies such as Emaar, Aldar and RAK for Properties. These companies and other joint-stock companies contributed to the real-estate renaissance era in the UAE and related services including giant projects. These public and private projects have helped to attract large numbers of temporary labor to the UAE. Therefore, high natural population growth continued in the period between 2005 and 2010 among UAE citizens. Population growth also continued in the expatriate communities after the stability of a large number of immigrant labor with their families in the UAE. In 2012, an increase of population change rate continued and population is expected to rise in the coming years. It will continue to grow because of the flux of temporary foreign migration and the natural growth of the local population. As a whole the crude mortality rate in the world amounted to 9 out of every 1,000 of the population of the globe.³¹

Population Growth Factors

As mentioned earlier, population growth means an increase or decrease or stability in the population. There are three factors that influence population growth including the rates of deaths, births and immigration. In this context,

the following argument explores the connection between the rates of deaths and births as well as migration and the rates of economic, social and cultural development in the contemporary UAE society.

Deaths

In October 2005 and according to the report of the World Population Prospects of the United Nations, the United Arab Emirates was announced as the country with the lower crude mortality rate in the world. The crude mortality rate in the United Arab Emirates is 1 out of every 1,000 of the population. The Central African Republic is the country with the highest rate of crude mortality in the world where the crude death rate was 18 per 1,000 of the population. The United Arab Emirates continued to occupy first place globally in terms of lower crude mortality rate in spite of the slight change in the mortality rate in 2010, which reached 1.34 out of every 1,000 people in the country. Compared to previous years, it is noted that the crude death rate in the UAE in 2000 was 2 out of every 1,000 of the population and in 1950 the rate was 20 per 1000 person of the population.³²

In another report on life expectancy at birth it is clear that the rate of life expectancy or survival of males and females in the UAE is (79 years) which is higher than its counterpart in the USA (78 years) and it is equal to its counterpart in Britain (79 years). The top average life expectancy age rate in the world is in Japan (82 years).³³

In 1950 the life expectancy rate was 48 years old in the UAE whereas the average survival age in 2000 was 73 years.³⁴ Regarding the deaths of children under five years in the UAE, it is significant to state that the rate in 2013 was 7 per 1,000 child born alive whereas the world average in 2013 was 48 per 1,000 child.³⁵ The deaths of children under five years rate in the UAE in 2000 was 10.47 per 1,000 children and in

1950 it was 150 per 1000 children. Regarding the babies who are less than a year, the death rate of those who were in the UAE in 2013 was 7.06 infants per 1,000 children born alive. In 2013 the global rate of infant mortality was 49.4 per 1,000 children. The infant mortality rate in the UAE in 2000 was 8.19 per 1000 live babies³⁶ and in 1950 the rate was 130 deaths per 1000 babies born alive.³⁷

The improvement in the infant mortality rate under five years and the rate of improvement in longevity is one of the most important indicators of the improvement in the mortality rate in the community. In this scenario, it is noteworthy to argue that most of the deaths in human societies took place either in the age under five years because of weakened immune systems in children or in the life expectancy age because in old age human beings become more vulnerable to health risks including chronic diseases and are subjected to manifestations of physical weakness generally.

The UAE has been able to achieve the most advanced level in the world in terms of lower mortality rates, which helped in the natural population growth. The main reasons that led to the natural population growth comprise economic development, high income level, cultural awareness, and women's education besides public and private hygiene as well as the availability of a free health system for all people through public and private sectors. The health system in the UAE has rapidly developed in recent years through the availability of doctors and modern hospitals and health facilities and drugs.³⁸ Next to the deaths of children under five years, and the mortality of the elderly as indicators of mortality, in the UAE, the community encountered deaths associated with traffic accidents, especially among young people.

According to the 2011 statistics, the number of deaths in traffic accidents was 1272 persons. The death rate was 12 % among Emiratis which means 159 deaths. In

total, the highest percentage of deaths was in the age group from 18 to 40 years old of all nationalities.³⁹ There are other deaths which are linked to obesity and related heart diseases and diabetes, as well as high-blood pressure. Reports issued by the Health Policies Sector at the Ministry of Health confirmed that the statistics during the past two decades has shown that 52 % of the total deaths recorded in the country are attributed to chronic diseases. Chronic diseases constitute the major cause of death in the UAE. At the top of these diseases come ailments such as cardiovascular diseases, which amounted to 26 % of the total deaths, according to 2010 statistics.⁴⁰

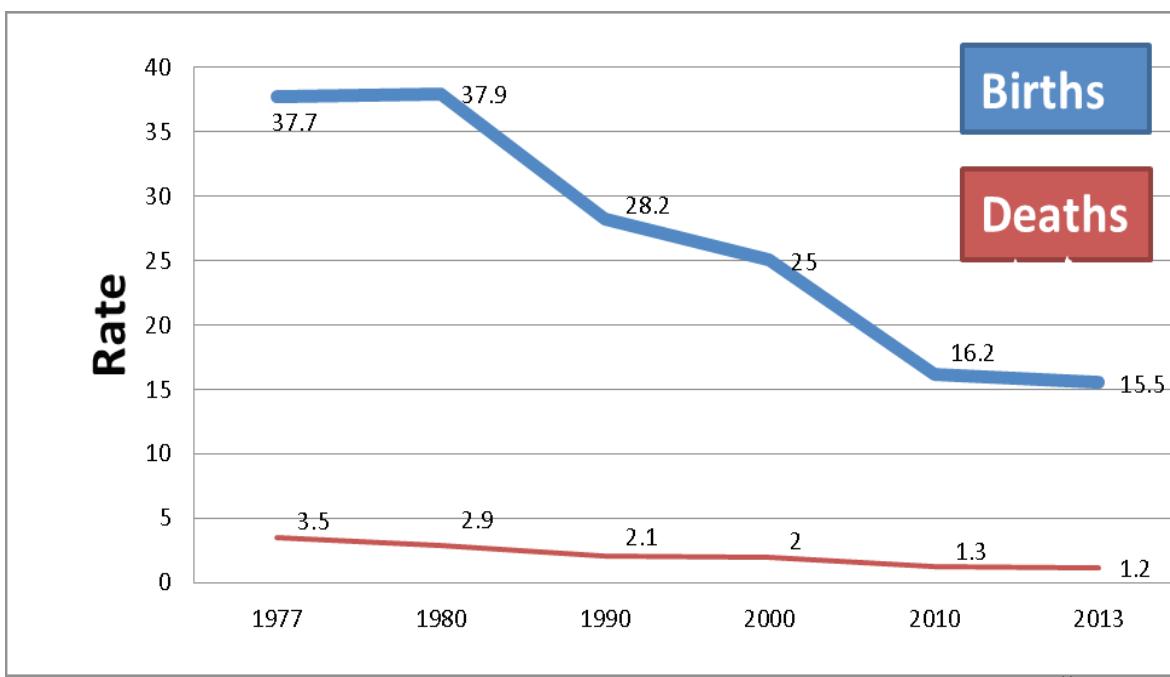
Births

The second factor integral to the phenomena of population growth, as we mentioned earlier, is the birth. Quite obviously, human society procreates itself through the process of birth. Demographically, the phenomenon known as natural population occurs if births increase and deaths decrease. The natural decrease or increase in population could be illuminated through a consideration of the relationship between births and deaths as follows: increase or decrease = (number of births minus number of deaths) and the difference between births and deaths s is called either natural shortages or natural increase in population rates. Currently, death rates in the UAE have dropped significantly compared to previous years. Globally the death rates decreased due to social and health development. The rates of birth and fertility are influenced by economic, cultural and social changes in society such as the delay of the marriage age, and the high cost of marriage in addition to the divorce rate and the birth control rates.⁴¹

In our study of the birth phenomenon, the concept of the crude birth rate has to be clarified. Crude birth rate means the number of births per 1,000 of the population

in a specific community at a specific period of time. The term fertility means the biological ability of women for pregnancy and childbirth. The child-bearing age is globally determined to be between 15 and 49 years. The total fertility rate = dividing the number of births by the number of women of childbearing ages (15-49) multiplied by 100. The ability to reproduce varies among different age groups. Reproduction decreases in the reproductive age group that are less than 20 years and it increases in the age group between 20 and 30 years. A woman's ability to have children gradually decreases after she becomes 30 years old.⁴² In the UAE, the crude birth rate in 2010 reached 16.2 births per a thousand people whereas the global average in the same year was 20.3 births per 1,000 people. The birth rate in 2005 was 19.6 births per thousand of the population, and in 2000 it was 25 births per thousand of the population.⁴³

Figure (1)
Natural Population Increase Rate in the UAE (1977-2013)
(births and deaths per 1000 people)



This Table is designed according to the data obtained from the UAE Statistics Centre - 1980-2012.⁴⁴

Figure (1) above displays the direction of the natural population increase rate among the UAE citizens through births – deaths statistics. The figure shows a gradual decrease in the rate of natural population increase in the UAE. In 1977 the natural increase rate was 27.5 but the rate dropped to 16.2 in 2013. The sharp decline of mortality rate in the UAE due to the impact of development was ironically coupled with a significant drop in the birth rate resulting in lower natural population growth. The natural population growth rate which was 34.2 people per 1000 population in 1977 dropped to 14.3 persons per 1,000 population in 2013. The main reason for this sharp decline in the crude birth rate is the decline in the total fertility rate. As mentioned earlier there is a specific age of a woman's life in which procreation is possible, and there are a range of social causes affecting the ability to reproduce. The fertility total rate of women in the UAE in 2010 in the age group (15 – 49) years was 2.3 children per woman, while the rate among expatriate female residents (in the UAE) was 1.8 children per woman. The global average total fertility rate in the same period of time was 2.59 children per woman which means that the total fertility rate in the UAE was less than the global average. If we compare the total fertility rate of Emirati women in different years, one will observe that the rate was 5.2 births per woman of childbearing age in 1980, then it became 4.5 births per woman of childbearing age in 2000 and finally it became 2.3 births per woman of childbearing age in 2010. The rate dropped further to become 1.8 births per woman of childbearing age in 2013.⁴⁵

Among the main reasons that contributed to the decline in the total fertility rate for Emirati women was the delaying of the marriage age for the majority of women. Most studies indicate that 62.7 % of the females in the UAE society are married after

the age of 24, compared with 11.5 % of marrying Emirati women in 1975. It is natural that a woman who delayed her marriage age also has less chances of giving birth to children. One reason for the delay of marriage for women in the UAE is their pursuit of university education. Emirati females accounted for 67 % of the total number of students in higher education in the UAE. The level of education of married women also has an impact on her birth rate. Studies suggest that the number of births with regard to educated women are less than the number of births on the part of non-educated woman.⁴⁶

Women's work is among the main reasons for the decline in the total fertility rate in the UAE. Some government reports indicate that the decline in the number of births in the country is due to the increasing employment opportunities for women and the enthusiasm of large numbers of women to work in recent years. This attitude makes them delay childbearing. Some women work in occupations which require great physical effort and others become subjected to pressure at work which undermined their opportunities of childbearing limiting the possibility of pregnancy and child-birth.⁴⁷

One of the factors that contributed to the decline in the fertility rate in the UAE is the high divorce rate among age groups in fertility age. Conversely, high income rates, higher standards of living, urban life-style, proliferation of nuclear family tradition and the use of family planning methods resulted into the collapse of the fertility rate in the UAE.⁴⁸

Migration / Emigration / Immigration

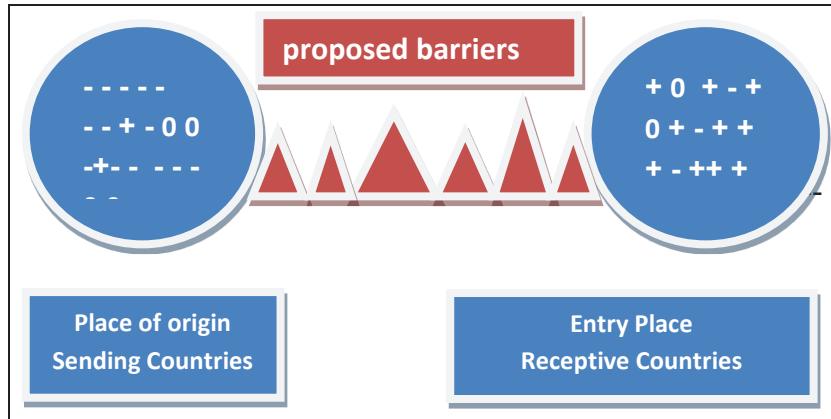
Migration is the process of human movement from one place to another. Migration

is the third factor contributing to the population growth. Through examining the deaths and births rates one can recognize the change in the rate of population growth, and the size and characteristics of the demographics of a specific area in a certain period of time. The immigrant is a person who moved from his/her initial place of origin (and passed the administrative or political boundaries) to a host community for living and permanent residence.⁴⁹ Migration at the present time is a key element integral to population analysis. The meaning of migration varies according to the time, distance and place targeted by the emigrant. Migration decisions are determined by the family and marital status variables in addition to the age and sex of the emigrant as well as the laws of the dispatching and receiving countries.⁵⁰ Migration to the UAE which includes the temporary immigration of the labor force in order to work, or trade, or stay temporarily does not apply to the definition of global migration. Migration to the United Arab Emirates is compatible with the concept of temporary immigration which means migration from a specific home country for temporary work, or temporary residence followed by the return of the immigrant to his/her homeland after the end of his interim term or temporary residence in the host country.⁵¹ In the UAE, there are laws that allow the entry and exit of temporary labor in an orderly manner. These laws encourage legal immigration for temporary work - if there is a need by the government or the private sector, or multinational companies or individuals- through work contracts between the employer and the worker/s. These laws were able to limit the indiscriminate and illegal immigration.⁵²

By studying the migration data reflected in Figure 2 below,⁵³ it is noted that individuals emigrate from their countries for many reasons, including

work. Work is a leading cause of immigration to the UAE. The two circles in figure (2) refer to the two countries involved in the emigration / immigration equation: the dispatching country and the receiving country. These two circles include negative and positive signals and zeroes. The positive signs represent the positive factors favored by the individual who is looking for immigration such as employment, housing, high income, and high standard of living besides the positive characteristics of the place of immigration. Negative signs reflect the factors disfavored by the individual immigrant such as unemployment and low wages in addition to the lack of services. The zeroes refer to the factors neglected and ignored by the emigrant. In the case of immigration, the individual immigrant measures the pros and cons and then decide to immigrate or decline. But there is a set of constraints that must be taken into account such as place of arrival visa and legal problems (according to the UAE law, the temporary immigrant must obtain a work contract before entering the UAE) as well as the cost of the movement from one place to another in addition to the psychological cost and the feeling of alienation... etc.⁵⁴

The immigration rate is measured as follows: Dividing the number of emigrants by the number of population in the middle of a specific period of time at a particular area and multiplying the output number by 100 or 1000. The resulting figure makes it possible to compare the rate of increase in the number of immigrants at a particular place and in a particular time period.⁵⁵ The net immigration rate is the number of immigrants (entrants) to a given country minus the number of emigrants who are departing the same country during a certain period of time.⁵⁶

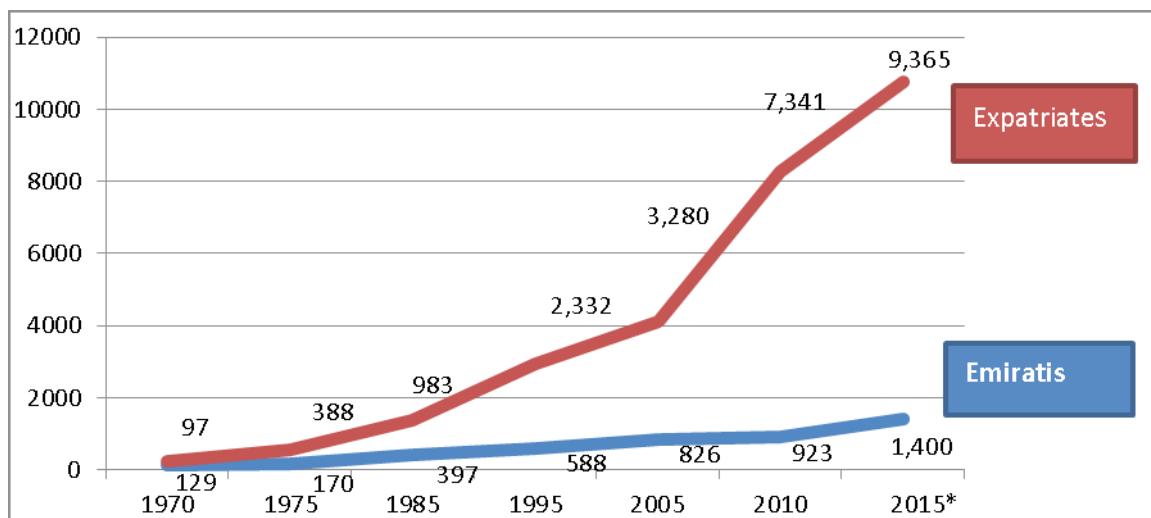
Figure (2) Immigration Form

Foreign migrations of workforce to the UAE region has begun since the middle of the last century and it took four stages. The first phase of immigration began at the end of the middle of the last century when development projects grew up in Dubai, Abu Dhabi and the rest of the Northern Emirates such as the establishment of ports, roads, and supply of electricity, water and other services. Most of the immigrants to the UAE region come from South Asia, especially from India, which was suffering from overpopulation and high unemployment rates. Most of the development projects in this period were dominated by British companies which hired the required working hands from India, a former British colony. Indian laborers were recruited due to the proximity between the UAE and India. Further, Indian laborers were cheap and were able to endure hard labor. The British authorities played a vital role in importing labor from India because of their political domination on the Arabian Gulf region throughout the period of colonization.⁵⁷ On the other side, the local schools, police, banks and administrative institutions rely on Arabic language, which paved the way for

emigration from Arab countries, especially Palestine, Syria, Jordan, Egypt and Sudan. As can be seen from Figure (3) below, immigration contributed to the increase in the population of the UAE region in this period (at the end of the middle of the last century) by 47 %.

The second phase of temporary immigration to the UAE began after the establishment of the Federal Union and continued to 1995. In this period, there was an urgent need to develop the infrastructure, and build a modern state in addition to providing all the requirements of honorable life to the citizens as well as the expansion of ports and airports in coastal cities. This process required recruitment of manpower from abroad due to the magnitude of the projects under process. There was a dire need for external manpower to meet the lack of technical and professional personnel and expertise among the local / national Emiratis.

Figure (3)
Population Growth Trends in the Expatriate Community in UAE 1970 -2015
(Numbers in thousands)



This Table is prepared in accordance to the population censuses (1975, 2005 and 2010) as well as a report published in the Ittihad Newspaper in 2015 and another report released by the World Bank in the year 2013.

The first phase of temporary immigration to the UAE contributed to the formation of the second stage in terms of the immigrants' point of origin, gender and age group (mostly between 15-65) in addition to the availability of jobs and adaptation to the new community. Unlike the first stage of immigrants, the second phase of immigrants became dependent on themselves in providing their needs of all types of consumer goods and services. Figure (3) above clarifies that the population growth in the second phase of immigration which is due to temporary labor has increased from 97 thousand persons in 1970 to 388 thousand persons in 1975. It also increased to 983 thousands in 1985 and it reached 2,000,332 thousands at the end of this stage in 1995. In spite of the collapsing oil prices in the eighties of the last century, the temporary immigration to the UAE continued.

The number of immigrants increased in this period for several reasons including investments in infrastructure in the past years, which have contributed to the provision of health, security, educational, and consumer services. This policy resulted in the development of productive sectors such as factories in addition to the service sectors such as airports, ports, re-export and retail trade facilities besides hotels and restaurants. The preceding reasons encouraged foreign immigration and attracted new immigrants. The temporary immigrants themselves contributed to the immigration boom especially those who were working in the private sector and others who have invested in the retail trade and small/ medium business including workshops, factories, restaurants and hotels. With the expansion of demand for the previous services, the need to temporary labor force increased particularly on the part of the private sector

and the temporary immigrants who contributed to the creation of employment opportunities for their relatives and facilitate their entry to the UAE legally by extracting labor contracts and work permits in their shops and business institutions.

The third stage of immigration (1995-2005) began in the nineties of the last century after the collapse of the Eastern bloc and the end of the cold war as well as the end of the white minority rule in South Africa and after the end of the second Gulf War. This phase is characterized by rapid developments in communication and transportation technology due to the information revolution. In this stage, the world turned into a global capitalist economic system and more engagements took place among different countries through international commercial conventions, which contributed to the expansion of global investments, and the spread of multi -national companies, and global migrations.

The UAE community benefited from the process of development in the infrastructure sector. The infrastructure development in addition to other mega-projects doubled the need for more temporary labor in order to contribute to the expansion in the services and production sectors as well as the free zones and domestic services domains. In the third phase, the nationalities of immigrants varied from country to country and from continent to continent and the causes of migration also varied. Many of the new temporary migrants come from remote destinations and from areas of origin that are thousands of miles far away from the UAE. People immigrated to the UAE from the USA, Russia and the former Russian republics in addition to African countries particularly South Africa. Moreover, many of the Arabs immigrated to the UAE at this stage

including Iraqis and the inhabitants of the Arab Maghreb and the Arabs living in Diaspora.⁵⁸ According to Figure (3) above, there was an increase in population at this stage. The increase rate was 2.00092 million people in 1995, then it increased to four million and 106 thousand persons in 2005. The immigrants constituted 79% of the total population of the country.

The fourth stage of immigration comprises the period from 2005 to the present day. It is a supplement to the previous phase, but it is characterized by the evolution of connections and intersections with the globalization phenomenon. In this stage, the development process became more inclusive especially in the field of real estate. This stage witnessed the establishment of networks of cities and roads, trains, airports, ports, shopping malls and financial centers and educational, health, entertainment, sports, industrial and cognitive cities. The local holding companies in addition to regional and international investments have enormously contributed to the development process due to the fact that the UAE has become a global hub integral to the new international economy in terms of services and re-export. The rise in oil prices in this period profoundly contributed to the magnitude of the achievements. This boom provided an unprecedented employment opportunities for all professions from all nationalities, especially the Europeans, Filipinos, Chinese and the Indians. In this period, new nationalities immigrated to the UAE from remote countries such as Mexico, Argentina and Canada.

According to the data provided in Figure (3), the UAE population has doubled in five years (2005-2010). The total population in 2005 was four million and 106 thousand persons. Then it increased to eight million and 264 thousand people in 2010 and the immigrants constitute 88% of the total population of the country at that time.

It is expected that the total UAE population will rise to ten million and 765 thousand people in 2015 and the total expatriate population is expected to decrease and go down the current ratio.

Characteristics of the Demographic Structure in the UAE

In this section, the characteristics of the Emirati and expatriate population will be analyzed in terms of educational, vocational, gender and age paradigms. Apparently, any data associated with the structure of the population is beneficial to the community in terms of identifying the needs of the population with regard to services and production. For example the educational needs of students in the future could be identified by studying their school age. Being aware of the number of the elderly people determines the range of the requirements of their community with regard to retirement services and elderly health clubs facilities. An assessment of the vitality of the community and its needs to particular jobs could be determined through an awareness of the age groups engaged in work.

The Gender Structure of the UAE Population

Gender population structure means the division of the population into male and female categories. The gender ratio is the number of males per 100 females and it is calculated as follows: Divide the number of males by the number of females and multiply the output by 100. Natural gender ratio in population groups ranges from 95 to 105 males per 100 females.⁵⁹ In the UAE, in the middle of the year 2010, the number of Emirati males reached 479,109 person and the number of Emirati females was 468,888 persons. The gender ratio was calculated as follows : $479,109 \div 468,888 \times 100 = 102$ males per 100 females. This percentage is

considered normal among the Emirati population, and it is noted that the number of males become less than the number of females in their future lives because the mortality rates among females are low compared with the mortality rates among the male community in all age groups.⁶⁰

The Gender Structure of the Expatriate Population

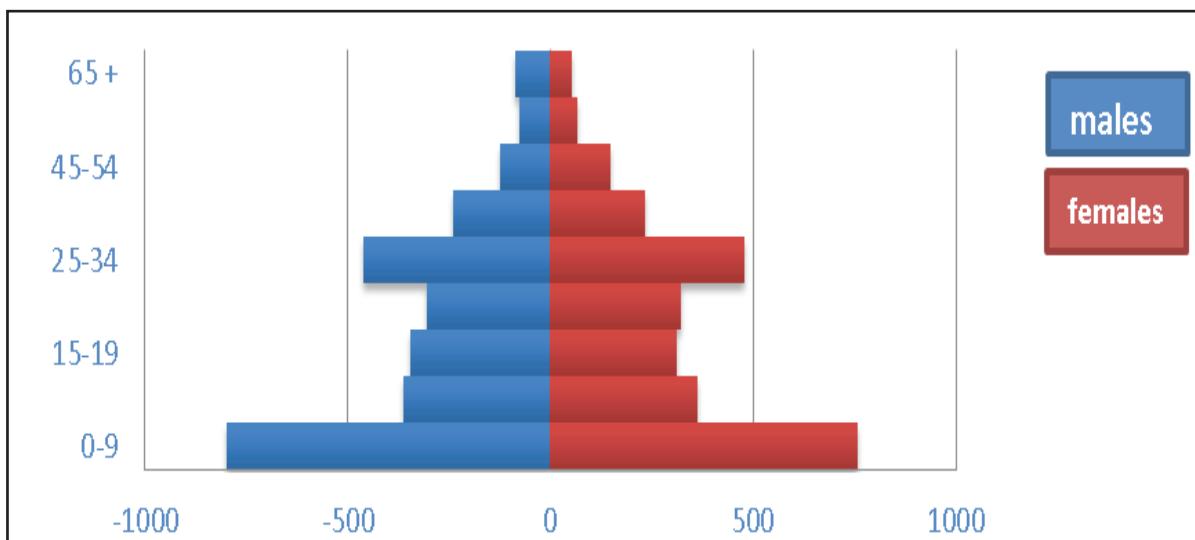
In the case of countries with high rates of immigrants such as the UAE, there is, of course, an increase in the ratio of male population compared with the females. In the UAE, The number of male expatriate population in middle of 2010 reached 5,682,711 persons, and the number of females was estimated at 1,633,362 persons. The gender ratio was calculated as follows: The gender ratio was as follows : $5,682,711 \div 1,633,362 \times 100 = 347.9$ males for every 100 females.⁶¹ This ratio is much higher than the normal rate, and it indicates that most of the immigrants are male population and that the male rate in this case is three times higher. In fact, for every female there are more than three males.

The Age Structure of the UAE Population

The population age structure means the breakdown of the population into different age groups / categories. Through the age distribution of the population at specific places and in specific time periods, one can identify the different age groups and categories of the population and the impact of births, deaths and migration on the population size, gender and ages. Through the age distribution of the population one is also able to recognize different generations and various age groups in the community and how much each age group was influenced by the historical experiences and events that have occurred in their lives. Through

an analysis of the age structure of a particular community one can learn be aware of the nature of its activities and the social needs of its inhabitants. For example, the presence of a high proportion of younger age groups in the community provides an evidence of a high rate of operative young people able to work in the future. Moreover, the presence of a high percentage of old age groups is an evidence of progress in the health sector in the community. Through a scrutiny of different age groups, one can identify their needs including educational and health services.....etc. In this context, the population pyramid is the best way to describe and illuminate the structure of age groups in a given community. Moreover, it is noteworthy to argue that the age and gender population structures of certain area are often affected by past events. Therefore, it is important to confirm that the population pyramid is a record of the events integral to the lives of the population.

Figure (4)
Emirati Population Pyramid per Gender and Age Group



The figure above was prepared according to data obtained from the UAE National Bureau of Statistics. Survey conducted in (2008).

Figure (4) at the top which underlines the age and gender structure of the Emirati citizens through a survey conducted in 2008 by the United Arab Emirates National Bureau of Statistics. The table above contains significant data particularly with regard to the 0-9 age group citizens who were born in the years between 1999 and 2008, besides the age group embracing citizens who exceeded 65 who were born before 1943. The preceding citizens witnessed many historical events, however their number is very limited due to population scarcity in the UAE region at the time of their birth which was estimated at 70 thousand people only. In spite of frequent childbearing at that period, the lack of population and the high mortality rate had a devastating impact on this age group as shown in the figure above.

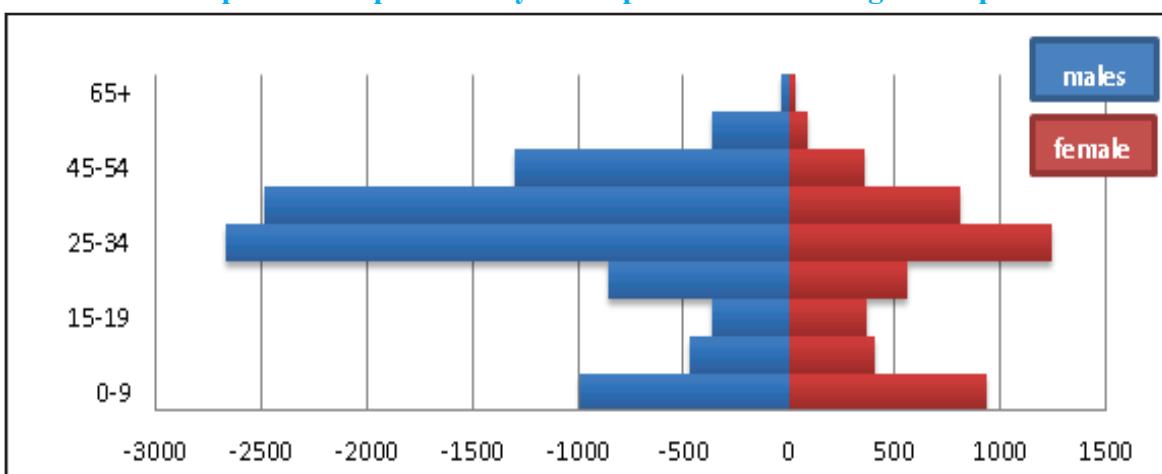
It is expected that the size of the elderly will increase when the largest category (25-34) reach the retirement age. It is also expected that the proportion of the elderly population will rise in 2020 up to 19.4 % of the UAE population, therefore an increase in the facilities and services associated with the elderly community is simultaneously expected.⁶² Figure (4) clearly reveals a state of balance in the numbers of the male and female population in all age groups.

The Age Structure of the Expatriate Population in the UAE

Regarding expatriates, it is accurate that their population pyramid is different from the population pyramid of the Emiratis as referred to in Figure (5) below. It is noted that there is an inflation in the form of the population pyramid particularly in the age category between 25-44 years old, because most of the expatriates in the UAE were part of the workforce, and this age group is considered a vital category for laborers and immigrants. It is also observed that the male ratios in

the population pyramid are higher than the female rate in all age groups except for the (15-19) years category where the male rate is 49.4 % and the female rate constitutes 50.6 % of the total number. Further, the pyramid exposes an increase in the proportion of females in the category between 25-44 years because most of this category is required in the work markets.

Figure (5)
Expatriate Population Pyramid per Gender and Age Group



The figure above was prepared according to data obtained from the United Arab Emirates National Bureau of Statistics. Survey conducted in (2008).

The Educational Standard of the UAE Citizens

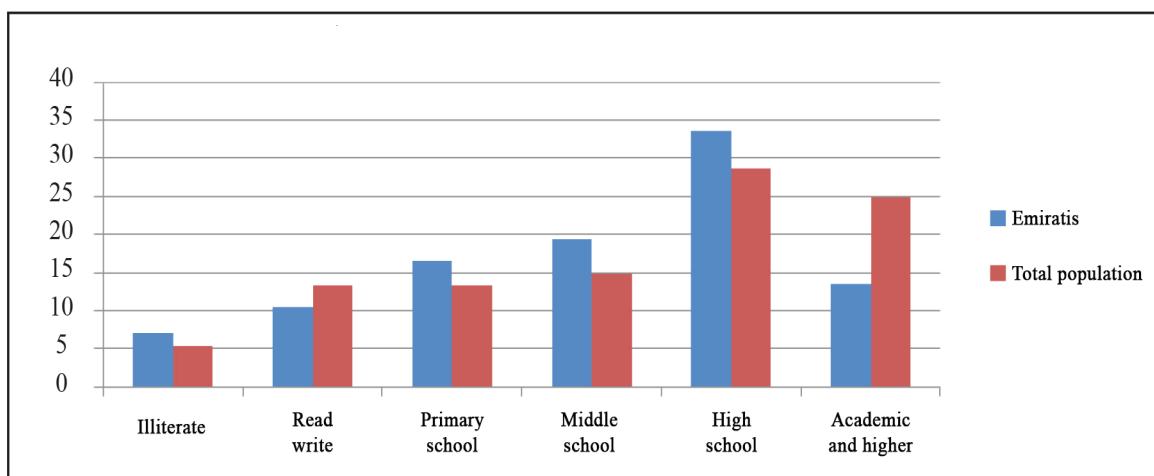
The educational level is one of the important indicators of human development and the progress of society. Through education, members of the community are able to increase their knowledge and skills which subsequently help to increase their productivity and promote their standards of living. Due to education, the income of the educated people, in most societies, is usually have higher than the incomes of the uneducated folks. With regard to the Emirati population pyramid, it is noticed that the large percentage of the citizens are in the pre-25 years age categories which constitute 64.4% since most of them are involved in

the various stages of education particularly because education is compulsory in the early stages and education is also free at all pre-university levels. The chart/figure below reveals that Emiratis who obtained a high school diploma and above constitute 47% and the illiteracy rate among the UAE citizens is frozen at 7%. The chart also shows that the percentage of the Emirati citizens who are able to read and write is 10%. The last group is part of the old-age category including senior citizens who were born prior to the middle of the last century.⁶³

The Educational Standard of the Expatriate Citizens

Figure (6) below refers to the rate of the expatriates who obtained high school diploma and prior educational certificates is estimated at 75% and the ratio of those with a university degree and above only amounted to 24.9 %. The illiteracy rate among the expatriate community is estimated at 5.3%, and the percentage of those who are able to read and write amounted to 13.3%. This shows that the UAE society still depends on work force including skilled, semi-skilled and unskilled laborers.

Figure (6)
The relative distribution of the educational status of the UAE population



Labor and Manpower

Seeking work is the main reason for the temporary foreign migration to the UAE.

The connection between labor and immigration had developed in the UAE before the establishment of the Federal Union due to the growth of the development projects and the lack of manpower in the country. The same relationship has continued up to the present day with the continuity of the giant developmental projects and the scarcity of indigenous manpower in the UAE. In the coming section, the size of the UAE work force and the nature of its work will be explored compared with expatriate labor.

The Emiratis and the Expatriates in the Work Market

Labor includes artistic or physical or intellectual effort made for a fee. The laborer is an individual worker in the working age (15-65 years). He / she is either a self-employed person or an individual working for an employer for a fee. The unemployed individual is a person in the working age who is willing to work and has been seeking work but did not find it within a year. An individual who is not in the working age and is neither able to work nor seek work is not considered part of the working category. Further, the person who is engaged in housework without charges is excluded from the working category.

According to the 2005 census, the percentage of the total UAE employees in the working age is estimated at 26%. The percentage of the Emirati males working in the labor market is 40% whereas the rate of the Emirati working females amounts to 11.4 %. Nevertheless, the percentage of expatriate workers in the labor market is estimated at 71.4%. The rate of the expatriate working males amounts to 85.7 whereas the ratio of the expatriate working females is estimated at 33.4%.⁶⁴

It is noted that a low percentage of Emiratis are engaged in the labor market. The

reasons according to the Labor Force Survey for the year 2008 are attributed to the fact that 41% of the Emiratis are classified under the (extended work age category). Further, members of the Emirati female community prefer early retirement for the sake of a full-time home business. Explicitly the rate of early retirement (under 65 years) among the Emiratis particularly in the female Emirati community is rising high. In a related context, 64% of the Emiratis in the labor market are under 25 years old. Paradoxically, the rate of the expatriate working community in the labor market is high particularly the males because of their temporary immigration to the UAE for working purposes.⁶⁵

According to the manpower survey for the year 2009, the proportion of the unemployed individuals versus the total population is estimated at 2.3% on the state level. The unemployment rate among the Emiratis is 14% and among the expatriates is estimated at 2.8%. The reason for the high unemployment ratio among the UAE citizens is attributed to the fact that most of the Emiratis (or nearly 84%) have never worked and are waiting for the appropriate job. The rate of unemployed expatriates is low because most of them have obtained employment contracts before they entered the UAE and 77 % of the jobless unemployed expats have previous work experience.⁶⁶

The Dependency Burden for the Emiratis

The meaning of the burden of dependency is related to the individuals who are outside the labor force in the country (younger than 15 and older than 65 years). The dependency ratio at the level of the UAE citizens is 72%, which means that every 100 working person fend for 72 people who do not work. This percentage is high, and the reason as mentioned earlier is due to the fact that a large proportion of the female community remain outside the labor force and 65% of the 25 years age category are still students.

The Dependency Burden for the Expatriates

The dependency ratio among the expatriate community in the UAE is 25% which means that every 100 foreign workers fend for 25 jobless people. Apparently, this percentage is too low due to the fact that most expatriates in the UAE are considered part of the labor force. They take care of their families and relatives inside and outside the UAE, thereupon the rate of unemployed persons in expat circles is very low. The precedent low percentage of dependency in the expat communities had a positive effect on the total dependency ratio at the level of the country which amounted to 34%. This means that every 100 workers fend for 34 people who do not work.⁶⁷

Demographic Diversity in the UAE

The diversity of the population in the UAE society passed through several stages of development in the pre-Federation period and continued its growth after the foundation of the Federal Union due to the increasing flux of temporary labor migrating from different countries. At the present time, substantial numbers of immigrants coming from different ethnicities, speaking different languages, embracing different religious / cultural traditions and carrying 200 nationalities have become part of the labor force in the UAE.⁶⁸ Figure number (7) below reveals the nationalities and global regions that are mostly present in the UAE society.

The figure below also reveals the strong presence of nationalities from South Asia, especially India, Bangladesh, Pakistan and Sri Lanka as well as from Afghanistan and Iran. The extensive presence of the Asian population in the UAE is attributed to their early presence in the pre-Federation era. After the foundation of the UAE Federal Union their numbers grew further. The figure also reflects the noticeable presence of

Arab nationalities, especially from Egypt, Syria, Lebanon, Jordan, Palestine, Sudan, and Yemen.

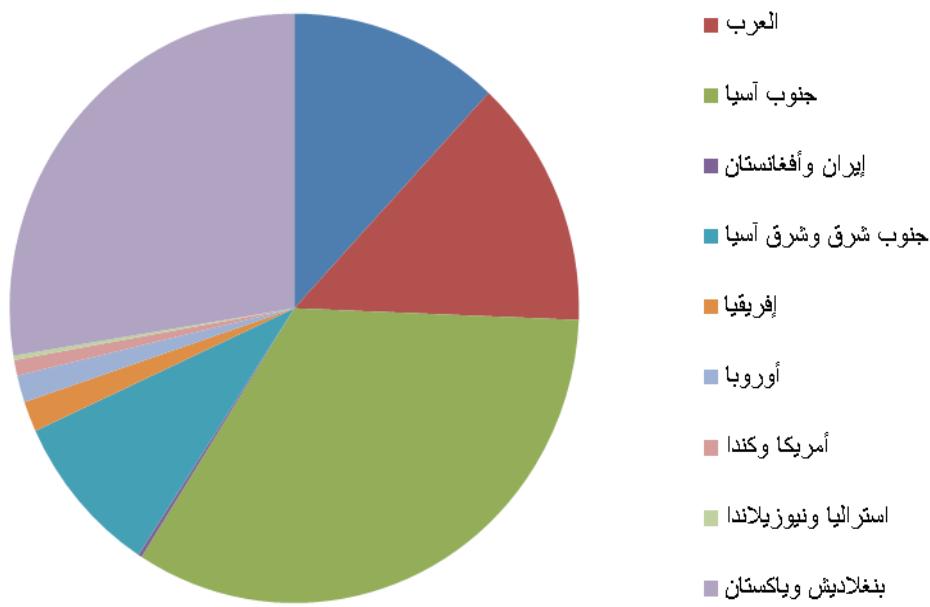
More recently, people emigrating from Iraq and the countries of the Arab Maghreb joined the population mosaic of the UAE. Moreover, one may note the strong presence of East and Southeast Asian nationalities especially people emigrating from the Philippines, Indonesia, China and South Korea. Other nationalities come from Europe, especially Britain, France, Russia, Germany, Italy and Greece in addition to people from different African nationalities, especially the Ethiopians, the Kenyans and the South Africans.

In recent years, there was an increase in the number of immigrant nationalities coming from the United States, Canada, Australia, New Zealand and South America in addition to the Arabs living in Diaspora. The total number of expatriate population from different nationalities was 7,248,865 people in 2010 whereas the number of the Emiratis was 948 000 citizens.⁶⁹ In 2012, the number of expats was 8.110,100 million people and the number of the UAE citizens was 1,150,000 persons.

In the coming part, the intersections and connections among the manifold ethnic groups of expats living in the UAE will be briefly analyzed in order to monitor patterns of coexistence and cooperation linking these diverse groups together in addition to their potential integration into the Emirati mainstream society and their relationships with the UAE citizens.

The UAE, as reflected in Figure (7), is one of the leading countries in the world which has opened its borders to immigrants from all over the world, especially temporary labor and property owners. This policy makes the UAE one of the most open countries in the world in terms of cultural diversity.⁷⁰

Figure (7): Demographic Diversity in the UAE



UAE Citizens Arabs South Asia Iran and Afghanistan East and Southeast Asia Africa Europe USA and Canada Australia and New Zealand Bangladesh and Pakistan

Although the global trend in the present day, especially in the Western countries tends to reconsider the policy of multiculturalism and subsequently return to isolationism and the adoption of cultural fusion⁷¹ as well as social cohesion policies, the UAE offers a unique model in harmony between different nationalities and ethnicities. This policy of multiculturalism in the UAE was not affected by hostile Western trends. Instead there is a growing attitude toward more diversity and interaction between different nationalities living in the Emirati society. This attitude is triggered by the confirmation of the UAE legislation on the culture of openness and peaceful coexistence between different ethnic communities in the country.⁷²

The United Arab Emirates has succeeded in developing a special model of cultural diversity which was able to contribute to the co-existence between different nationalities and ethnicities. The UAE considered most of the immigrants as temporary contractual labor. The journey of the temporary foreign workers to the receptive country (UAE) passes through four overlapping phases including recruitment, employment, work, and finally the return to the original homeland.⁷³ Therefore, the United Arab Emirates did not impose on the immigrants any integration policy aiming to assimilate them in the mainstream Emirati culture. But the UAE reinforced the fundamental principles in addition to the rights and duties at the workplace to ensure the rights of the two parties (employers/ employees). These principles included the Wages Protection System / WPS and the granting of new work permit to the employee after the end of his/her work with an employer in order to pursue another job. These principles also included labor welfare and other ways that would protect the rights of the workers.⁷⁴

The presence of large numbers of residents and immigrant labor from different cultures, with variations in religion, language, values, traditions, clothing-styles, eating-customs and artistic orientations in a small country such as the UAE is a unique phenomenon. This presence has produced a kind of interaction and intermingling in the UAE community due to the policy of openness, tolerance, cultural diversity and the tendency to refrain from imposing any form of integration upon the immigrants. This policy subsequently leads to the emergence of hybrid cultures and trans-cultural hybridization.

The concept of hybridization means the blending of two or more elements of different cultures within a specific culture in a way that these elements are adaptable and are consistent with the values of the receptive culture. Hybridization is an ongoing process and it happens in all places and at all times in the UAE and other countries. But some cultures are more open to the process of hybridity more than others.⁷⁵ Hybridization is contingent upon cultural diversity and interaction between cultures. Hybridization takes place through blending languages, ideas, tastes, interests such as music, fashion, poetry cooking customs, design of houses and buildings as well as weddings.⁷⁶ In this scenario, the individual in the UAE has become a cultural mix due to his/her cultural contacts and experiences with the cultural diversity peculiar to the UAE.

The residents of the UAE are also able to undergo communication with the latest developments in the world through high technology and the flow of information, goods, services and fashions from all over the world.⁷⁷ Apparently, there are differences between multiculturalism and cultural integration and there are also differences between hybridization and mixed cultures. Obviously mixed cultures and cultural hybridization go beyond multiculturalism. In a related context, different cultures have mutual influences on each other through communication, interaction and cohabitation. For example in any institution in the UAE, the Emiratis are working in mutual respect and as one team with expatriates from Sudan, Egypt, Jordan, Morocco, and other foreign expatriates from countries like India, Britain, and South Africa. Likewise,

in the markets one can see the great extent of daily interaction between different nationalities during the process of buying and selling. Even in the houses of both the Emirati and immigrants, one can see the great extent of the amalgamation and cultural exchange between nationalities.

The cultural diversity in the UAE did not turn into a policy of multiculturalism as happened in some European countries and Canada, and it did not turn into a cultural integration policy as in the case of the US and France. In the UAE, cultural hybridization contributed to the interaction between different cultures. Immigrants in the UAE did not live in isolation and fear, and did not have any hostility or enmity or hatred or mistrust among the expatriate and the Emirati communities. What happened in the expatriate communities in the UAE is a process of adjustment and harmony as a result of the impact of mutual interaction between them and because of the need for each other in business and services.

In conclusion, the UAE society, despite the presence of more than 200 different nationalities, did not turn to multiculturalism or integration or cultural fusion but it prefers cultural diversity which has continued without change as a special form which fits into the traditions of the Emirati society, namely concerned with cultural hybridization. Among the reasons of the success of the UAE to attract such a large number of different nationalities is the tolerance and civilized coexistence and climate of justice and law which are integral to the UAE society.⁷⁸ The previous reasons combined with the availability of all services in the cities of the UAE and its suburbs undoubtedly contributed to creating an appropriate environment for peaceful coexistence between so many different cultures.

Urbanization : The Development of Cities in the UAE

The second section of this chapter includes a brief overview of the development of urban areas in the UAE. In this context, the second section examines the factors deeply rooted in the development of cities in the Emirates, and it briefly discusses the process integral to the urban development of the cities. Further, this section argues that UAE cities have passed through several stages of development before the transformation into urban areas. It also scrutinizes the characteristics of cities by describing the data inherent to the cities of the seven Emirates in terms of population size, area, and demographic density. Finally, it highlights the relevance of the competitiveness of the Emirati cities on the global paradigm.

Factors of City Development

Definition of urbanization: Urbanization involves the process of construction, growth and expansion of cities in addition to the characteristics of this process. The city is defined as a geographic area containing a large size of population and a high rate of population density in addition to diversity of the population in terms of their careers, cultures and living standards. In the light of the data provided in table (2) below, it is noted that a large proportion of the country's population live in urban areas with a population rate of 78 % in 2010. The proportion of the people living outside the cities in the countryside and semi-urban areas in addition to the inhabitants of the desert / mountainous areas reached about 22 %. The data in the table below shows that in 1975 the urban population in the UAE reached the highest rate in the range of 85.6 %, and this percentage has shrunk in the years from 1985 to 2005, and then rose slightly in 2010. The reason of the previous shift was the availability of services in rural

areas. Further, the government encouraged the residents of villages and semi-urban areas to settle in their regions through the provision of the necessary requirements and by linking them to major cities through modern highway networks.⁷⁹

Most cities in the country were turned into urban areas in Dubai, Abu Dhabi, Sharjah, Ras Al Khaimah, Fujairah, Ajman, Umm Al Quwain, Alain and the Western region after 2000 through the development of housing complexes and academic/ knowledge cities as well as health, industrial, recreational and sports centers in addition to shopping malls which are relatively far from the major towns. Some nearby islands in the vicinity of the city of Abu Dhabi were transformed into residential communities, tourist parks and recreational centers. In the same scenario, huge man-made islands in Dubai have been converted into residential and recreational complexes, shopping malls and beaches for recreation. All these areas have been linked through networks of roads, bridges, metro rails and other means of modern communications.

An urban area is defined as a region larger than a hundred square kilometers including within its territory a central city and several small towns in addition to shopping centers. It may also include academic cities, sports, health, industrial and recreational centers besides small villages. An urban area is also supposed to include open green landscapes interconnected with the rest of the facilities and services through a network of highways and communication technology. These urban areas have evolved in the UAE at the beginning of the second millennium and they are different from the traditional cities that have been erected in the country in previous historical periods. They are also

different from the cities and suburbs that have been developed in the seventies of the last century in the UAE. In this context, a question arises about the reasons that led to the development of these urban areas, and the nature of their characteristics, and their connection with the globalization phenomenon. These issues will be discussed briefly in the coming paragraphs through a brief overview of the grass-root stages of development of the cities in the UAE region in the past leading into the ongoing stage of development in the urban areas at the present time.

A series of combined reasons at the economic, political and cultural levels contributed to the emergence and development of the UAE cities. There are several reasons which triggered the development of the UAE cities such as natural population growth, internal migration from the countryside to the cities and foreign immigration. Furthermore, other economic, political and cultural reasons led to the expansion of the Emirati cities and their development into urbanized areas. Before navigating through the details of the development of cities in the UAE it should be noted that several reasons were crucial to the emergence of urban areas in the country particularly the disappearance of the walls surrounding old/ancient cities in the past. Urban areas were developed in the era of globalization because no barriers separate between the new emerging cities in the UAE, besides the implementation of a robust federal and local government policy. Other factors are integral to the emergence of urban areas in the country including external and internal migrations, the presence of vast perennial landscape, the activities of real estate companies, globalization and foreign investment in addition to the availability of means of fast transportation and communication.

Figure (2)
UAE Population (Numbers in Thousands) - Size
Population Density - Urban Population Rate 1968-2010

Emirate	1968	1970	1975	1985	1995	2005	2010	Population ratio	Size in Square Meter	Area ratio	Population Density 2010
Abu Dhabi	46.5	60	212	566	942.5	1,399	2,988	36.1	72481.1	86.7	41.2
Dubai	59	75	184	371	689.4	1,322	2,950	35.7	4180.0	5.00	705.7
Sharjah	31.5	40	79	228	403	793.6	1,270	15.4	2783.0	3.33	456.3
Ras AlKhaimah	24.5	30	44	97	143.4	210	380.2	4.6	1814.0	2.17	209.5
Fujairah	9.7	10	17	44	76	126	230.0	2.8	1254.0	1.50	183.4
Ajman	4.2	6	17	55	121.5	207	363.4	4.4	275.8	0.33	1317.6
Um AlQuwain	3.7	5	7	19	34.5	49	83.0	1.0	836.0	1.00	99.3
Total	179	226	560	1,378	2,411	4,106	8,264	100	83600	100.0	98.9
Urban Population	78.1	81.5	85.6	79.8	77.7	76.3	78.0				

The chart above was prepared according to data collected from Population Censuses (1975 to 2005 and 2010) in addition to a report published in the local Ittihad Newspaper and other sources.⁸⁰

Stages of City Development

The development of cities in the Emirates region has passed through several stages before getting to the stage of urban areas. These stages include the pre-Islamic era, the Islamic period 630-1500, the period of transformations and shifts 1500-1820, the period of British domination 1820-1971, the period of the beginning of the Federal Union era and the evolution of suburban areas 1971-2000 and finally the period of urban areas' development after 2000 to the present day.

■ City Development in the First Period: The Pre- Islamic era:

In this period, cities emerged in the UAE due to the maritime trade with East Africa, India and China in addition to the presence of commercial connections with the regions of the Levant, Hijaz and the Roman empire territories. In a related scenario, it is relevant to state that Aldoor, Maliha, Dibba and Tawam were among the well-known ancient cities famous for trade in this period in the UAE region. The cities in the UAE region in this period served as a link between the Indian Ocean and the cities of Hijaz, Egypt, Mesopotamia and the Levant in addition to the Persian empire. Frankincense, myrrh and incense were among the goods which were exported from the UAE and the Arab region to the outer world. Spices, perfumes, silk and Chinese porcelain were imported from Asia through the Indian Ocean to be re-exported from the cities located in the UAE region to different places across the world.

■ City Development in the Second Period : The Islamic period (630-1500) :

The importance of the cities in the Emirates region in this period increased as a result of the stability of the region after the spread of Islam in the Indian Ocean, which brought an end to the wars that had periodically erupted between the Sasanians and the Byzantines. Indirectly, the cities in the Emirates region became important at this stage due to the arrival of Islam in Andalusia and the linking of the Mediterranean Sea with the Indian Ocean through the Red Sea, which led to an increase in the number of regions involved in the production and consumption of different goods around the world. The Emirates region has benefited from this change because the cities in the area were playing the role of mediator between South and East Asia and the Islamic and European worlds. Throughout different periods of the Islamic stage, the commercial cities in the Emirati region were connected with other cities in the

Gulf area such as Saraf, Qays and Hormuz. In the Islamic period, some cities of the remnants of the pre- Islamic stage continued to exist such as Dibba whereas other cities were erected such as Julphar in Ras AlKhaimah, Jumeirah in Dubai and the cities of Khorfakan and Kalba.

■ City Development in the Third Stage : The Period of Transformations and Shifts (1500-1820):

During this period, the cities located in the Emirati region came under the control of the Portuguese colonizers who played the role of the commercial mediator between Asia and Europe. They transformed the Indian Ocean trade toward Europe without relying on the Arab traders who lost their role at that time. Afterwards, the Yaruba dynasty was able to liberate the Emirati cities from the Portuguese colonization. In the aftermath of the fall of the Yaruba dynasty and the emergence of the power of AlQawasem Alliance, new commercial cities re-evolved in the region such as Bani Yas, Ras Al Khaimah, Sharjah and Linjah, the capital of AlQawasem located on the east coast of the Arabian Gulf. At the end of this period, the British destroyed the commercial cities in the UAE region in order to impose their reign on the Arabian Gulf area and protect their colonies in India from any competing powers such as AlQawasem Alliance.

■ City Development in the Fourth Stage : The Period of British Domination (1820-1971):

In this period, particularly from 1820 until 1887, most cities have collapsed in the UAE region but the city of Dubai emerged as a trade center in the region for several reasons including the decline of the importance of Linja, the capital of AlQawasem and the arrival of British ships to Dubai for the first time in 1902.

Then, Dubai has become a port for the export of the Pearls of the Emirati area to Bombay in India, and was transformed into a center for re-exporting the consumer goods imported from Asia to the Gulf region particularly Oman and Qatar. In the fifties and sixties of the last century, the Emirate of Dubai has grown as a city for re-export and Abu Dhabi emerged as a city for exporting oil. After that, the cities have grown in the Northern Emirates because of the presence of the development and service projects as we mentioned earlier. Further, the size of the urban population increased due to external and internal migrations and natural growth. The percentage of residents in the Emirati cities at the end of the sixties of the last century was about 78.1 % because most of the development and service projects was in the coastal cities, particularly in Dubai and Abu Dhabi.

■ City Development in the Fifth Stage : The period of the Federal Union and the Development of the Suburbs (1971-2000):

In this period, United Arab Emirates cities such as Abu Dhabi, Dubai and Sharjah were transformed from small cities to metropolitan centers- cities hedged by suburbs. Further, cities expanded on the Arabian Gulf from the north in the direction of the desert because this area borders the Gulf coast extending in the east and the west. There are several factors contributing to the development of the suburbs such as the public housing projects built by the federal and local governments for the residents who migrated to the cities and did not find houses.

The government attracted residents to the city suburbs, especially after it provided roads, electricity, water and telephone networks in these places in addition to the proliferation of vehicles and public transportation. Because large numbers of expatriate labor was attracted to the centers of the Emirati cities, UAE citizens rented

their houses in the residential neighborhoods due to population density and moved to live in the suburbs. Upper and middle classes of professional expatriates and Emiratis inhabited the outskirts of the cities because of the cleanliness, tranquility and security factors available in these destinations. In this stage, it is noted that the residents of the suburbs are still linked to the city due to work, shopping and entertainment purposes. In fact, all government and private institutions were in the city, as well as health and marketing services.

■ City Development in the Sixth Stage : The Period of the Urban Areas from 2000 to the Present Time:

As previously explained, the urban area is a spacious region greater than 100 square kilometers and includes a huge city like Abu Dhabi or Dubai or Sharjah including several small towns in addition to academic, health and sports cities. It also includes leisure and shopping centers as well as free zones, residential complexes and huge gardens. These areas are linked by a network of roads and means of communication and rapid transportation. Several reasons contributed to the development of urban areas such as the provision of health services and the availability of shopping centers and educational institutions within the suburbs. Therefore, suburban areas have become attractive to investors.

After the government had developed huge highways such as Sheikh Mohammed bin Zayed Road, Emirates Road, Dubai - Al Ain Road and Abu Dhabi-Dubai Road, local governments and real estate companies were given access to invest in the vicinity of these gigantic Roads. Investments include the establishment of projects such as the construction of luxury residential areas and enclosed shopping centers and academic/ knowledge and industrial cities. The real estate companies were

able to attract customers from within the country and abroad to these regions, especially to the freehold areas. Moreover, local governments were able to attract local and foreign investors to the industrial, academic and recreational cities. The development of free zones and freehold complexes participated in attracting international companies and investors to the country because of incentives such as tax exemption and long -term residence in addition to the distinctiveness of the location and the modern infrastructure available in most cities in the UAE. International companies and investors were attracted to these places due to the availability of all basic services and ways of luxury and comfort in addition to cultural diversity, safety and security as well as the provision of transportation and modern technology. In this period, each area has been able to attract new populations and customers and shoppers and provide jobs for job seekers and each area was able to attract residents from within and outside the country.

The Characteristics of the Cities in the UAE

As shown in table (2) above, there was a speed in the population growth in all the Emirates of the UAE from 1968 to 2010. Table (2) reveals the rapid population growth in the country where the population was doubled in a period of five years from 2005 to 2010. According to table (2), Abu Dhabi is the largest Emirate in 2010 in terms of the percentage of size and population but it has a low population density. The population of the Emirate of Abu Dhabi are divided into three areas. The rate of the Emirate's proportion who live in the capital city of Abu Dhabi and its suburbs is estimated at 61.6 % where the population density is 120 persons per square km. A rate of 27.6 % of the population live in the city of Alain and its suburbs and the population density is 44 persons per square km. A rate of 10.6 % of the population

live in the Western region (in the cities of Al Dhafra, Liwa, Zayed and AlRuwais) with a low density of 5.6 people per square km due to its vast area and the big destinations between the cities.

The rate of urbanization in the Emirate of Abu Dhabi is in the range of 61% due to the provision of services in all areas of the Abu Dhabi Emirate, which encouraged the residents of the semi-urban areas, villages and small towns to settle in their places. Therefore, the Emirate is demographically characterized by stability and lack of migration to the capital, Abu Dhabi or Alain city. The capital city of Abu Dhabi turned into a metropolitan area which includes several large cities and towns such as : Bani Yas, Khalifa town, Mohammed bin Zayed city, and AlShahama township. Some of the islands near Abu Dhabi turned into recreational, residential, tourist and commercial cities such as Al Yas, Al Reem, Al Mariah, and Al Saadiyyat. These cities and regions are interlinked with each other via networks of highways and communications. It is expected that these areas will be connected in 2016 through the subway line and the light rails.

The table above shows that the Emirate of Dubai is the second-largest Emirates in the UAE in terms of the size of population and the population density rate. Dubai was transformed into an urban area with a spacious central city and several residential and specialized cities such as the knowledge, media and internet cities and the academic city in addition to other financial, medical, industrial, sports and leisure facilities as well as services and shopping centers. These cities and centers are interconnected with each other through networks of roads, subway, tram and fast internet. The percentage of urban population in Dubai is 92% and the proportion of the rural population became 8% only.

Sharjah is the third largest Emirate of the UAE in terms of size and population percentage. In Sharjah, the urbanization rate is up to 85%. The urban population are divided among several cities including the capital (Sharjah) which is the largest city in the Emirate followed by the cities of Khorfakan and Kalba overlooking the Gulf of Oman and Al Dhaid city located in the central area. Sharjah is famous for being the cultural capital of the country.

The table above shows that the rate of the population living in the three major Emirates in the country which is in the range of 87.3 % of the total UAE population followed by Ras Al Khaimah with a population rate of 4.6%, Ajman with a population rate of 4.4%, AlFujairah with a population rate of 2.8 % and Umm Al Quwain with a population rate of 1%. The population density in the Emirate of Ajman is the highest in the country and is estimated at 1317.6 people per square kilometer. The reason for this high density is attributed to the small space of the Emirate which amounts to 0.33% of the country's total size. The number of Ajman's population is large compared to its size. The reason for the increase in population in the cities of Ajman and Sharjah is due to their connection with the urban areas of Dubai. All these areas collectively formulate a spacious urban region and are interconnected through networks of highways.

The Competitiveness of the UAE Cities on the Global Scale

In short, this section analyzes the impact of globalization with regard to the cities of the UAE and the extent of their competitiveness for the best cities in the world within the parameters of international standards. In the cultural diversity section, the UAE is approached as the home of over 200 nationalities, and many different cultures which locate the cities of the UAE among the most cosmopolitan destinations in the

globalized world. The cultural diversity of the UAE has contributed to link the local cities with the world economically, culturally, socially and politically. In this context, it is significant to clarify that global cities are characterized by a linkage between its local economy and the global community through flows of trade, knowledge, goods, technology, labor, tourism and investors.⁸¹

The cities are the locations where the global economic and cultural exchange took place. Currently cities compete to win foreign investment and creative groups in addition to traders and tourists in order to be in the first rank according to international standards. In order to gain global stature,⁸² several cities are working for fame and began to establish a mark for itself by improving its infrastructure. Others began establishing landmarks, codes and unparalleled financial centers in addition to parks and huge shopping centers and facilities for hosting major events in order to attract international celebrities. Some cities also seek to promote their excellence through creating slogans as the golden city, the city of clean energy, the smart city, the safe city and the sunny city.

According to our definition of globalization, it seems that all the cities of the UAE have become globalized. Through qualitative development in infrastructure as well as shopping centers, financial centers and the establishment of entertainment cities, Dubai and Abu Dhabi are among the famous cities eligible to compete globally for the best cities worldwide. Dubai and Abu Dhabi were able to link their ports and airports with the cities of the world via the largest global airlines such as Emirates (the third largest airline in the world) and Etihad Airways.

The cities of the United Arab Emirates became famous for several global icons and landmarks such as the largest shopping mall in the world (Dubai Mall) and the

largest man-made port in the world (Mount/Jebel Ali port) and the largest man-made islands in the world (The Palm Islands) and the tallest hotel in the world (Burj Al Arab) and the tallest building in the world (Burj Khalifa) and the first clean city in the world (Masdar city - free from carbon emissions) and the largest metro network in the world that operates without a driver. The Sheikh Zayed Grande Mosque is also one of the most famous global landmarks. The UAE cities also have a range of recreational and tourist destinations with international standards such as the city of Ferrari and the coral garden besides the water sports Island and the Dubai-land as well as the museums of the Louvre and the Guggenheim.

The UAE cities have attracted several events and international celebrities around the year like winning the competition to organize Expo the exhibition in 2020. Historically, Expo gave a great impetus to the development of the UAE cities. The same exhibition gave impetus to the city of Paris in 1889 when the Eiffel Tower was built in celebration of Expo. Today the Eiffel Tower is one of the world's most famous icons.

The following section introduces some data showing the status of the cities of the UAE at the regional and global levels. In 2012, the Economic Research Unit report affiliated with the Economist magazine categorized Dubai in the first place as the most competitive city in the Middle East, followed by the Abu Dhabi city in the second place.⁸³ In 2013 and in the light of a report by the International Institute for Management Development, the UAE ranked first on the level of the Middle Eastern countries and the fourth globally according to the Openness to the World Index. The UAE was highly evaluated for its positive benefit from globalization in terms of adopting an open door policy with regard to trade and economic activities.⁸⁴

Dubai came in the first place in “the study of the living patterns” index in 2013 issued by the “Knight Frank” Foundation Global Advisory. The Foundation’s report revealed that Dubai accounted for three out of four positions. Dubai also came in the first place worldwide in the number of international schools which are located in the vicinity of its surroundings and the number of sunny days per year and it occupies the third place in the leisure destinations located near the city including golf courses, water parks, skating rinks and horse racing.⁸⁵

The results of the fifth edition of the “poll echoes of Burson-Marsteller” (2013) targeting the opinion of the Arab youth revealed that the UAE has maintained its outstanding position as a model in the eyes of Arab youth. The first option of the Arab youth according to the poll was to live in the UAE, followed by France in the second place and the United States of America in the third place.⁸⁶ Dubai also obtained the second place in the competition of the best sports city in the world for the year 2013, while the city of London won the first position and Auckland city came in the third place.⁸⁷

The Global Competitiveness Report of the World Economic Forum (2013/2014) in Davos showed that the UAE has achieved five positions higher as it jumps from the 24th position in 2012 to occupy the 19th place in the general classification of the Global Competitiveness Report in 2014. The UAE also occupied the fourth place in the high efficiency commodity markets, and ranked fifth in terms of the outstanding quality of its infrastructure, and has maintained its presence in the stage of the economies based on creativity and innovation.⁸⁸ The city of Dubai also came in fifth place in the list of the “CBRE” site of the best cities in the world in the field of technology and innovation. Dubai for the Internet is considered as a free city and

a strategic base besides being the home of some of the largest companies, such as (Linked In) (Facebook) and (Google).⁸⁹

Abu Dhabi, the capital city, came in 2013 in the fourth place among the ten most favorite cities in the world. In this context the UAE capital was superior to Sydney, the Australian city and Zurich, the Swiss city in addition to Tokyo, the Japanese city according to the results of a survey conducted by the Ipsos Organization for market research. The Organization explored and surveyed the opinions of more than 18 thousand people from 24 countries in the world, and asked them about the best cities in the world for living and the establishment of business and tourism. In the poll, Brazilians preferred Abu Dhabi to Rio, their capital city, and they said they would prefer to visit Abu Dhabi rather than to visit London or Los Angeles. Moreover, the Spaniards said they would prefer to live in Abu Dhabi rather than living in the city of Madrid. Abu Dhabi also occupied the first place in the vote of the Italians who prefer it to the city of Rome.⁹⁰

The Emirates came in 2013 in the first rank in the list of the first ten countries in foreign direct investment in the Middle East and the North African region with a total investment of 291 projects, followed by South Africa with 149 projects, then Saudi Arabia with 107 projects.⁹¹ The Foreign Direct Investment (FDI) 2013 report revealed that the UAE has attracted foreign direct investment during 2012/2013 in the range of 64.21 billion dirhams.⁹² Currently the United Arab Emirates is the regional headquarters for more than 25 % of the largest 500 companies in the world.⁹³

With regard to international tourism, more than ten million international tourists have visited the UAE in 2013. Tourism contributed a total gross domestic product of about 125.5 billion dirhams in 2013. The UAE ranked 28th globally and ranked

first among Middle Eastern countries in the list of the most advanced countries in the tourism and aviation sector in accordance to the Competitiveness Report for Travel and Tourism (2013) issued by the World Economic Forum.⁹⁴

Through an analysis of figures, symbols and data on investment and international tourism companies, it is significant to argue that the UAE has been able to promote its cities, and achieve high ranking in competitiveness at the regional and international levels. This policy makes the UAE cities well-known globally, and this reputation attracted more immigrants, investors and tourists as seen in the first section of the chapter. As noted in the second section and especially in table (2), some cities in the UAE have become more globalized and culturally diverse than others. Some of the UAE cities become globally known attracting tourists and investments from all over the world due to the presence of local and international companies, cultural diversity and financial as well as recreational centers in addition to academic / knowledge cities for innovations and research. The global Emirati cities are sophisticated places equipped to provide services including transit, re-export, creativity, innovation and investment besides production and marketing. Finally, global cities are not only the preserve of New York, London and Tokyo, as claimed by Saskia Sassen.⁹⁵

Sassen claimed that the global cities are locations of global interactions and places of control as well as financial and service centers for global companies, production and creativity markets. Sassen added that these standards apply to the cities of New York, London and Tokyo which are connected to other smaller cities such as Dubai and Singapore in the form of a cluster. The opinion of Sassen regarding the concept of the global cities is unacceptable because the world is not exclusively controlled by some cities. There are cities which play different roles than

others, and the relationship and interdependence between major cities are usually mutual. Nevertheless, Sassen's idea about the emergence of two categories of jobs in the cities of the world is relevant. She states that the top tier category includes specialist and executive jobs whereas the second category includes services and handicrafts jobs. Apparently, the second group supports the first group in the global cities. The Survey data of professions in the cities of the UAE for the year 2009⁹⁶ showed that the rate of the first top tier jobs including business managers is 7.9% whereas the rate of professionals such as engineers, lawyers, doctors and university professors is 15.9%. The rate of the second category of jobs, which supported the above categories is 76% including technicians, clerks and sellers who work in shops and shopping centers as well as supermarkets and manual labor such as simple construction workers and occupations such as taxi drivers, cooks, barbers, servants in the houses, cleaners and security men.

Conclusion

The first section of this chapter refers to three factors that influence population growth (which means an increase or decrease or stability in the population). These factors are as follows: births, deaths and migration. It is noted that in the contemporary society of the UAE the rates of mortality, birth and migration have contributed to increase the size of the population from 226 thousand people in 1970 to eight million and 264 thousand people in 2010. The total population number is expected to rise up to ten million and 765 thousand people in 2015. The UAE has currently succeeded in reducing deaths to the lowest international rate, which contributed to the natural increase of the population compared to the past. Nevertheless, there are some types of deaths that could be avoided, such as those associated with car

accidents and obesity diseases. In connection with motor vehicle accidents, adults and young people in particular must be educated to avoid accidents. Regarding the issue of the obesity diseases, children in particular must be directed towards reducing fast-food consumption and young people / adults should be given guidance about the importance of practicing sports.

Births contributed to the natural increase of the population in the UAE but solutions must be found for the problem of subfertility. It is known that women's work is one of the causes of subfertility. The solution is to create balance between women's work and the requirements of the family and childbearing by reducing the working hours for married women and providing nurseries in the workplace in all institutions at the country level. At the social and cultural levels, a balance should be activated between the values of reproduction and the ethics of the women's work.

It is noted that the main reason for the large increase in the size of the population in the UAE is temporary external immigration and the magnitude of the development projects in the presence of a small local Emirati population. It was also observed that the total proportion of expatriate working population has reached very high rates, therefore some practical solutions should be found to tackle this problem. In fact, the preceding problem could be encountered by encouraging the Emirati men and women to work and uphold the value of work, regardless of its quality as seen in the case of developed countries. Moreover, the UAE citizens should have opportunities to find jobs that suit them. In fact, there are several jobs held by expatriates which are not mastered by Emiratis. Thereupon, a serious effort should be made to localize and Emiratize jobs gradually.

In another context, the chapter explores the issue of cultural diversity in the UAE

demonstrating that the Emirati society despite the presence of more than 200 different nationalities on its soil accepted the challenge and did not turn to multiculturalism or community integration or cultural fusion. Instead, cultural diversity has continued without change because it becomes part and parcel of the demographic structure of the Emirates society, namely cultural amalgamation and hybridization.

The second section in the chapter dealt with the emergence of cities in the Emirates region since the pre-Islamic era until the present time. This section explores the connection between the cities in the Emirates region and other cities worldwide. The chapter also argues that cities in the Emirates region have passed through several stages of development until they reached the stage of urbanized areas. In the future it is expected that the urban areas in the UAE will expand and the entire country will be transformed into a huge urban region stretching from Ras Al Khaimah to Abu Dhabi and from Dubai to Fujairah. These extended urbanized regions will be linked to each other by rails, express trains and road networks in addition to water channels and high-speed communication facilities.

These areas are currently connected with the world through the provision of services, especially transportation, transit, re-export and financial services besides tourism, retail, real estate and international investments. Moreover, these Emirati cities and regions are also linked to the world through multinational companies and knowledge /creativity cities as well as research centers. In the UAE global cities, there is an increase in the number of senior staff categories of inventors and engineers, consultants and managers of local and international companies. In these cities there is also a boom in the construction of closed residential areas and entertainment / luxury services to meet the rising needs of the residents and

attract more tourists. In the future, renovation activities are expected to take place in specific areas in the old cities in order to transform them into touristic and investment destinations. In the UAE global cities, there is also an increase in the number of jobs undertaken by auxiliary groups associated with the increase in services required to meet the consumer and personal needs of the emerging population centers.

Notes

- ^{1.} Holdsworth C. Finney M., and Paul N. (2013). *Population and Society*. (Los Angeles: SAGE). p.1.
- ^{2.} Mohammed, Alruwaithi. (2003). “ The population of the United Arab Emirates”. *The population in the Arab world / reality and the future : the Asian part Section I* (Riyadh : Alobeikat Library Press), p. 57.
- ^{3.} John R. Weeks. (2008). *Population: An Introduction to Concepts Issues* : Tenth Edition.(Belmont, CA).p.108-109.
- ^{4.} Ali Abdul Razeq Jelbi. (1998). *Population Sociology*. (Cairo : Dar Alma'refa Aljameyya). P.146-147.
- ^{5.} Mohammed, Alruwaithi (2003). P. 59.
- ^{6.} Ministry of State for Supreme Council Affairs, a set of laws and decrees of the United Arab Emirates (1975). Cited in Mohammed Mansour, *Population and Urbanization in the UAE community* (Abu Dhabi : United Arab Emirates University, 2004), p. 227
- ^{7.} Ibid. p. 231.
- ^{8.} Abdul Razaq Ali Jelbi. (1998). p.160.
- ^{9.} The United Arab Emirates. The Ministry of Economy Central Statistical Office. www.economy.ae
- ^{10.} Ali Jelbi. (1998). p.31.
- ^{11.} Mohammed Alruwaithi (2003). P. 57.
- ^{12.} Sultan Al-Qasimi. (1986). *The Myth of Arab Piracy in the Gulf* (London: Groom Helm). p. 26-27.
- ^{13.} Mana Al Otaiba. (1977). *The UAE Oil and Economy* (London : Chrome Helm).P.6. Lorimer, J.G.(1970). *Gazetteer of the Persian Gulf, Oman and Central Arabia*. Vol.1. Calcutta: Superintendent Government Printing, India, 1915.) Westmead, England: Gregg International Publishers Ltd.,). p. 2256.
- ^{14.} Aqil Kazim. (2000). *The United Arab Emirates, A.D. 600 to The Present: A Socio-Discursive Transformation in the Arabian Gulf* (Dubai: Gulf Book Center). p.133. Sultan, Al-Qasimi. (1987). *The Myth of Arab Piracy in the Gulf* (London: Groom Helm). p.224-225.
- ^{15.} See Mana Al Otaiba. (1977). *The UAE oil and Economy*. P.6. Sadik, M and William Snavely. (1972). *Bahrain, Qatar and the United Arab Emirates: Colonial Past, Present Problems and Future Prospects* (Lexington, MA: D.C. Heath). p.15.
- ^{16.} Mohammed Fares AlFares. (2000). “Economic conditions in the Trucial Coast : 1862-1962”.

Emirates Center for Strategic Studies and Research. P. 175-176. Kazim Aqil. (2013). "The Pearling Industry in the UAE region 1869-1938: its Construction, Reproduction and Decline", a paper presented at NYUA Conference on "Pre-Occupations in the UAE: The Work-A-Day World before Oil." Abu Dhabi, May 13-14, 2013.

- ¹⁷. Aqil Kazim. (2000). The United Arab Emirates. p.233-240.
- ¹⁸. Ibid. p. 261-269.
- ¹⁹. Ibid. p.282-292.
- ²⁰. See, Reports of the United Arab Emirates : The Ministry of Oil and Mineral Resources - Abu Dhabi : 1973-1976.
- ²¹. Albayan Newspaper Economic Supplement.(2013). The conditions for granting landlords visa. November 22, 2013. Albayan Newspaper Economic Supplement. (2013). Sunday, November 24 (No. 12212), p. 4-5.
- ²². The United Arab Emirates. The site of the National Bureau for Statistics. www.uaestatistics.gov.ae www.albayan.ae/economy/frontline-2011-06/30-1.164128.
- ²³. Yaukey D. Anderton D. and Lundquist J. (2007) Demography: The Study of Human Population, Third Edition. (Long Grove, IL: Waveland Press). p.8-9.
- ²⁴. Kazim. (2000). The United Arab Emirates. p.149-155.
- ²⁵. Klikowsky. (1979). The United Arab Emirates. Trans. Hassan Isaac (Damascus: Dar Mysel). P.18.
- ²⁶. Kazim. (2013). "The Pearling Industry in the UAE Region».
- ²⁷. Economic life (Dubai : Reading for All, 1990). Abdul Rahman Abdullah. The UAE in the memory of her children. Kazim. (2013)."The Pearling Industry in the UAE Region». p. 225-226.
- ²⁸. Kazim. (2013)."The Pearling Industry in the UAE Region».
- ²⁹. Abbas Ahmed and Maitha Al Shamsi. Social Systems, p. 97, Mohammed Al Mansour. Population and Urbanization. The United Arab Emirates University. p. 224.
- ³⁰. Kazim. (2013)."The Pearling Industry in the UAE region". p.246, 271 and 292.
- ³¹. Ibid. p.71.
- ³². Mohammed, Alruwaithi. (2003). P. 68.
- ³³. Collins. (2007). Atlas of Global Issues: The World Bank. Washington, DC. (Glasgow: Collins). p. 122-127.
- ³⁴. Mohammed AlMansour. Population and Urbanization. P.231.

- ³⁵. Ittihad Newspaper. (2012). “health”, Sunday, December 2, p. 10.
- ³⁶. Ibid.
- ³⁷. In 1965 the rate was 100 per 1,000 baby born alive. Mohammed Mansour, p. 231.
- ³⁸. Albayan Newspaper. The spirit of the Union 42, p. 18-19.
- ³⁹. Albayan. Across the Emirates, Tuesday, December 20, 2011 number (11507), p. 20.
- ⁴⁰. Ittihad Newspaper. (2012) “health”, Sunday, December 2, p. 10.
- ⁴¹. Holdsworth C., est. Population and Society, p.22-23.
- ⁴². Ali Abdel Razek Jelbi. (2012). The Renewal of the Population Sociology (Alexandria: Dar Alma'refa Aljameyya). p. 201-202.
- ⁴³. Emirates Today Newspaper. www.emaratalyoum.com/local.../2013-01-16-1.54159.
- ⁴⁴. Mohammed, Alruwaithi. (2003). Table 3, p. 68. Fayed Mohammed al-Issawi. “The growth of the population of the United Arab Emirates in the period (1975-2002)”. College of Humanities and Social Sciences Journal (21) Number (1) April 2005, Table p. 380. Emirates Today Newspaper. www.emaratalyoum.com/local.../2013-01-16-1.54159
- ⁴⁵. Albayan. November 15, (2013) Across the UAE. On the website of Albayan: www.albayan.ae/across...use.
- ⁴⁶. Holdsworth C., est. Population and Society. p.22-23.
- ⁴⁷. Mohammed, Alruwaithi. (2003). Table 3, p. 68. Fayed Mohammed al-Issawi. “The growth of the population of the United Arab Emirates”. P.380. Emirates Today Newspaper. www.emaratalyoum.com/local.../2013-01-16-1.54159
- ⁴⁸. Mohammed, Alruwaithi. (2003). Table 3, p. 68-69. Mohammed Al Mansour. Population and Urbanization.p. 228-230.
- ⁴⁹. John R. Weeks, Population. p.264.
- ⁵⁰. Holdsworth C., est. Population and Society. p.98.
- ⁵¹. John R. Weeks, Population. p.246.
- ⁵². Labor Law of the United Arab Emirates and ministerial decisions issued to implement its provisions (Law Association of the United Arab Emirates, 2008)
- ⁵³. Fawzi Eid Sahawneh and Mousa Abouda Samhah. (2003). Population Geography (Amman - Jordan : Dar Wael for publication). P.170.
- ⁵⁴. Holdsworth C., est. Population and Society, p.106.

- ^{55.} Donald T. Rowland. Demographic Methods and Concepts. P.397.
- ^{56.} Fawzi Eid Sahawneh and Mousa Abouda Samhah. (2003). Population Geography.p.160-161.
- ^{57.} Maitha Salem Al Shamsi. (2010). "Immigration to the Gulf Cooperation Council (GCC): The Reality Problematic, and visions of the future". Emirates Center for Strategic Studies and Research. p. 39.
- ^{58.} Aqil Kazim. (2010). "The Rise of Dubai: A Social History of the Commercial Cities in the Gulf". Encounters. No.2. Spring. P. 86.
- ^{59.} Ali Abdel Razeq Jelbi. (2012). The Renewal of the Population Sociology.P.176-177. Fawzi Eid Sahawneh and Mousa Abouda Samhah. (2003).P.56-57.
- ^{60.} The United Arab Emirates. The National Bureau of Statistics (2010). Fawzi Eid Sahawneh and Mousa Abouda Samhah. (2003).p.57.
- ^{61.} The United Arab Emirates. The National Bureau of Statistics (2010).
- ^{62.} Ittihad. Emirates, on Monday April 14, 2008, p. 10.
- ^{63.} In 1968, the illiteracy rate among males was 71% and the ratio of females was 91% and the illiteracy of the total UAE population was 79%, See: Sadik, M and William P. Sanvely. Bahrain, Qatar and the United Arab Emirates, p. 68.
- ^{64.} The United Arab Emirates, the Ministry of Economy, the 2005 census. the National Bureau for Statistics (NBS).
- ^{65.} The United Arab Emirates, the National Bureau of Statistics, Report of the main findings of the Labor Force Survey 2008, p.15.
- ^{66.} Ibid. p.14.
- ^{67.} Ibid. p. 26-27.
- ^{68.} Ittihad. (2012). Sunday, March 11, p. 2
- ^{69.} Ittihad(2011). Monday, April 4, p. 4-5.
- ^{70.} Khaleej Newspaper. (2010). Friday, November 8 (No. 11492), p. 17.
- ^{71.} Vertovec. S. and Wessndorf, S. (2010). Eds. The Multiculturalism Backlash: European discourses, policies and practices (New York: Routledge).
- ^{72.} Albayan. (2011). Sunday, 20 November. (No. 11477). P.19.
- ^{73.} Albayan. (2008). Local News, Tuesday, January 23, (No. 10079), p. 8.
- ^{74.} Ittihad. (2012), Emirates, Wednesday, June 6 p. 18

- ⁷⁵. Peter Burke. (2009).Cultural Hybridity. (Cambridge: Polity Press).
- ⁷⁶. Kazim. (2000). The United Arab Emirates. p. 424-429.
- ⁷⁷. Ibid.
- ⁷⁸. Khaleej. (2011). Akhbar AlDar / Local News, Friday, December 23, (No. 11 905), p. 3.
- ⁷⁹. Mohammed Al Kubaisi. (2004). Social development in the Emirates Community. (Abu Dhabi: United Arab Emirates University). p. 270.
- ⁸⁰. Sadik, M and William Snavely. Bahrain, Qatar and the United Arab Emirates. p.15.
- ⁸¹. Kazim. (2010). The Rise of Dubai. p. 76.
- ⁸². Deborah Stevenson. (2013). The City. (Cambridge, UK: Policy Press). p.148-149.
- ⁸³. Albayan Newspaper Economic Supplement. (2012). Tuesday, March13, (No.11986), p. 1.
- ⁸⁴. Ittihad Newspaper Economic Supplement. (2013). Wednesday, June 12, p.3
- ⁸⁵. Albayan Newspaper Economic Supplement. (2013). October 20, (No.12177), p. 2.
- ⁸⁶. Khaleej Newspaper Economic Supplement. (2013). Wednesday, April 10. (No. 12 379), p. 4.
- ⁸⁷. Albayan Newspaper Sports Supplement. (2013). Monday November 18, (No. 12206), p.3.
- ⁸⁸. Albayan Newspaper Economic Supplement. (2013). December 15, (No. 12233), p. 11.
- ⁸⁹. Khaleej Newspaper Economic Supplement. (2013). Saturday, December 14, (No. 12627). P.1.
- ⁹⁰. Abu Dhabi is the best city in the world. www.skynewsarabia.com/web/article
- ⁹¹. Albayan Newspaper Economic Supplement. (2013). December 22, (No. 12 240), p. 1.
- ⁹². Khaleej Newspaper Economic Supplement. (2013). December 18, (No. 12631), p. 7.
- ⁹³. Ittihad Newspaper Economic Supplement. (2013). Tuesday, December 10, p. 3.
- ⁹⁴. Ittihad Newspaper Economic Supplement. (2013). Sunday, September 1, p. 5.
- ⁹⁵. Sassen, S. (1991). Global City (New Jersey: Princeton University Press).
- ⁹⁶. The United Arab Emirates. The National Bureau of Statistics: Labor Force Survey 2009. The Ministry of Economy : census 2005.

Works Cited

- Ahmed, Abbas and Maitha Al Shamsi. (2004). Social Systems. (Abu-Dhabi- the United Arab Emirates University).
- Al-Fares, Mohammed Fares. (2000). “Economic conditions in the Trucial Coast : 1862-1962”. Emirates Center for Strategic Studies and Research. P. 175-176.

- Al-Issawi Mohammed. "The growth of the population of the United Arab Emirates in the period (1975-2002)". College of Humanities and Social Sciences Journal (21) Number (1) April 2005.
- Al-Kubaisi, Mohammed. (2004). Social development in the Emirates Community. (Abu Dhabi: United Arab Emirates University).
- Al-Mansour, Mohammed. (2004). Population and Urbanization In the Emirates Society. (Abu-Dhabi- the United Arab Emirates University).
- Al-Otaiba. Mana. (1977). The UAE Oil and Economy (London : Chrome Helm).
- Al-Ruwaithi, Mohammed. (2003). " The population of the United Arab Emirates". The population in the Arab world / reality and the future : the Asian part Section I (Riyadh : Alobeikat Library Press).
- Al-Qasimi, Sultan. (1986). The Myth of Arab Piracy in the Gulf(London: Groom Helm).
- Al-Shamsi, Maitha Salem. (2010). "Immigration to the Gulf Cooperation Council (GCC): The Reality Problematic, and visions of the future". Emirates Center for Strategic Studies and Research. p. 39.
- Burke, Peter. (2009).Cultural Hybridity. (Cambridge: Polity Press).
- Collins. (2007). Atlas of Global Issues: The World Bank. Washington, DC. (Glasgow: Collins).
- Holdsworth C. Finney M., and Paul N. (2013). Population and Society. (Los Angeles: SAGE).
- Jelbi, Ali Abdul Razeq. (1998). Population Sociology. (Cairo : Dar Alma'refa Aljameyya).
- ----- (2012). The Renewal of the Population Sociology. (Alexandria: Dar Alma'refa Aljameyya).
- Kazim, Aqil. (2013). "The Pearling Industry in the UAE region 1869-1938: its Construction, Reproduction and Decline". NYUA Conference : Pre-Occupations in the UAE: The Work-A-Day World before Oil. Abu Dhabi, May 13-14.
- ----- (2010). "The Rise of Dubai: A Social History of the Commercial Cities in the Gulf". Encounters. No.2. Spring P. 86.
- ----- (2000). The United Arab Emirates, A.D. 600 to The Present: A Socio-Discursive Transformation in the Arabian Gulf (Dubai: Gulf Book Center).
- Lorimer, J.G.(1970). Gazetteer of the Persian Gulf, Oman and Central Arabia. Vol.1. Calcutta: Superintendent Government Printing, India, 1915.) UK: Westmead, Gregg International Publishers Ltd.).
- Sadik. M and William Snavely. (1972). Bahrain, Qatar and the United Arab Emirates: Colonial

Past, Present Problems and Future Prospects (Lexington, MA: D.C. Heath).

- Sahawneh, Fawzi Eid and Mousa Abouda Samhah. (2003). Population Geography (Amman - Jordan : Dar Wael for publication).
- Sassen, S. (1991). Global City. (New Jersey: Princeton University Press).
- Stevenson, Deborah. (2013). The City. (Cambridge, UK: Policy Press).
- Vertovec. S. and Wessndorf S. (2010). Eds. The Multiculturalism Backlash: European discourses, policies and practices (New York: Routledge).
- Weeks, John R. (2008). Population: An Introduction to Concepts Issues : Tenth Edition.(Belmont, CA).
- Yaukey D. Anderton D. and Lundquist J. (2007) Demography: The Study of Human Population, Third Edition. (Long Grove, IL: Waveland Press).

Websites

- The United Arab Emirates, the National Bureau of Statistics. www.uaestatistics.gov.ae
- www.emaratalyoum.com/local.../2013-01-16-1.54159.
- Abu Dhabi is the best city in the world. www.skynewsarabia.com/web/article
- www.albayan.ae/economy/frontline-2011-06/30-1.164128.
- The United Arab Emirates, the Ministry of Economy : Central Statistical Office.
- www.economy.ae

Chapter Nine

Economic Development in the UAE



Chapter Nine

Economic Development in the UAE

Dr. Fatma Alshamsi

Introduction

In its general concept, development is defined as the process which aims at improving the economic and social order of the state in terms of providing the basic needs and raising the standard of living for the entire population. Economists have identified three dimensions of economic development as a whole: The first dimension is concerned with employment, which is an essential component and a key factor in the development policy. The second dimension concentrates on growth as one of the pivotal elements integral to development. Nevertheless, economic growth in itself is not enough to improve the standard of living of the population. Economic growth should not only aim to provide the basic needs but also to improve the continuity of the development process. The third dimension is concerned with the determinants of human development. This dimension contributes to providing the incentive to achieve the development goals and participate in the building of the national economy.

The path and goals of economic development in the UAE are contained within these three dimensions. The process of building a modern state in the United Arab Emirates has begun during the mid-seventies in the preceding century. At that time national efforts accelerated to design a solid infrastructure including new buildings, roads, power plants, telecommunications in addition to the development of the education and health systems besides other public services.

The building of the modern state was contingent upon the standards of economic

freedom of the individual in the UAE regarding the selection of economic activities (without income taxes) as well as the freedom of import and export of duty-free commodities. The UAE economy has witnessed significant developments since that period due to the acceleration of economic growth rates which resulted into structural shifts transforming the country's economy from a traditional economy to a modern economy. Oil revenues primarily contributed to these structural transformations. Moreover, Oil revenues contributed indirectly to the growth and development of various economic sectors.

In spite of the importance of oil in the financing of social capital projects, and the importance of its role in the creation of the structural transformations of the economy of the UAE, the continuous reliance upon oil may jeopardize the economy due to the dangers rooted in the fluctuations of oil prices caused by the constant changes in global economic conditions. Therefore, the economic project in the UAE has not ignored the importance of constructing a diversified base of production through a sophisticated, dynamic and interrelated productive sectors. These sectors constitute the basis for stimulating growth, achieving high rates of development and diversifying sources of national income by increasing the relative importance of other productive sectors of goods and services, to ensure a sustainable development untouched by the fluctuations in the production and returns of crude oil. These Diversification efforts have coincided with the increase in the pace of economic activity in the finance, trade and services sectors as well as in the privatization process. This process aims to encourage private sector participation in the development efforts and make diversity operations possible and successful. The right track for economic growth will not be achieved in the

first place in isolation from the institutional, cultural and social progress and through the preparation and development of human capital. Thereupon, the UAE realized the importance of creating appropriate institutional framework governing economic action through the introduction of laws and frameworks governing this economic action and through investment in human capital growth to be eligible for leading and guiding the path of development to the correct destination.

Within this framework, this study will shed light on the development path in the UAE by tracking the stages of economic progress. Subsequently, the study will focus on some economic sectors that played key roles at various stages of development to determine the extent of their contribution in stimulating economic growth and achieving the objectives of development strategies.

It is known that the process of growth and development requires a fundamental basis as a point of departure. Thus, the development of infrastructure in the UAE is considered as the prerequisite for the process of development. In this context, the Gross Domestic Production¹ constitutes an important indicator in measuring the economic growth in different countries. Further, the GDP could be used as a measurement of the contributions of the various sectors of the economy and the multiplicity of economic activities which reflect the degree of economic diversity. In this context, it is essential to refer to the relative importance of each part of the various economic sectors and the role played by each sector through their contribution to the GDP per capita.

Emirates ranked first regionally and globally in the financial and economic freedom and the ease of start-up companies. (In the subsequent part of the study references will be made to the UAE companies and their role in building national economy and how these companies succeeded in exceeding the limits of the

country and become major international corporations competing in the global market). In the same vein, it is noteworthy to argue that the institutional and legal framework makes up one of the most important pillars in the process of economic growth. Therefore, an analysis of the legislation and laws governing and promoting the economic activities in the UAE is crucial in this context.

Stages of Economic Development

The establishment of the United Arab Emirates in 1971 by its late founder, Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan Al Nahyan, provided the stimulus for the national economy to embark on a new era and navigate toward new horizons. The UAE economy passed through different stages of development and shifts until it becomes one of the most developed economies in the region and the world. Currently the UAE economy moves with solid steps toward the future in an attempt to be transformed into a knowledge economy due to its heavy reliance on creativity and innovation. Within the contours of the so-called knowledge economy there is a growing importance of knowledge as an essential component of the added value.²

The First Stage

During the period of the Islamic era (630 -1500), the economy of the Emirates' zone was a traditional economy, based on long-distance trade and re-export. Due to the gradual decline of the long-distance trade after the European domination of the Indian Ocean led by the Portuguese forces in (1498) and followed by the British hegemony on the Arabian Gulf after the collapse of Al-Qawasim alliance in 1820, the economy of the Emirates' region entered into a new stage. The Portuguese navigator, Vasco da Gama was a well-known figure at that time.³ The new stage witnessed the conversion of the west coast of the Arabian Gulf into a new economy

dependent on the production of pearl. The Gulf region was linked to the global markets through the export of pearls in the period between 1869 and 1938.⁴

During this period, 95% of the income of the Emirate of Abu Dhabi depends on the pearl trade. More than 85% of the labor force is associated with this sector. The pearl trade gradually collapsed in the thirties of the last century due to the appearance of the Japanese superficial pearls which found its way to the global markets during the 1920's. The pearl trade came to an end after the discovery of oil in the Arabian Gulf and the beginning of the transition to an economy based on the oil sector.⁵

The first phase of economic development began after the foundation of the United Arab Emirates in the second of December 1971. The Gross Domestic Production (GDP) in that period did not exceed 6.5 billion UAE dirhams, and the main producer was the oil sector. Throughout the production and export of crude oil to world markets, the oil sector's revenues constituted more than 75% of the total income whereas the contribution of other sectors were low and did not exceed 25% of the GDP. The national economy during the period from 1975 to 1980 accelerated its growth rates with an average of 36%. However the main dependence on the oil sector had unfavorable consequences on the economy particularly after the decline of the oil prices in 1981 which negatively affected the growth rates during that period.

The Second Stage

The second stage of economic development was characterized by planning. The most prominent features of this stage is the beginning of the foundation of official political, economic and social institutions. These institutions formed the cornerstones of the

modern state and embarked on the development of necessary infrastructure essential to the process of growth and real development of national economy in the spheres of education, health and road-construction in addition to sea-harbors and airports. This policy also aims to create job opportunities with rewarding incentives to accommodate the UAE citizens which positively contributed to their living standards.

The Third Stage

The UAE government realized at a later stage that relying on a single source of national income is not a viable strategic choice particularly if this source is subject to depletion. Therefore, the UAE constructed solid plans which aimed at diversifying the sources of national

income and expanding the financial and social basis of the economy. This policy also seeks other sources which will constitute with the oil sector a fundamental pillar for a strong, sustainable and balanced economy. Moreover, this policy aims to effectively contribute to the productivity and diversification of sources of national income to ensure the continuation of the pace of rapid growth. Finally it aims to raise the standard of living for the UAE nationals and provide them with appropriate job opportunities

The Fourth Stage

At a later stage the government became convinced that both of the national growth and economic development would be useless if only the government sector was adopted as the key driver of the development process. The government was also aware of the fact that the global experience has shown the failure of the public sector alone in fulfilling the goals of economic growth. The economic development process includes various dimensions and the role of the public sector will be

effective only if accompanied by an active, innovative and strong private sector. Hence, the government actively sought to expand the contributions of the private sector in development through the effective employment of the resources of oil and the provision of government support in addition to financing the development process of the most promising economic sectors such as industry, tourism, especially those projects which are based on individual initiatives supportive of private investment. Therefore decision-makers realized the importance of creating an appropriate climate to attract private investment whether domestic or foreign, in addition to providing adequate support for pilot initiatives. This policy also required the implementation of sophisticated infrastructure and the encouragement of building strategic partnerships with multinational global companies besides the development and modernization of laws and regulations to keep pace with current requirements and attract promising investments.

The Economic Policy of the UAE

The UAE policy, manifested in the federal strategy and the Emirates vision (2021) aimed to encourage the private sector to play a greater role in development process. Therefore, the government opened up new horizons for the private sector to embark on all economic activities. The government also stimulated the private sector to engage in partnerships with foreign multinational companies and hold bilateral and multilateral agreements with a number of countries and trade partners in order to facilitate commerce and technology transfer in addition to the transfer of managerial and technical expertise. Accordingly, the UAE topped the first place in the Middle East and occupied the fifteenth position globally in the light of the Confidence Index for the direct foreign investment

undertaken by the American Research Foundation - A.T Kearney in (2012). The UAE also came in the second position globally according to the Edelman Confidence Index conducted by Strategy ONE incorporation in (2012). This Index measures the confidence of the residents in the leaders of the government, the business NGOs institutions, and the media.

The GCC countries

The UAE government realized the importance of coordination and economic integration at the regional level. Subsequently, the country has played a leading role in the reunion of the neighboring Arab counties in the region through the Gulf Cooperation Council (GCC) system. The foundation of the GCC in 1981, in Abu-Dhabi provided an emphasis to the role of the UAE. It also reflected the thorough vision of the UAE political leadership regarding the significant role that can be played by economic blocs.

Therefore the UAE leadership realized that the optimal choice for all the GCC countries is to deepen the process of complementarity and mutual cooperation in economic policies in order to create better opportunities integral to the actual development, through the coordination of investment policies and reduction of the duplication of economic projects that lead to loss of resources and bring about competition among the GCC countries in the global markets. The integration and coordination in economic policies will lead to strengthening the negotiating position of the GCC countries particularly with regard to oil prices policies. Further, the creation of a wider Arab bloc can be a tributary of more efficient economic activities, greater productivity and bigger absorptive capacity which will open up new horizons for joint investments and provide support to the role of the private sector. On this

basis the private sector will participate in economically feasible productive activities, and strengthen the negotiating position of the GCC countries at the global level.

World Trade Organization

The ushering of the Third Millennium was associated with an awareness of the importance of accession to the World Trade Organization WTO because of its positive effects in promoting the efficiency of the utilization of resources and the provision of larger markets. At that juncture, the UAE sought to speed up the accession process, which took place in the 10th of April (1996). Membership in the World Trade Organization means accepting the terms of the Uruguay Agreement (with regard to the liberalization of international trade in goods and services and foreign investment resulting in performing some necessary reforms in financial and monetary policies besides other transformations required to correct the economic structure of the State). At that time the political leadership in the UAE had to confront the difficult challenges resulting from the pressures of openness on a global market and other requirements with regard to the abolition of governmental support or its reduction to a minimum in connection to export-oriented industries besides the removal of support of raw materials' prices. This policy also requires the provision of support to the public utility services to keep them at low prices and the provision of soft loans in addition to protection of local products by imposing customs' taxes on imports that would compete with domestic products.

The UAE has worked hard to comply with the provisions of the WTO Convention and simultaneously create the appropriate frameworks to facilitate economic openness on all levels. At the same time efforts were accelerated towards the completion of the process of coordination and cooperation in the GCC through the Customs Union

initiative and the completion of a regional common market. This policy aims at the expansion of the size of the current market and the reduction of the duplication of development projects in addition to raising the efficiency of the utilization of human resources and strengthening the negotiating position of the GCC countries.

In the aftermath of economic openness countries need to keep pace with the advanced and industrialized countries. At the beginning of its establishment, the United Arab Emirates did not have the industrial and technological history owned by developed countries. Thus, the founder of the modern UAE, Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan, realized with his insight, that “science is wealth and we build the future on the basis of scientific knowledge”.⁶ In this context, the standards of progress and development must be founded on the basis of knowledge in order to accelerate the process of growth and bridge the gap between developed and developing countries.

The UAE president Sheikh Khalifa completed the march of progress emphasizing the importance of narrowing the knowledge gap through engagement in scientific pursuits. H.H stressed that “ It is important to acquire modern science and pursue extensive knowledge with high spirit and a sincere desire in order to master the methods of work in all areas”. In this sense, the UAE will enter into the third millennium equipped with sufficient scientific knowledge integral to achieve a civilized breakthrough.⁷

The Global Financial Crisis in 2008

Due to the adoption of the policy of economic openness by the UAE, the country was affected by the economic ebb and flow and the shifts that took place at the global level. Therefore the global financial crisis in 2008 had an unfavorable impact on the country’s economy. However, the policies and procedures followed

by the government had a significant role in reducing the negative effects of the crisis on the overall economic life in the country. Thus, the UAE has succeeded in maintaining an adequate standard of living for all members of society, and was keen on the stability of the economic and productive activities. The government succeeded in restoring the balance of different economic sectors and supporting private sector activities. It also sought to develop a better climate for development through the creation of appropriate legal and legislative frameworks. The same process also includes the construction of the foundations of a modern economy based on knowledge, and updated services.

The financial crisis has ironically helped the government to reconsider its previous traditional economic policies. The crisis made the government develop new methods to be consistent with the emerging economic conditions, therefore “change has become an urgent necessity after The UAE became at the center of global attention”.⁸

Knowledge-based Economy

In line with the scientific and technological developments experienced in the modern world, the UAE decision-makers were conscious of the emerging trend rooted in the enhancement of the knowledge-based economy that has become a necessary requirement towards invigorating the local economy in the coming years.⁹ In this context, the federal government’s strategy (2021) has emphasized the importance of a supportive economic model based on knowledge, innovation, and investment in science and technology and scientific research. This sophisticated model will tackle different sectors of the economy which will subsequently lead to high productivity within a flexible and diversified economy, led by qualified UAE experts. It will also

enhance the skills of the Emirati citizens and contribute via national human capital in the development process. Finally it will promote leadership in the competitive and productive activities within the framework of a strategic partnership between the private and public sectors.¹⁰

The Oil and Gas Sector

The UAE has a huge strategic stockpile of oil and natural gas resources. The returns of this sector were significantly utilized in building a modern state and in the development of physical and human infrastructure. This natural wealth has been managed, in an efficient and sophisticated manner in order to preserve it for a longer period of time and in order to ensure the right of the future generations in such wealth. The oil sector has played an important role in the development process, where the exports of crude oil and gas were a major source of financing the economic development projects and the implementation of infrastructure projects necessary for the launching of national economy towards wider prospects associated with advanced economies.

The oil and gas sector is considered the most important economic sector with a highly added value and a potential for future strong growth. Such growth rate in the oil and gas sector reached 6.3% in 2012. For the sake of the development of this sector, The UAE has accomplished important projects and proceeded to the start and completion of the implementation of other new projects moving in the direction of the development of the productive capacity of up to 3.5 million barrels per day in 2017, compared to the current capacity amounting to 2.6.¹¹ The oil revenues also constitute a solid basis for the growth of the UAE as a result of the availability of a large reserve estimated at 97.8 billion barrels in 2010 making

up 6% of the world reserves. This reserve is sufficient for more than 100 years within the limits of the current production rates of up to 2.6 million barrels per day. The UAE is considered as the seventh country in the world in terms of oil reserves. Statistics show the evolution of the volume of output oil sectors, to reach 335.3 billion dirhams in 2012 and is expected to continue in the relatively high prices in the short and medium term, based on the expectations of the Energy Agency and the International Monetary Fund.

The production capacity of the oil fields in the UAE is estimated at three million barrels per day. However, what is produced is less than three million barrels per day in order to maintain market balance on the one hand and ensure the preservation of the wealth from depletion as long as possible. Currently the UAE ranked eighth on the global level among countries producing crude oil. The oil production of the UAE is estimated at an average of 2.8 million barrels per day in 2012. The oil sector in the UAE is expected to continue spending on development projects that meet the objectives of economic diversification policy, at least on the medium range.¹² The UAE is a key exporter in the global oil market and its exports amounted to 2.5 million barrels per day in 2012.

The UAE has five plants for oil refining production with a total capacity of more than 770,000 thousand barrels per day in 2012¹³. The largest oil refinery is the Ruwais plant with production capacity of 400,000 thousand barrels per day and the Jebel Ali oil refinery with production capacity of 120,000 thousand barrels per day. The Fujairah refinery is expected to start its production with a capacity of 250,000 thousand barrels per day.¹⁴

The natural gas reserves in the UAE are estimated at 215 trillion cubic meters, or

the equivalent of 4% of world reserves. It is well-known that the UAE occupies the seventh place in the world in natural gas reserves. The gas production of the UAE amounted to 1.9 trillion cubic meters in 2012. The UAE is a world leader in the use of natural gas in the extraction of the oil operations by re-injecting gas in oil wells. However, the country recently changed this method as a result of the expansion of the demand for natural gas for other uses. Currently the UAE utilizes other technologies in the extraction processes in order to economize and rationalize the use of gas for domestic consumption.¹⁵

Local oil companies, in partnership with several major international companies are responsible for the management and the regulation of exploring, extracting and exporting of oil and natural gas. In Abu Dhabi, ADNOC and its subsidiaries oversee the daily operations in accordance with the objectives approved by the Supreme Petroleum Council of Abu Dhabi. ADNOC is also the main partner in the production, refining and other industries related to the oil and natural gas sectors. In a related scenario, the Supreme Council of Energy develops and coordinates energy policies in the Emirate of Dubai. It also sets up policies that ensure that Dubai will obtain its needs of energy sources necessary for the growth and development process. The Council includes representatives of oil and distribution companies operating in the Emirate of Dubai.

Development of Infrastructure

The most important characteristic of economic development in the UAE is its ability to make a structural change in the productive spheres including the agricultural, industrial, commercial, institutional, urban and demographic sectors, in addition to its ability to create a shift in the components of demands and productions at the

domestic and external levels. The economic transformation requires a variety of important pillars and facilities to accelerate the launching process and meet the basic requirements for growth essential to the economic sector.

Decision-makers in the UAE realized the importance of the creation and establishment of basic infrastructure as a requirement for the process of economic growth because solid infrastructure is an important pillar in the process of economic transformation and development. It also plays a key role in driving the overall economic activities in the country and facilitating the production process. Since its inception, the UAE focused on the development of the pillars of economic development and the government has allocated a large proportion of their annual budgets for the construction of physical and human infrastructure which is solid and sophisticated. The continued development of infrastructure in the construction, tourism, industrial, and commercial sectors on a large scale resulted into a radical change in the urban environment in the UAE. It is accurate that education, health care, tourism services, generation of electricity, water facilities construction, harbors / airports services and telecommunications have been the focus of major infusion of capital since the beginning of the emergence of the Federal state in the UAE.

Consequently, the UAE constructed transportation routes in air, land and sea in addition to modernized international airports and harbors that matched the transport facilities in developed countries. Recently the UAE sought to establish more sophisticated highways and rail network and provided logistics with international standards which contributed to the strengthening of the business environment and facilitating trade and attracting foreign investments of various kinds. The facilities which have contributed to strengthening the infrastructure

also played a significant role in improving the standard of living for residents and expats transforming the UAE into a huge regional and international touristic destination and domestic / international business investment hub.

The government sector is responsible for financing the infrastructure projects at the federal and local governments levels. The Federal Government investment volume reached 54.7 billion dirhams in 2010, after it was 15.2 billion in 2005 with an annual growth rate estimated at 29%.¹⁶ In 2013 16 billion dirhams have been allocated for infrastructure projects in the Northern Emirates. Further, Abu Dhabi government allocated more than \$ 200 billion in its 2030 plan for the “urban development plan”. Dubai has also allocated 42% of its budget in similar projects order to build more capacity in the Emirate’s infrastructure in addition to projects related to transport and social services.¹⁷ The UAE’s development strategy did not ignore the educational and health services as an elemental component in building human capital and as an essential foundation to continue the march of progress and development. The UAE State took the initiative of building schools for the various stages of education, and providing free education for citizens from the basic education stage until the university level. The UAE was keen to develop the curriculum to suit the requirements of the knowledge economy. The government was also concerned with the development of a modern technical infrastructure and school buildings established in accordance with international standards. In a related scenario, more than 21% percent of the government budget in 2014, equivalent to 9.8 billion dirhams, was allocated to education sector, 61 % of which went to public education and the rest for university education.¹⁸

The UAE paid special attention to health services. The government allocated huge sums for the development of preventive and curative health services, and set up modern health facilities in various parts of the country which contributed to the rise in all health indicators during the period 2005-2010, especially the number of doctors and foreign government clinics. This policy coincided with the development of regulatory and legislative frameworks to improve the quality of health services in the public and private sectors in the UAE. Reports issued by the United Nations and its specialized organizations have confirmed that the UAE has steadily achieved high rates of human development, and will continue its efforts to provide a high level of basic services to its citizens and residents, especially in health and education sectors in addition to the implementation of advanced programs for social development.¹⁹

In light of the infrastructure quality indicators in the UAE, the World Trade Empowerment Report issued by the World Economic Forum emphasized that the UAE has achieved advanced ranks globally in this respect. For example the Arab Emirates came first on the level of the Arab countries and occupies the twenty-fourth rank in the global Trade Logistics Performance Index, which reflects the efficiency of the transport of goods and ease of linking producers and consumers with international markets. The UAE also occupies the first rank regionally and the tenth rank globally in terms of quality infrastructure facilities for 2012. The UAE has ranked first among 132 countries all over the world with reference to the availability of paved roads. The country came fourth globally in the quality of the aviation sector globally and occupied the sixth rank in the quality of sea ports.

Development in the Production and Services Sectors

Since the foundation of the UAE, the government has realized the crucial

importance of diversifying the sources of national income. There is no doubt that the diversification of the sources of national income is the main challenge that must be given priority in development plans in order to ensure the maintenance of the high standard of living for the UAE citizens. This policy is also integral to the development of a production base, and the enhancement of the efficiency and effectiveness of various economic sectors. This policy also aims at the adoption of economic policies seeking to construct a permanent economic base resulting into a stable, flexible and diversified economy. The desired economic diversification requires the activation of a new strategic sectors and the expansion of the productive base of other various sectors. Subsequently, developed frameworks and proposed policies in addition to plans for the promotion of economic diversification were developed to upgrade the national economy to fit the process of global competitiveness. This process requires the enhancement of competitiveness among all economic sectors and the work towards the creation of a favorable environment for government investment on the domestic level as well as foreign and private economic initiatives.

This policy has initially manifested itself in building the foundations of structural transformations through the construction and development of domestic infrastructure on two parallel levels : physical and human. Regarding physical infrastructure, the government was concerned with mega-projects such as roads' pavement, transportation, housing and health services. The human infrastructure sector was developed by providing educational and health opportunities to support human resources. Afterwards, most of the efforts were directed towards the development of national and state-centered industries and exports in in

addition to the development and regulation of small and medium enterprises in order to encourage entrepreneurship in national business endeavors.

As a result of this calculated policy, the contribution of the productive sectors in the fields of agriculture, oil, industry, electricity, water and construction was estimated at 55.4 % in 2012 with a growth rate of 4.1% during 2011-2012. The contribution of productive and the services sectors in the spheres of internal trade, finance, hotels, transport, communication and financial projects was estimated at 36.2 % during the same period. Governmental, social and private service sectors have contributed about 8.4% with a growth rate reaching 10.1% during the same period. See Figure (1) below:

Figure (1)

The Contribution of the Productive and Service Sectors in the GDP in 2012 %

Service Sectors : 8.4%

Productive Services Sector : 36.2%

Productive Sectors : 55.4%

Source : Ministry of Economy : “Annual Economic Report 2013”. Abu Dhabi.

The Contribution of Economic Sectors in the Gross Domestic Production - GDP

In order to explore the structural change caused by economic development, it is crucial to engage the mechanism through which the various sectors were able to bring about the change. It is also important to examine the means by which these sectors responded to the various transformations that have accompanied the development process including changes in demand and its components in addition to demographic changes that have occurred since the beginning of development.

Gross Domestic Production (GDP) and Per Capita Income

Structural shifts have been reflected in the acceleration of economic growth rates in the UAE, represented by the rise in the Gross Domestic Production and the increase of the size of the GDP average per capita, especially at the beginning of the foundation of the UAE Federal Union. This process resulted into a steady increase in the GDP. Anyone who has followed the path of growth in the country will observe that the Gross Domestic Production has grown at a total rate which exceeded 545% percent between 1975 and 2001 and an annual growth average rate estimated at 8.5% percent.

The average annual rate during the period from 1975 to 1980 was 36.3%. However, there was a recession in the growth rates in 1981 as a result of lower oil prices. The growth rates, reached 1.7% during the period from 1980 to 1985. But growth rates rebounded after that, reaching 4.2 % on average during the period from 1985 to 1990, and remained positive during the nineties. Nevertheless, the growth rates since the 1990's have been swinging between less than 1% to more

than 14%, except in 1998, when the growth rate declined as a result of the sharp reduction in oil prices.

Figure (2)

The Rate of Growth in the Non-Oil Gross Domestic Production



Source : Ministry of Economy : " Annual Economic Report 2013 ". Abu Dhabi.

The annual growth rate experienced a significant increase during 2000 estimated at more than 27% but the annual growth scored a negative rate of about -3% in 2001 due to the sharp fall in oil prices and lower oil revenues. However, the national economy has recovered and achieved positive growth rates during the period between 2005 and 2010 which amounted to an average of 2.4% in real prices. The GDP has exceeded the value of 1067 billion dirhams in 2013, which means that the output has doubled over the last 42 years more than 165 times.²⁰

Between 1975 and 2001, the average annual growth in non-oil sectors was estimated at 11.5% annually, which exceeds the average annual growth of the UAE GDP for the same period. It is noted that the GDP growth in non-oil sector has

followed a path similar to the rates of growth in GDP, which shows the impact of the changes in the oil markets on these sectors. It is also observed that the growth rates in the GDP with regard to the non-oil sectors experienced less fluctuations compared to the rates of the UAE Gross Domestic Production as a whole. The growth rates have fluctuated in the non-oil GDP in the nineties between more than 13 % in 1994 to a negative rate of about -11 % in 1999, but the growth rates of these sectors rose significantly in 2000 to exceed 37% before declining to about 4.3 % in 2001. The average annual growth of non-oil sectors has reached about 11.5% annually, between 1975 and 2001 which exceeds the average annual growth of the GDP for the same period. The contribution of non-oil sector in the gross domestic production has increased significantly as a result of the state's efforts to diversify sources of national income, making the contribution of non-oil sector up to about 69.5 % in 2010.²¹

It is obvious that figure (2) above refers to the path of growth in GDP and the output of the non-oil sectors during the period from 2001 to 2012. A careful reading of the implications of the mentioned figures show the recovery in growth rates after the financial crisis that entirely swept the world as a result of the concerted efforts to contain the negative ramifications of the crisis and deal with them wisely within the Federal level of the UAE as a whole and not on the level of each single Emirate.

The GDP average per capita has risen during the period between 1975 and 1980 with an annual average rate of about 8.4 % to reach a total of 110,400 dirhams per person in 1980. Nevertheless it experienced a decline thereafter due to the large influx of foreign workers and their families who came to settle

in the UAE. Therefore, the GDP average was relatively between 60000 and 80,000 dirhams per capita since the eighties until 2001. The GDP average per capita in 2012 is estimated at about 154 854 dirhams - \$ 42.080 -(per person) scoring one of the highest rates in the world.

The Contributions of Non-Oil Sectors

The desire to diversify sources of national income and the creation of a production base characterized by permanence and continuity resulted into a marked increase in the proportion of the contribution of non-oil sectors in the GDP. Further, oil resources have contributed to improving the performance of non-oil sectors which led to an increase in its contribution to the economic activity of about 33% in 1975 and about 70% in 2010. Although the crude oil sector is still and will continue to play a key role in the GDP, the noticeable improvement in the contribution of non-oil sectors in the national economy confirms that economic diversification is moving on the right track.

Figure (3) clarifies the share of the non -oil sectors of the production. The figure points out that local trade and construction in addition to transformative industries and transport as well as telecommunications besides the financial and enterprise sectors have played a key role in the components of the GDP. These sectors contributed of about 19.7%, 16.6 %, 15.1%, 12.9 % and 11.3% respectively in 2012.

During 2011-2012 the productive sectors recorded annual growth which reached 4.1% and contributed a rate of 55.4 % in output. Likewise the service sectors achieved productivity growth of about 3.5 % and their contribution was estimated at 36.2 %. The service sectors stood at 4.4%

growth rate and their contribution to the production amounted to 8.4% during the same period.

Figure (3)
The contribution of non - oil sectors in GDP (2012)

Agriculture Extraction Transformative industries Electricity Construction
 trade restaurants and hotels transport and communications real estate Personal Services
 financial projects government services Domestic services banking services

Source : Ministry of Economy, Annual Economic Report 2013 “Abu Dhabi”.

The Contribution of the Services and Industry Sector

Within the GDP of non-oil sectors as clarified by Figure (3), it is noteworthy to observe the growing importance of the services sector in the composition of the highest rate in the gross domestic product, which includes wholesale and retail trade, transportation, finance, insurance, real estate, government services and other services. At the level of the components of the commodity production, it is accurate that the construction sector dominated most of the activities. Simultaneously, there was a significant increase in the importance of the transformative industries sector. This sector forms one of the most important bases with regard to the diversification of the sources of national income due to the availability of many of the basic components including

capital, energy, and certain types of raw materials resulting into the establishment of several private industries relying on crude oil and natural gas.

The concerned institutions and organizations in the country have developed and implemented successive programs to build the industrial sector through the establishment of a multiplicity of large and small industries in various branches and manufacturing activities. In this respect, both the public and private sectors contributed to the implementation of investments in this sector which amounted to 160 billion Dirhams during the period from 2005 to 2010.

The national economy also took advantage of the local and foreign investments in the previously-mentioned sector particularly with regard to the private industries that are eligible to replace imports and encourage foreign investment by providing a suitable environment for a diversified industrial production contributing to the great achievements accomplished in the petrochemical industries sector. As a result of this policy, the total production in this sector rose from 209.7 billion Dirhams in 2005 to 279.3 billion Dirhams in 2010. Further, the added value of the sector increased from 70.4 billion Dirhams in 2005 to 92.3 billion dirhams in 2010 with an annual growth rate of about 5.6 % per annum.²²

In a related scenario, the real estate sector plays a key and vital role in terms of its contribution to the components of the GDP. It is also one of the most significant sectors in attracting local private and foreign investment where the proportion of its contribution in this respect amounted to 10.6 % of the GDP in 2010 and accounted for 17.7 % of the total investment.

In the same vein, the UAE government realized the importance of the tourism sector in promoting a diversified production. As a service sector serving and

interacting with other sectors, it leads the efforts toward development because its prosperity will contribute to the growth of other sectors such as hotels, restaurants, transport, communications, trade and banking, in addition to its role in the promotion of cultural and recreational activities. Throughout the past decades there has been an emerging interest in the tourism sector on the part of the UAE government. This growing concern was crystallized through the careful creation of specialized government institutions, entrusted with the development of the sector, such as the Abu Dhabi Authority for Tourism, the Development and Investment Company of Abu Dhabi, the Abu Dhabi National Hotels Company, the Department of Tourism and Commerce Marketing (DTCM) in Dubai, and the Commerce and Tourism Development in Sharjah and the Office of Fujairah Tourism in addition to the Department of Tourism in Ras Al Khaimah.

Due to its tremendous impact on other economic sectors, the banking sector is an important constituent of the national economy. This sector is responsible for setting monetary and fiscal policy in the country and it is the regulator of the government's economic policies used in the treatment of some of the economic imbalances of inflation or unemployment. It is also the governmental institution which preserves savings and provides funds for investments. In spite of the enormous ramifications of the global financial crisis on the banking sector on the international level, the supporting government policy in addition to the UAE central bank mandatory policies enabled this sector to maintain its strength during the crisis.

Moreover, the development of the UAE banking sector and the strength of the financial centers of its Departments in addition to its high-tech capabilities

contributed greatly to alleviate the devastating impacts of the crisis that has ravaged many of the largest banks in countries around the globe and subverted the most powerful economies in the world. Within these conditions, the customers' deposits amounted to 1167.8 billion Dirhams in 2012, increasing by 9.2% compared with 2011. Moreover, there was an increase in the first half of 2013 estimated at 6 %. The total capital and reserves of banks in the UAE at the beginning of 2013 is estimated at 288.8 billion Dirhams compared to a total capital of 276.4 billion Dirhams in 2012 which reflected a noticeable increase.

The Evolving UAE Companies and their Status in the Global Economy

Recognizing the importance of the role that the private sector can play in the process of economic development the UAE government has adopted a variety of means to stimulate, guide and strengthen the role of the private sector to direct its investment towards the vital areas of industrial and agricultural production as well as the construction and trade projects besides similar enterprises. This policy aims to maximize the contribution of the private sector as a key player in the development process. Therefore the UAE government has participated in strategic partnerships with the private sector through joint-stock companies shared by both parties.

For example (Aldar and Sorouh) companies were established in the Emirate of Abu Dhabi (currently Aldar) to take over the giant real estate projects which aimed at constructing development projects in the tourism and cultural heritage activities sector. Furthermore, Mubadala is one of the leading companies that contribute effectively in supporting economic development in Abu Dhabi, where the company invests in the development of infrastructure projects. Its investments are multiple ranging

from real estate development activities to financial services, transportation, logistics and health care services and others. Moreover, Mubadala has been able to invest in many of the vital industrial production enterprises notably in the aviation industry where the company is engaged in global partnerships. This engagement enabled the company to provide multiple services in the aviation industry including the provision of technical and dynamic solutions, participation in aircraft manufacturing projects and providing maintenance services to civil and military aircrafts in addition to flight training. Besides, Mubadala is involved in global activities including investment projects worth more than US \$ 55 billion in more than 20 countries all over the world. Similarly Emaar, a construction joint stock company listed on the Dubai Financial Market is one of the world's leading global real estate development and investment companies. The same status is applied to Nakheel and Dubai Holding whose role was not limited to a local scale, but their investments swept the markets regionally and globally. The Investment Corporation of Dubai is considered the investment arm of the Dubai government. It is made up of a group of companies either wholly owned by the government or established in partnership with the private sector. It holds a series of strategic investments in the areas of energy, industry, transport, communications, finance and other financial activities.

In a related context, Etisalat is one of the leading companies in the Middle East, Asia and Africa in the area of telecommunications service. Etisalat is the largest company on the level of the GCC institutions with a market value estimated at \$ 22 billion and annual revenues of \$ 9 billion Aluminum.

Regarding the Dubai Aluminum Company (DUBAL) is considered one of the

largest aluminum smelters companies in the world. It is owned by Mubadala and the Dubai Investments Company. Its aluminum output production is up to one million tons per year and is exported to 57 countries throughout the world.

On the other hand, the UAE has a global advantage in the provision of banking services and the banking sector is the country is one of the most advanced sectors by global standards. It contributes effectively to the diversification of the income sources. This sector includes international banks as well as local banks that share the public and private sectors in their ownership. Some of the local banks integral to the UAE banking sector conquered the world's banking markets and established branches in Arab and foreign countries offering advanced banking services and competing with global banks.

The World Bank has ranked the United Arab Emirates as an economic pole on the global level according to its report, issued in 2011 under the title of " multi-polarity in the new global economy ". The World Bank attributes the preceding argument in connection with the UAE economic status to the prestige occupied by the UAE national economy at the present time and its role in moving the global economic growth. Other indicators reflects the same prestige particularly with regard to the role of the UAE economy as one of the most important sources of mergers and acquisitions in the world. The World Bank also predicted in its report that some of the UAE companies will turn into international and cross-border companies in the future.

Economic Legislations

The UAE is seeking through its strategic plans to adopt economic transformations to create and develop appropriate work opportunities for its citizens, meet the needs of the community and keep pace with global economic developments

and scientific as well as technological progress. The UAE is making efforts to build the institutional and legislative frameworks that would guarantee the organization of trade and economic activities in the country and improve the investment climate and create a better flow of private investment conditions. As the economic activities and investments in long -term activities are considered unsecured and are jeopardized as a result of unexpected global fluctuations, the UAE is always seeking to develop and modernize the laws and legislation which aim at encouraging investment and streamlining economic activities.

Since the beginning of the Federation of the UAE, the country has sought to create government institutions entrusted with regulating and licensing activities and proposing legislative frameworks for these activities. Consequently, the Federal Law No. (1) for the year 1972 was issued which defined the terms of reference of the various ministries, including the Ministry of Economy and Trade, which took responsibility for the preparation, proposal and regulation of legal and legislative frameworks crucial to economic activities. Subsequently, different laws have rolled and devoted to cope up with the overall activities, whether economic, social, political or familial. What matters in this area is to shed some light on a number of important laws and legislation that focused on the economic aspects of the equation.

In order to regulate commercial activities in the UAE the Federal Law No. 18 of 1981 was issued to regulate the work-flow of commercial agencies and identify the persons authorized to engage in commercial agencies business in the country taking into consideration a clear identification of the assets under contract and the agent and his/her rights and the registration of commercial agents. To preserve the rights of the citizens sanctions and penalties arising from the breach of the terms of the

contract were clarified and the committees authorized to monitor and determine the implementation of the provisions of the law were identified. This law has been updated and developed in line with the changes in the business environment, therefore the Federal Law No. 14 of 1988 was promulgated for this purpose, followed by Law No. 13 of 2006 which set the duration of the commercial agency, followed by Law No. 12 of 2010, which acknowledged that the non-renewal or revocation of the contract must be due to a substantial reason. The law also acknowledged the inadmissibility of registration of the contract on behalf of another agent except by mutual consent and in the event of a disagreement the trade Agencies Committee shall consider the dispute.

In the UAE, the Federal Law No. (8) of 1984 regulates the trading companies as amended by the Federal Law No. (13) for the year 1988. The forms stipulated by the law of commercial companies are : solidarity companies, limited companies, companies limited by shares, and public contribution companies as well as limited liability companies. Some provisions of this law have been amended under the Federal Law No. (10) of 2007, which added a new article about the family businesses (companies). According to the law the family companies may be converted into public joint stock companies, and the family may retain 70% of the company's shares and 30% of the shares should be posed for public subscription.

In the UAE, the Commercial Companies Law has stated on the permissibility of the contribution of non-citizens in commercial companies incorporated in the country, provided that in each of which one or more partners should be citizens and no less than the share of 51% of the company's capital shall be owned by the UAE citizens taking into account the business activities which are confined to the nationals, provided by this law, or any other law. The law defines the inadmissibility of participation

of foreign partners in solidarity companies, and limited companies, and companies limited by shares, which means that foreigners are allowed to participate in these companies as partners or recommending shareholders.

In addition, and in accordance with the Commercial Companies Law, foreign companies can open branches in the UAE under the licenses obtained from the concerned ministry after obtaining the approval of the local authority, provided that the foreign company should have a citizen agent. Further, the office or the branch of the foreign company is considered as its home within the UAE and its activities are subject to the provisions of applicable laws in the country.

Insurance is among activities that are confined to UAE nationals regulated by the Federal Law No.(9) of 1984 concerning insurance companies and agents. According to this law, insurance companies incorporated in the country take the form of public shareholding companies, and all of their shares shall be nominal, and their capital should be owned by shareholders carrying the nationality of the UAE.

In terms of the Federal Law No. (37) for the year 1992 concerning trademarks and as amended in 2000 (No. 19) and 2002 (No. 8), it is apparent that the law has identified the brand specifications, and trademark's registration specifications including signs that are likely to mislead the public or those signs including false statements on the origins and sources of the products. The law identified the terms of trademark registration and cancellation. It stipulates the existence of a written record in the Ministry of economy and Commerce carrying the name of "trademark record". Further, terms related to the ownership of the mark and mortgage transmission were identified besides providing detailing the specifications of the license contracts regarding the use of the mark so that the beneficiary of the license may not be waived

for others or grant sub-licenses to others unless stated otherwise in the contract. This law also includes details regarding penalties for all violations.

To combat commercial cover-up, the Federal Law No. (17) for the year 2004 was issued, which identified the meaning of commercial cover-up as enabling a foreigner whether a natural or legal person to exercise any economic or professional activity prohibited by the laws and decisions enforced in the country which incriminate the exercise of such activity whether for the account of the foreigner or in association with others. Any person convicted of commercial cover-up is subject to legal sanctions including a fine not exceeding one hundred thousand Dirhams and the imprisonment for a period not exceeding two years with a fine of one hundred thousand Dirhams and the cancellation of the commercial license. The foreigner involved in the crime will be punished by the same sentence followed by deportation from the country.

In order to enable the UAE economy to take advantage of recent developments, cope up with the scientific / technical development, comply with changing global trends, be familiarized with the global economies, construct international partnerships, facilitate trade through electronic systems and get in touch with the latest development of smart services system, the UAE government issued the Federal Law No. (1) for the year 2006 on e-commerce transactions in order to encourage and facilitate e-commerce and electronic transactions given the protection of rights of all parties. The law identifies the obligations of dealers who deal with different issues electronically. It also establishes uniform rules and standards related to the authentication and integrity of electronic correspondence. Finally, provisions

related to certificates of electronic authentication and certification services are identified by the law.

The UAE realized that achieving the maximum benefit of foreign capital requires the identification of specific areas of economic activities that are available for investment of foreign capital. The same process requires new policies and incentives associated with each type of desired foreign investment. Therefore, the country emphasized the importance of selecting investments that meet national needs and achieve economic goals and help local economy to be integrated into the global economy and compete in global markets. Since many advantages are expected from foreign investment, the UAE consequently aims to strengthen its capacity through the development of production and the enhancement of its efficiency by using advanced technology and providing access to markets with the help of foreign companies that are more sophisticated and competitive particularly the owners of innovative applications in the production, marketing and distribution sectors across world.

In order to improve the investment climate and create better conditions for the flow of private investment and attracted various economic sectors, including the oil sector, the UAE has taken concrete steps to change the internal and external regulatory and legal frameworks affiliated with foreign investment. Thereupon, the UAE introduced private legislations aiming to encourage investment by creating a legislative framework which stimulates foreign investment and provides necessary privileges and guarantees to enhance investment. The legislative framework at the same time removes a large part of the regulatory barriers and facilitate and shortens the administrative procedures and contributes to the expansion of the application of e-government, and intensifies the efforts related to promotional activities to attract

investment through increasing the external visits and seminars and workshops and other activities.

In order to preserve and protect the consumers' rights, the Federal Law No. (24) for the year 2006 was issued. This law includes 24 articles and provides the establishment of Consumer Protection Department and defines its terms of reference, including the monitoring and controlling of commodity prices in addition to achieving the principle of fair competition and preventing monopoly. The Consumer Protection Department is also responsible for preventing the display or supply or promotion or advertising of any goods or services that are corrupt or fraudulent or misleading so or may damage the consumers' interests and health. The Consumer Protection Department is also authorized to oblige the provider of any product to include in the contracts a commitment to provide maintenance or after-sales service. Besides, The department is authorized to determine sanctioning a fine of not less than one thousand Dirhams and up to at least to 10 thousand Dirhams for violators of the law. This law was followed by the Council of Ministers resolution No. (12) of 2007 on the formation of the Supreme Committee for Consumer Protection and determined its terms of reference. The Supreme Committee for Consumer Protection aims to set up the public policy toward the consumer protection issue and the preservation of health and safety in addition to the development of more restrictions to improve the quality of the goods. The committee also aims to fight against monopoly and monitor prices in addition to establishing rules which will guarantee consumer rights and well-being.

Finally, there was another package of laws supporting and stimulating economic activities including the labor laws and laws governing the banking activities in general and the banking work of the Central Bank in particular. This package also consists

of laws regulating work-flow in the capital markets, and disclosure and transparency laws in addition to laws related to the applications of corporate governance. This package of laws aims to create an appropriate environment suitable for encouraging and attracting national foreign and investments.

Conclusion

The UAE has succeeded in the confrontation of economic growth and development challenges through the use of the allocations of oil revenues to build a base for growth by investing in physical infrastructure and human resources. Eventually, the UAE economy passed through different stages of development, during which it was able to move from a primitive economy to a modern and sophisticated economy based on modernized and globalized concepts. Afterwards, the UAE realized that the achievement of economic growth rates will only be fixed through consistent self-productivity sectors which are open to the outside world and competitive at the regional level. Therefore it was necessary to create a better climate for development by focusing on the establishment of a viable and sustainable economy capable of global competition through a positive and integrated vision that will contribute to the continued development of the economy and the rehabilitation of productive and service sectors. This policy will inevitably lead to long-term development that addresses the various dimensions of economic, social and political growth. On this basis, the federal government strategy was established which included various aspects of growth. The strategy aims to develop economic decisions based on solid studies and able to delineate a clear picture of the distant future taking into account not only the requirements of the present generation, but future generations as well.

In this context come the Emirates Vision 2021 and the economic vision of the

Emirate of Abu Dhabi 2030 to define the development goals, and the consequent strategic priorities, suggest means and implementation tools, provide details about the development stages and the evaluation mechanisms that must be followed for the production diversification process besides the achievement of self-growth, job creation in addition to achieving the strategic objectives of development which aimed at raising the standard of living. Simultaneously, both visions aim to ensure balanced development, not only at the local level, but also at the regional and global paradigms making it easier to integrate into the international economy.

Both Strategic Visions have realized the importance of the qualitative transition towards a knowledge-based economy, which aims to develop the country's economy to a model in which development depends on knowledge and innovation through investment in education and the development of new technologies that elevate the economic and productive activities to compete with global economies.

This model of development requires the establishment of entrepreneurial business environment to accommodate Emirati skills and their creativity, and develop the capacities of a new generation of entrepreneurs and encourage them by supporting small and medium-quality projects. This policy will be implemented within a national effort aiming to spread the spirit of initiative, hard work, courage and creativity, and motivates citizens to play a key role in development of their country.

While the UAE is seeking to secure a global competitive atmosphere by all accounts it looks forward to going beyond traditional models of economy and establish a flexible and sophisticated systems focusing on meeting the requirement of the business centers and fulfilling the needs of consumers whose tastes and requirements define and determine type of goods produced and services provided. These goods and

services should adopt at the same time the international standards in order to compete in the global market. These procedures can be achieved through ambitious visions and policies stimulating local entrepreneurship and supporting creative initiatives and attracting direct foreign investment. The ultimate aim in this context is to make the UAE economy more flexible capable of achieving self-sustained growth in order to ensure a long-term prosperity for the people of this generous country and the coming generations.

Notes

- ^{1.} GDP refers to the market value of various goods and services that are locally produced in a country during a specific period of time and is used as an indicator to measure the standard of living in different countries.
- ^{2.} The Emirates Center for Strategic Studies.
- ^{3.} Kazim Aqil, The United Arab Emirates, A.D. 600 to The Present: A Socio-Discursive Transformation in the Arabian Gulf (Dubai: Gulf Book Center, 2000), p p.30-58.
- ^{4.} Kazim Aqil, “The Pearling Industry in the UAE region 1869-1938: its Construction, Reproduction and Decline” paper presented at NYUA Conference on “Pre-Occupations in the UAE: The Work-A-Day World before Oil.” Abu Dhabi, May 13-14, 2013.
- ^{5.} Ibid.
- ^{6.} The Emirates Center for Strategic Studies, 2013, p 2.
- ^{7.} Ibid.
- ^{8.} Ministry of Economy. 2012.
- ^{9.} Ministry of Economy. 2013.
- ^{10.} Emirates Vision 2021.
- ^{11.} Ministry of Economy. 2014.
- ^{12.} US Energy information. 2001
- ^{13.} Ministry of Economy. 2014.
- ^{14.} US Energy information. 2013
- ^{15.} US Energy information. 2013
- ^{16.} Ministry of Economy.
- ^{17.} Global Investment House “Global” 2013.
- ^{18.} The Emirates Center for Strategic Studies, p 5.
- ^{19.} Ministry of Economy.
- ^{20.} The Emirates Center for Strategic Studies, November (2013), p 9.
- ^{21.} Ministry of Economy.
- ^{22.} Ministry of Economy: Economic Report.

Chapter Ten

Energy in the United Arab Emirates



Chapter Ten

Energy in the United Arab Emirates

Dr. Abdulla Abdul-Aziz Alnajjar

Introduction

The “investment in human beings” is considered as a key national goal in the UAE. It is no secret that the country’s founder Sheikh Zayed Bin Sultan, was the first one to stress the need to pay attention to human beings. Since the first years following the birth of the Federal State in December 2, 1971, Sheikh Zayed focused on the investment in the UAE citizens. Likewise, His Highness Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed Al Nahyan the UAE president and their Highnesses the members of the Supreme Council of the Union have emphasized the need to secure a life of high quality for the UAE citizens including stimulating environment and suitable living conditions which combine community prosperity and sustainable development.

The UAE citizen contributes effectively in the production of knowledge, which is no longer restricted to the West. The Emirati citizen succeeded in accomplishing high rates of economic growth and great national achievements and, in all walks of life. These unprecedented contributions are due to the government policies which enhanced the sense of identity and affiliation to the UAE as a homeland for all Emiratis. The comprehensive and sustainable development, which is materialized in all fields in the UAE gained the appreciation of regional and international institutions. Major economic organizations throughout the world highly estimated the development process in the UAE. The development process underlines the pioneering role of the country which achieved miraculous success in all spheres of development,

therefore the UAE emerges as a model and an example to be emulated by the neighboring countries in the region.¹

Clean and renewable energy constitutes the core of comprehensive and sustainable development in the future. This reality is confirmed by reports issued by various international organizations since the first decades of the twentieth century, including the Organization of Petroleum Exporting Countries “OPEC, the Organization of Arab Petroleum Exporting Countries” OAPEC, and the International Renewable Energy Agency, IAEA. In fact, all related international organizations highlighted the special role played by the UAE in the field of clean and renewable energy. The future of economic growth and social stability in any modern society has mainly depended on domestic achievements on the path of progress and the knowledge economy.

Within this context, the issue of the clean energy in the UAE emerges as part of the knowledge economy and as added values to both society and State. The issue of the clean energy is also integral to the knowledge society based on innovative ideas and specific investments. It is also expression of the authenticity of the UAE community which moves steadily and confidently on the trail of cognitive development in order to achieve prosperity for the UAE people and improve their conditions of life to be at the best levels.²

In the light of the precedent argument, this chapter is divided into three parts: The first part deals with the clean energy in the UAE. This part provides a definition of energy and identifies its different forms and international status. This part also explores the emergence of the UAE as a platform for renewable and clean energy in the region. The second part of this chapter discusses the efforts and initiatives

of the UAE government in the development and use of clean energy, including the establishment of Masdar City and the launching of the Zayed Prize of Future Energy. This part also sheds light on the UAE as the host of “Irena,” the International Renewable Energy Agency headquarters and addresses the environmental contributions of the United Arab Emirates, as well as the government’s efforts to diversify energy sources such as the solar energy, the nuclear energy and the wind power. The third part of this chapter is primarily concerned with sustainable cities and other related issues including the Green Economy Initiative. This part also provides pivotal information about sustainable cities and government buildings including schools and hotels. It demonstrates models for cities of sustainability such Abu Dhabi, Dubai, and Sharjah.

Clean Energy in the United Arab Emirates

Definition of Energy, its Forms and International Status

Definition of Energy:

Before turning to the issue of clean energy in the United Arab Emirates, it is important to define energy and identify the meaning of renewable/ clean energy concept.

Different Phases of Energy Development:

Energy is the ability to do an activity. Human beings have known fire since the beginning of their exploitation of energy and used it for various life-sustaining purposes. Throughout time, the forms of energy changed from the thermal form to the form of ignition, where it takes different shapes including: heat, light and sound in addition to mechanical, electrical, kinetic, radiological as well as nuclear powers. Energy could also be converted from one form to another such as the change of

chemical energy into light energy and the transformation of chemical energy into kinetic power. Energy and its sources are classified according to the possibility of its renewal and continuity. In this context, **the Environment Encyclopedia contains reference to different types of energy as follows:**

- 1. Traditional or Depleting Energy** which includes: coal, oil, minerals, natural gas, and chemical substances. It is prone to run out, after being utilized for a period of time.
- 2. Clean or Renewable or Alternative Energy**, which includes: solar energy, wind energy, Biomass energy (living Biomass), waterfalls energy, geothermal energy, waves energy, tidal movement energy, the ebb and flow energy as well as the energy generated by differences of temperature in the depths of oceans and seas. These are inexhaustible types of energy.³

Renewable Energy

is defined as the energy derived from natural resources which are not radically different from fossil fuel sources such as coal, petroleum, natural gas, or the nuclear fuel used in nuclear reactors stations. According to the reports approved by the International Renewable Energy Agency, the waste resulting from this type of fuel is not harmful to humans or environment.⁴

Safe Future Energy

With the growing negative results emanating from conventional energy, many advanced countries all over the world, plan to increase their production of the renewable energy, at rates ranging between 20% to 25% by 2020 from their total energy consumption. At the Kyoto Conference in Japan, the majority of the world leaders agreed to reduce the amount of carbon dioxide emission,to mitigate the severity of threats

resulting from climate change due to the excessive use of traditional fossil fuels. China, Western countries and some Asian nations were among the leading countries that participated in the Kyoto Conference. Some Arab - nations also took part in the conference particularly countries known for their progress in the field of developing knowledge-based societies such as the United Arab Emirates which is considered as a regional role model in this area. In a related scenario, the Chinese National Centre for Renewable Energy, the Masdar City in Abu Dhabi, and the city of King Abdullah for atomic and renewable energy in Saudi Arabia constitute the most important strategic units concerned with the study and production of renewable energy.

Advantages of Renewable Energy

Green Studies Series reveal the importance of renewable energy in the preservation of human health and environment, stressing that the intensive use of traditional energy is negatively detrimental to human health and environment leading to fatal phenomena threatening humanity such as global warming.⁵ Renewable energy has many benefits and it is inexhaustible. It also generates an energy which is clean from gaseous, liquid and solid waste. This clean energy contributes to the protection of human health, and conservation of natural environment. Clean energy spreads everywhere, and it can be obtained even in communities existing in remote areas and far-away destinations. This energy is useful in improving human life and in alleviating poverty in addition to securing new jobs. The use of clean energy contributes to the reduction of harmful gaseous and thermal emissions. Moreover the utilization of clean energy decreases the number and severity of natural disasters resulting from global warming which automatically leads to the protection of all living

organisms, especially endangered and extinct species.⁶

Renewable Energy on the Arab and International Levels

In order to maintain a sustainable and safe environment, extensive attention has been given to the renewable energy issue internationally and in the Arab world as well. This worldwide concern with renewable energy is translated in the increasing investment in the this sector. According to Dr. Ali Sayegh the world's investment in the sector of renewable energy has increased to around 350 billion dollars in 2012, according to what was said by Dr. Ali Sayegh, the president of the World Renewable Energy Network (WREN) versus 320 billion dollars invested in the traditional energy sector. Seven billion dollars were also invested in order to get rid of conventional energy waste.⁷

The Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, UAE and Kuwait are at the forefront of Arab countries investing in renewable energy, the energy of the future. Currently, there are more than one hundred projects under development in the Arab region and the Middle Eastern directed to generate solar and wind energy. This sector is growing at a rate of about 40%. The need for renewable energy is increasing at a high rate in light of the growing demand for electricity consumption in the Arab region.⁸

The United Arab Emirates as Platform for Renewable and Clean Energy

The UAE is one of the most important producers and exporters of oil and it has huge reserves of natural gas. The UAE government is fully aware that conventional energy is exhaustible. Therefore and thanks to the future outlook and broad prospects of the wise leadership in the UAE, the country succeeded in diversifying the energy sources in the light of the population growth.

The annual statistics report issued by the UAE National Bureau of Statistics for 2012 reveals that the production capacity of the power plants in the country exceeds the consumption rates. In terms of electricity production across the country, Abu Dhabi and Dubai come first followed by the other Emirates. An analysis of the energy sources supplies reveals that natural gas is one of the key resources in securing the production of electricity in the country- The preceding argument highlights the importance of using clean and renewable energy, particularly solar energy, nuclear energy and wind energy to fulfill the needs of energy and electricity in the future.⁹

It should be noted that the current vision for development of ambitious plans to preserve the environment and achieve welfare for the UAE citizens is an extension of the achievements, endeavors and the vision of Sheikh Zayed Bin Sultan Al Nahyan He prioritized the investment in environmental protection and conservation of natural resources for the sake of the Emirati people. In other words Sheikh Zayed focused on environmental issues in order to maintain the interests of the future generations. Currently the UAE leadership is following the same approach, which aims to promote the efforts of sustainable development and increase the country's competitiveness regionally and internationally in this respect.¹⁰

The United Arab Emirates and Energy in the “White Paper”

The UAE has crystallized its policy on energy in the “White Paper” issued by the Ministry of Environment based on the meeting of the “Group 20.” This official document reveals the commitment of the United Arab Emirates to perform a pioneering role in the stimulating practices integral to the

successful development of clean energy and energy efficiency locally and around the world. It is obvious that the UAE it is not only a major entrepreneur responsible for providing energy to the world, but it is also representing one of the highest levels of per capita consumption of energy. Therefore the UAE has a unique opportunity to play an active role in the development and adoption of alternative and renewable energy technology.

In this context, the G20 established a clean energy working team to address the challenges emanating from the rising demands for energy and climate change in order to identify best practices in the field of clean energy. The “White Paper” document displays that the United Arab Emirates is equipped with a worthy confidence in the energy markets worldwide. The UAE has the seventh largest oil reserves in the world, and the seventh largest reserves of natural gas, which make the country an important partner in the global energy markets. The UAE is the third largest crude oil exporter globally, and the country is well aware of the risk associated with –complete dependence on one type of export industries, especially after the collapse of the pearl sector in the 1930s. The UAE was one of the first countries that have ratified the Kyoto Protocol of the Framework Agreement of the United Nations on climate change.¹¹

The UAE government is relentlessly working on the implementation of policies to diversify the local economy, and reduce dependence on traditional fuels, with the expansion of solar and wind energy and peaceful nuclear energy as well. As a result of this policy the government provided hundreds of thousands of jobs, in many sectors. Abu Dhabi government has also invested more than \$20 billion, in the most ambitious clean energy programs. This initiative focuses on

the development and marketing of renewable energy technology. The Emirate of Abu Dhabi has announced that by 2020, it will depend generate 7% of its electricity on renewable energy. Dubai has also set a target to generate 5% of the Emirate's electricity from renewable energy sources by 2030.¹²

The Efforts of the UAE in the Development and Use of Clean Energy

The United Arab Emirates focused on a set of domestic projects, which were implemented, based on the wise guidance of the national leadership, as follows:

Masdar City

Masdar is the first city in the world which is free of waste, environmentally friendly, and fully operates on solar energy. It is one of the largest and the world's most ambitious projects, in the category of sustainable cities in the world. The city, located near Abu Dhabi, is a global and regional green area reserved for free economy, advanced technologies, and future energy. It is also a facility for research studies, innovation, production of knowledge, ideas and, the development, and marketing of applications essential to energy technologies particularly renewable and solar energy. Masdar city is fully owned by the Abu Dhabi government represented by Mubadala Company for development.¹³

Masdar city is a complete entity, based on a master plan which mainly focuses on sustainability and development, according to a group of elements such as the design of buildings in a way that minimizes heat gained from either the buildings or the streets of the city and the integration of employment, housing, entertainment and easy transport. Masdar city is distinguished by its low buildings and the vitality of its urban

areas which encourage pedestrians to walk in the fresh air of the city. Undoubtedly, Masdar is an environment friendly city with a high quality of life.¹⁴ Masdar city has gained global reputation due to its uniqueness and distinctiveness. The city succeeded in hosting the “World Future Energy Summit”, organized annually by the UAE. The Summit deals with issues of pivotal links to renewable energy, energy efficiency, energy technology and the confrontation of the dangers of climate change. The summit also tackles issues related to policies affiliated with marketing, and financing renewable energy. This summit, combines government officials, multinational companies, experts, specialists, and those interested in the renewable energy of the future. The summit also explores issues closely related to green economy, green cities and buildings, in addition to the development of renewable energy generation technologies.¹⁵

Masdar company, founded in 2006, consists of five units operating in the field of renewable energy as follows: Masdar company, Masdar Institute, Masdar for energy, Masdar for carbon management and Masdar Incorporation for Investment.¹⁶ With respect to Masdar Institute for Science and Technology, it is a private independent university for graduate studies and research. It is the only university in the region that specializes in clean and sustainable energy development. It aims to prepare students and cultivate a generation of innovators, scientists and researchers in the field of renewable energy technologies. The Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT), one of the most renowned American institutions is a key partner of the Masdar Institute of Science and Technology.

Masdar unit for carbon management, is part of Masdar city, which aims to reduce carbon emissions through the recovery of wasted heat and the enhancement of the

efficiency of energy consumption. Combined with the preceding initiatives, there is a major enterprise represented by the global scale carbon dioxide detention and storage project established in cooperation with the Abu Dhabi National Oil Company ADNOC. Masdar unit for carbon management also works in Arab projects, including projects in Egypt, and in countries located south of the great sub-Saharan African desert and in Asia.¹⁷

As for Masdar unit for investment, it provides financial support and technical expertise in addition to managing successful local, regional, and global investments. Its investments is financed by Masdar Fund for Clean Energy founded in 2006 and 2006, Deutsche Masdar Bank Fund for Clean Technologies founded in 2009. The total investments of both Funds is about 35 million dollars. Masdar city constitutes one of the motivational reasons for selecting the UAE as the host of the International Renewable Energy Agency headquarters.¹⁸

Masdar City Projects in the UAE, the Arab Region and Throughout the World

The development of “Shams 1” and “Nour 1” stations are among the ambitious projects, carried out by Masdar city for clean energy in the United Arab Emirates.¹⁹

The list of projects implemented by Masdar for energy contains the joint project between Obnjua Solar and Total company in the western region of Abu Dhabi. This project is the largest concentrated power solar plant in the Middle East, and one of the largest projects in the world. The company also has developed a photoelectric plant in Masdar city. It also constructed a farm to generate wind power plant and photocell plant on Sir Bani Yas Island. Further Masdar for clean energy also utilizes strategic investments in the development of detention and carbon storage projects in

the United Arab Emirates.²⁰

Added to the preceding contributions is the largest photoelectric and solar power plant in Africa, launched by the Mauritanian government in cooperation with the Abu Dhabi Future Energy Company “Masdar” in April 2013. Other projects have been carried out by Masdar such as the “Jimasolar” plant for solar power in Spain, the London Array Energy Offshore wind on the River Thames in the United Kingdom, and the Victoria Port plant for wind power in Seychelles in Africa which provides 25% of the required energy from wind power. Moreover, Masdar also implemented a project in Afghanistan to provide the country with Solar photovoltaic panels systems. In a similar context, Masdar company also announced that it is looking forward for investments in Saudi Arabia.²¹

Zayed Future Energy Award

In recognition of the leading role played by Sheikh Zayed Bin Sultan Al Nahyan the UAE launched the “Zayed Future Energy Award” to encourage innovators, creators, and experts to contribute to the development of policies and legislation related to the renewable energy technology. This award is dedicated for innovative contributions in achieving sustainable development in the renewable energy field to meet the energy security challenges in the world and the UAE society. The award is also granted to small, medium and large companies and civil, non-governmental organizations known for their innovative activities in the areas of environmental protection, climate change confrontation, and the development of renewable energy technology as a means of sustainable clean energy underpinning green economics. The award is open to all individuals and organizations worldwide and it aims to benefit from the human innovative and creative contributions to the development of future energy

technologies. People from many countries Such as India, Britain, France, the United States, and others won this award.²²

The UAE Hosts the International Renewable Energy Agency “Irena” Headquarters

Under the guidance of His Highness Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed Al Nahyan, president of the United Arab Emirates, the country succeeded in shifting into a global platform for cooperation and dialogue on renewable energy. Further, the UAE was chosen as the host of the International Renewable Energy Agency Organization “Irena” headquarters.

The UAE Ministry of Foreign Affairs established a department specialized in climate change and energy affairs, to ensure optimum and effective representation of the country in the “Irena” in addition to promote and support the representation of the country in clean and renewable energy international forums. The International Renewable Energy Agency “IRENA” was founded in January 26, 2009, at an inaugurating conference in Bonn, Germany where 75 countries signed its statute.

After four years of its establishment, the UAE contributed to transform the “Irena” agency into a universal and comprehensive platform including most of the world nations bringing the number of its members to 147 countries in July 2010. The International Renewable Energy Agency “Irena” aims to stimulate and encourage diversification of energy sources, and the proliferation of renewable energy projects and solutions. IRENA also aims to promote the use of renewable energy sources in various countries around the world.²³ The Abu Dhabi Fund for Development provided “Irena” with 350 million dollars over seven years as part of its policy to finance the Renewable energy projects implemented by the agency.²⁴

At the level of legislation and resolutions, the UAE focused on providing a suitable legal and legislative environment able to stimulate the renewable energy development policies. In other words, the UAE was very much concerned with the legislations related to the official representation of the country in the headquarters of the International Agency of Renewable energy, IRENA in the capital city of Abu Dhabi.

The UAE was selected unanimously to be the headquarters of -IRENA at a meeting hosted by the Egyptian city of Sharm el-Sheikh on the 29th of June 2009.²⁵ The UAE Foreign Ministry represented by His Highness Sheikh Abdullah bin Zayed Al Nahyan, Foreign Minister gave priority to the partnership between the government and the “Irena” agency and its member States, in order to encourage the growth of the renewable energy sector so that it would reach the levels of competition in the global market, especially that the UAE is a supportive global center for innovation in the field of renewable energy. This policy is advocated in the context of the global shifts toward the UAE as the headquarters of “Irena” in search for solutions able to meet the challenges and risks of climate change. On this basis, IRENA proceeds from the UAE as an effective platform contributing to the energy security on the global level and ensuring that energy will be provided to the whole world.²⁶

The UAE Ecological Footprint

The ecological footprint is the sustainability index, which reveals the relationship between human beings and the consumption of the earth’s resources. The ecological footprint can also be a tool to measure the impact of any country on the earth’s resources by comparing the request of the population versus resources and the ability of Mother Nature to renew these resources.²⁷

The Living Planet Report (2006) reveals that the UAE scores the highest ecological footprint of the individual in the world. This classification comes with the launching of the UAE ecological footprint initiative in 2007 within the framework of the partnership between the UAE Ministry of Environment, the Abu Dhabi Global Environmental Data initiative AGEDI, the Environment Agency in Abu Dhabi and the UAE Wildlife Society in collaboration with the World Wide Fund for Nature (WWF) and the global Network for Ecological Footprint. The UAE occupies the third rank globally after Switzerland and Japan, in terms of the ecological footprint and consumption patterns. Afterwards the UAE came in the fifth place.²⁸ This result indicates the high rate of consumption of the UAE population of food, fiber, energy, and various goods and services.²⁹

The Goals of the UAE Ecological Footprint of Initiative

The UAE is working toward the improvement of its environmental status, through strengthening the cooperation between government and private agencies. The UAE policy in this respect involves the reduction of the ecological footprint, the development of domestic environmental data, and the encouragement of all sides to participate in the environment-protection initiative. This initiative targets houses, schools, public and private sectors. Initially, it aims to raise awareness among the UAE citizens regarding the importance of maintaining electric power and water. The citizens are also acquainted with the ways through which the transition to a green and sustainable environment will be achieved.³⁰ In a related context, a set of public education programs aiming to increase public awareness, were organized by the Emirates Wildlife Society in collaboration with the World Wide Fund for Nature (WWF), the Abu Dhabi Environment Agency, the Ministry of Energy, the Ministry of

Environment and Water, the Abu Dhabi Water and Electricity Authority and Masdar company. These programs include: Heroes of the UAE, the Arab hygiene campaign, the “Clean Up the UAE” campaign, and the “Day without Paper” initiative.³¹

The Reduction of the Ecological Footprint Scenarios

The UAE ecological footprint initiative advocated the creation of a new model for an effective management of water and electricity in order to help the decision-maker manage these sectors in a better way through the reduction of carbon dioxide emissions resulting into the improvement of the efficiency of agricultural land, pastures, and fishing areas in the UAE. There is a series of steps, that can be followed from now until 2030, which will contribute to improving The UAE ecological footprint as follows: reducing the demand for cooling, using of energy-saving devices, mitigating the use of motor cars, increasing the use of electric cars and building four peaceful nuclear energy plants for, prioritizing renewable energy production under the umbrella of the “Emirates Green strategy of development” in order to achieve sustainable development.

Diversification of Energy Sources

The successive increases in the traditional fossil fuel prices resulted into the growing importance of global solar energy in light of the evolution of generation technologies, low cost of solar electromagnetic cells production during the last decade. The concentration of the United Arab Emirates on diversifying energy sources came as a response to the instructions of the UAE president, Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed, who said more than once, “The Emirates seeks to increase the diversity of energy sources and works toward the development of its expertise in the global energy markets in order to enhance its leading role as a global hub for research

and development in the field of renewable energy.”³² In a similar vein, Sheikh Mohammed bin Rashid, the UAE Vice President has called for the need to preserve the domestic resources, the environment and energy. He said “We recognize that the protection of our resources represent one of the greatest challenges in our path towards sustainable development but that this goal will not be fulfilled unless the efforts of the various categories of our nation are unified in integrating the energy conservation rules within the main values of our society of our future generations will be the first beneficiary of these achievements and they will be in a better position to evaluate our contributions in this area.”³³

Solar Power

Demand for solar electricity has grown over the past years, and scored a remarkable growth in the beginning of 2010. Likewise, the production and consumption of solar energy has increased in the UAE in 2010³⁴ due to the success of the UAE in the exploitation of solar energy applications in projects related to traffic regulation systems, parking and speed timers. Nevertheless, the year 2011 is considered a milestone in the solar energy record after the Dubai Municipality announced its intention to implement

the solar heaters technology project to generate hot water supply in many of the buildings. The application of this project will lead to the provision of electricity consumption. It will have a positive impact on the environmental by reducing the emission of harmful gases if applied to half the Emirate’s buildings. The Emirate of Dubai also issued a special circular regarding the use of the solar heaters system.³⁵

The Dubai Municipality has used the system of solar water heaters in several vital

projects in the Emirate. This mechanism was used to provide hot water to one of the most important projects: “Sheikh Hamdan bin Mohammed Olympic Complex” in Dubai. Moreover, the Dubai Municipality also announced the use of solar energy in lighting and in the irrigation network of the “Port Said Square Baza” project. Solar energy is utilized in this project to irrigate plants and trees, as well as night lighting without energy operating costs. The project emerges as a new trend in the field of open gardens within the Emirate of Dubai. Solar panels are also used in the “Oryx Desert Reservation” in Dubai. At the center of the reservation there is a five-star hotel and its entire facilities besides the cooling system are run by electrical energy, generated by photovoltaic “solar” panels.³⁶

Masdar and the Solar Projects

In a similar scenario, Masdar city has introduced a joint pilot project in 2011 in collaboration with the Abu Dhabi Water and Electricity Authority for Solar Energy through which photovoltaic panels are installed on the roofs of several private government buildings in the UAE capital city where the panels convert sunlight energy directly into electrical power stored in special batteries, to be used after sunset. Furthermore, the “Jimasolar” plant for concentrated solar power in Spain is a joint venture between Masdar and the Sener company originated in Spain. The project is implemented by the, Torresol Energy Company. The plant was inaugurated in October 2011 and it is the first solar power plant in the world which is able to supply electricity to the network for 24 hours a day without interruption.³⁷

During the opening of the Spanish plant, the Abu Dhabi Crown Prince Sheikh Mohammed bin Zayed said, “The UAE will pursue its efforts to accomplish sustainable development and provide its most important accessories. The UAE

will effectively contribute to the promotion of the global energy security through dissemination of the feasibility of the investment in renewable energy technology in order to achieve balance in sources and maintain the sustainability of the necessary resources to meet all future challenges.” His Highness added “The real success will require Masdar to encourage, inspire, and help others to find future energy sources. He emphasized the important role of the UAE represented by the Masdar initiative in enhancing international relations in addition to its role in the area of renewable energy and advanced technology. He also highlights Madsar’s efforts to ensure energy security and minimize the impact of climate change”. (38) Moreover, the photoelectric plant is one of the local projects carried out by Masdar city in the field of renewable energy. The plant operates for more than two years, to secure the needs of the existing buildings in Masdar city and convert the surplus to the national grid electricity in Abu Dhabi.³⁸

Key Models for the Employment of Solar Energy in the UAE

Mohammed bin Rashid Al Maktoum Solar Park:³⁹ This mega project is one of the leading solar complexes in the Gulf region. It contributes to the provision of energy supply and the sustainability of its sources. It aims to achieve equilibrium between the needs of the current generation and the requirements of the future generations. It also seeks to create an urban environment able to fulfill sustainability in the resources which support the Emirate of Dubai. This project provides renewable energy up to 5 % of the electric power. It also renewable energy up to 12 % of the nuclear power and clean coal. The remaining percentage is secured to generate electricity through the use of natural gas by the year 2030.⁴⁰ The investment cost of this project is estimated at 12 billion dirhams. The first phase of the project was operated in the fourth quarter

of the year 2013.⁴¹ The project is supervised by the Supreme Council of Energy in Dubai within the boundaries of Dubai Integrated Energy Strategy 2030. The Supreme Council of Energy in Dubai revealed that a package of legislation will be issued to regulate the work-flow in the solar energy complex projects related to the solar energy sources on the rooftops or on the ground and the high production capacity solar power plants.⁴²

The Use of Solar Energy in the Desalination of Sea Water⁴³ In the UAE, there are different types of water sources including the ground/subterranean water and the desalinated water in addition to the treated wastewater. The high population growth rate is one of the most crucial issues related to water security in the UAE. This issue is linked to the high per capita consumption rate in addition to the rapid urban and agricultural expansion. The United Arab Emirates occupies the second rank in the world in the production of desalinated water. However, the country needs 4.5 billion cubic meters of water per year, and the government has made great efforts in the production process to solve the water problems by utilizing the renewable energy facilities.⁴⁴ In this context, the Environment Agency in Abu Dhabi has built 26 stations for high salinity groundwater desalination using solar energy.

The Environment Agency in Abu Dhabi aims to create balance between socio-economic development and environmental protection according to its report issued in 2012. The agency operates according to domestic policies seeking to achieve sustainable development, and maintain the purity and safety of the environment. The same policies strive to protect human health and promote the development of natural environment resources.⁴⁵ The Environment Agency in Abu Dhabi focuses on increasing the efficiency

of solar collection systems and reducing the environmental impact of the safe disposal of high-salinity water by developing environmentally friendly systems and by erecting industries with economic benefits, such as the production of salt,, animal fodder and agricultural fertilizers.⁴⁶

The Shams/Sun Plant 1 Project:⁴⁷ The “Shams 1” project is the largest concentrated solar power plant in the world. At investment cost of the project is 600 million dollars. It is planned that this project will provide the power supply for about 20 thousand houses.⁴⁸ During the inauguration of the Shams plant, the UAE president, Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed considered the project as an “outstanding achievement within the vision of the UAE to diversify its economy and its energy resources.” He added, “The country’s ability to produce renewable energy locally, will prolong our precious resources of oil and gas in addition to supporting a new promising sector with growth prospects.⁴⁹

The project is managed by Masdar company. Besides Masdar company other partners participate in this gigantic project such as Abinjula Solar, a Spanish company, and the French company Total. However Masdar company owns 60% of the project. Thanks to this power plant, Masdar has been classified as a global company in the solar energy production. Masdar produces tenth of the total global solar energy production. Further it approximately produces 68% of the GCC renewable energy production specifically the solar power.⁵⁰

The Noor / Light 1 Project: This project was established in Alain city in the Eastern Region of the Abu Dhabi Emirate. It is of the largest photoelectric panels projects on the global level. Masdar company also aims to develop a clean electricity plant on Sir Bani Yas Island in Abu Dhabi which generates

electricity by wind power. Masdar also planned that the Noor 1 project will promote eco-tourism. It is also planned that the Noor 1 project will be linked to Abu Dhabi's electricity network. It is known that, the Noor 1 plant started operation in June 2009.⁵¹

The Use of Solar Energy to cool Buildings: In this respect the Masdar company has developed a unique system, the first of its kind in the Gulf region. It uses solar energy to generate electricity to run eco-friendly air conditioners systems. This system is used in residential and administrative buildings, shops, supermarkets, and shopping centers. This system aims to reduce emission of carbon dioxide annually. This kind of buildings won the Platinum Ranking from the American Council for environment-friendly construction,, because these buildings are very economical in saving energy.⁵²

Nuclear Power Plants for Peaceful Purposes: The UAE began to pay attention to the importance of using nuclear energy for peaceful purposes in the context of the instruction of Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed, the UAE President. Therefore, the Emirates Nuclear Energy Corporation was established by the end of 2009, after the issuance of a decree in this regard. The Emirates Nuclear Energy Corporation is one of the power production of programs backed by the government and the people of the UAE. This corporation is owned entirely by the Abu Dhabi government, and it is subject to the laws of the Federal Authority for Nuclear Regulation, an independent supervisory and regulatory institution directly linked to the Ministry of Presidential Affairs. The corporation specializes in owning and operating nuclear power stations in the country. At the same it undertakes strategic investments in the nuclear sector at the local and global levels.⁵³

The United Arab Emirates Ministry of Energy announced that the first plant for Nuclear power for peaceful purposes will start operation in the country by 2017 country. This process is part of an ambitious project to generate nuclear electric power on a large scale. Along this line, it is planned to establish about four more nuclear plants by 2020 at the Braka site in the Western Region of Abu Dhabi.⁵⁴ The nuclear plants will contribute to the generation of about 25% of the total needs of the country's electricity.⁵⁵

There are six principles for the use of nuclear power to generate electricity in the United Arab Emirates taking into consideration the highest standards regarding the prohibition of nuclear non-proliferation, full operational transparency, the abandonment of the use of nuclear power for military uses, the adoption of the higher standards in terms of security and safety, working according to the International Atomic Energy Agency regulations, and providing technical support to countries aspiring to develop peaceful nuclear programs. The Emirates also signed cooperation agreements with seven countries including the United States,⁵⁶ Britain, France, Japan, South Korea, Australia, and Canada which allow the UAE to take advantage of their expertise in the area of using the Nuclear power for peaceful purposes.⁵⁷

The UAE federal law enacted in 2009, regulated the licensing and controlling of the nuclear materials.⁵⁸ Three government authorities are responsible for the operation, organization and supervision of the nuclear power program as follows: The Federal Authority for Nuclear Regulation, Emirates Nuclear Energy Corporation, and the International Advisory Council. These government authorities include a

specialized selection of local and international experts.⁵⁹

Sustainable Cities

Green Economy Initiative

The UAE is the first Arab country to launch the green economy initiative. On January 15, 2012, the UAE Vice President Sheikh Mohammed bin Rashid announced the launching of a long-term national initiative to build green economy in the country under the slogan “green economy for sustainable development.” The Green Economy Initiative falls in the context of the United Arab Emirates vision document of 2021, issued by the Council of Ministers / the UAE Cabinet on February 7, 2010.⁶⁰

Under this initiative, the Dubai Electricity and Water Authority and “IREN” signed a memorandum of understanding in order to strengthen Sustainable development in the Emirate of Dubai, which aims to provide a framework and facilitate cooperation between both parties in order to support, promote and take advantage of the use of renewable energy process. Further, Masdar city announced the construction of new headquarters complex, which also houses the International Renewable Energy Agency headquarters. The complex will use advanced technologies applications in the field of enhancing energy efficiency and green buildings in addition to water consumption reduction.⁶¹

The Green Economy Initiative includes a package of projects, programs, legislation, and policies which cover different areas such as encouraging the production and use of renewable energy, the development of standards for energy consumption in public and private sectors besides promoting investments in green economy. The initiative also aims to facilitate the production, import, export and re-export of green

products and technologies, planning green cities and buildings, and environmentally friendly means of transportation, reducing carbon emissions from the industrial and commercial sites, encouraging organic farming in addition to preservation of biodiversity and ecological balance in the UAE. Moreover the initiative aims to regulate the use of water, electricity, and natural resources, promote environmental education, develop green technology and water recycling projects.⁶² The International Labor Organization (ILO) has classified the UAE “green economy for sustainable development” initiative (2012 – 2021) as one of the best environmental sustainability initiatives adopted by twenty one countries.⁶³

Sustainable Buildings

Green Buildings

Dubai issued a cluster of laws to enhance the importance of constructing green buildings in the Emirate. Dubai also focuses much attention on the expansion of the scale of the green eco-friendly buildings, through a variety of mechanisms including the dissemination of cultural awareness about the importance of these buildings. There are mandatory laws applying the green building system to new buildings in residential, commercial and industrial sectors since the January 22, 2014.⁶⁴ These laws set the specifications for construction, environment and the efficiency of the energy, water, and waste systems.⁶⁵ This process will double the green space in Dubai by 2020.⁶⁶

Dubai’s adoption of the principles of “green economy - green buildings,” contributes to the provision of energy needs, by using solar energy sources distributed on rooftops, and by reducing the wasteful consumption of water and electricity besides improving the air quality inside buildings. In support of this policy, the

Dubai Municipality has issued a decree to form the “Sustainability Committee” which develops mechanisms to assess the extent to which green buildings comply with the standards of sustainable development. During the inauguration of the “Big Five Exhibition” in the period between November 5-8, 2012, the Deputy Ruler of Dubai, His Highness Sheikh Maktoum bin Mohammed, confirmed that the UAE is the leading country in the implementation of environmentally friendly green buildings.⁶⁷ The Emirates Council of Green Buildings emphasized the fact that there was an international recognition of the positive performance of the UAE in reducing the consumption of energy, water, waste and emission of carbon dioxide. Accordingly, these Buildings become vital elements in support of the sustainable development initiatives in the country.⁶⁸

The Emirates Green Buildings Council

According to the Emirates Green Buildings Council, there are few numbers of buildings which obtained the eco-friendly construction license. Therefore, the government, since 2008, has ensured that buildings should be constructed according the required environmental criteria. The Council was able to take part in the conversion of about 15 thousand old buildings to environmentally friendly facilities.⁶⁹ The green building project in Abu Dhabi is one of the leading enterprises in this area, exemplified by the Abu Dhabi police green building.⁷⁰ In the same context, the UAE construction company specializing in green buildings emphasized the growth of the market of this kind of buildings in different parts of the country at an estimated rate of about 40%, according to the strategy of Abu Dhabi Council for Urban Planning, particularly with regard to schools, hotels and residential buildings.⁷¹

Models for Sustainable Cities

Sustainability : The Abu Dhabi model for Sustainable Development

It should be noted here that in 2008, the Abu Dhabi Council for Urban Planning launched the Sustainability Initiative to assess buildings according to the four pillars of sustainability, related to the achievement of balance in the economic, societal, cultural and environmental requirements which constitute a basis for “the Abu Dhabi Plan 2030”. This initiative is based on a criterion called “Pearl System” to assess the sustainability of buildings. All the strategic projects in Abu Dhabi should comply with the standards of the “Pearl System” system starting from the year 2010.⁷²

Dubai Sustainable City

Sustainability is no longer a theoretical word, but it has become an urgent necessity in today’s business world, especially since everyone has touched the positive economic effects of the sustainability process. In this context, the Deputy Ruler of Dubai Sheikh Maktoum bin Mohammed, inaugurated the Dubai Sustainable city project, in the suite of the land and property Department in Dubai, during the City Cityscape Gallery held in October 2012. This project comes in the context of activating the role of the real estate sector to enhance the safe and real estate green environment which contributes to the construction of a green economy and the maintenance of convenience for citizens and residents.⁷³ The project also meets the highest standards of sustainability requirements, most notably the optimal use of the land and the fulfillment of the population needs of renewable energy and recycled water in addition to the waste treatment and the reduction of carbon emissions in the city. The city is distinguished by a sustainable transport system varying between vehicles powered by solar energy and horse-carts, which will be dedicated to the guests of large tourist resorts. This

process offers a different tourist experience and allows a 100% exercise of a life based on sustainable environmental practices. The city also has gardens and farms cultivating organic products which fulfill the minimum diet of the population. The city currently accommodates 2500 families.⁷⁴

Renewable (Alternative) and Sustainable Energy in Sharjah

As for Sharjah, the Emirate is also going on the path of the green economy and sustainable development. preserving the environment and linking it to the renewable/clean energy projects are two essential issues integral to the policy of His Highness, Sheikh Dr. Sultan bin Mohammed Al Qasimi, the Ruler of Sharjah and the Supreme Council member. The Emirate of Sharjah gave priority to sustainable development projects, including the specialized center for the treatment and recycling of waste in the Sajaa area which is also used to generate energy. The Sharjah Environment Company is one of the pioneering integrated environment incorporations in the Middle East.⁷⁵ In a related context, the University of Sharjah is highly interested in solar energy studies and this concern is crystallized through the introduction of a Bachelor program in engineering in the area of renewable and emerging energy.⁷⁶

Moreover, the university held an agreement with Afaq (Horizons) Company for Investment and Development to transform engineering projects prepared by students to commercial projects in addition to the establishment of a specialized knowledge center in the field of enhancing the awareness of the benefits of using renewable energy and the reduction of energy consumption.⁷⁷ In the same vein, the university launched a new laboratory for renewable energy and sustainable development, to serve the UAE society and Sharjah.⁷⁸ Besides, the university prioritizes the

innovative scientific outputs of its students. In this connection, six Emirati students from the College of Engineering introduced two innovative projects. The first one is concerned with sea water desalination, and the second deals with heating the cold air by using renewable solar energy.⁷⁹

At the level of activities on Renewable Energy, Sharjah hosted many international events on renewable energy under the patronage of Dr. Sheikh Sultan bin Mohammed Al Qasimi, including the Sixth Annual Conference of the Arab Forum for Environment and Development on October 28, 2013. The conference targeted issues related to the importance of sustainable energy for the future of Arab countries. The conference also focused on the development of conventional energy alternatives such as nuclear, solar and wind energy.⁸⁰ Sharjah played a pioneering role in raising the awareness of the importance of using renewable energy. This policy is crystallized in the organization of a major international conference on solar energy in Sharjah in February 2001. It was one of the first conferences on renewable energy in the UAE and it was organized by the Research Center at the University of Sharjah.⁸¹

With regard to the issue of sustainable development in Sharjah and the reliance on clean energy, it is noteworthy to mention the issuance of the Amiri Decree No. 20 of 2008 amending the Amiri Decree No. 1 of 1995 on the establishment of the Sharjah Electricity and Water Authority in addition to the amendments added to its responsibilities and the new activities that fall within its jurisdiction including the establishment of central cooling plants and new companies. The new activities allocated to the Sharjah Electricity and Water Authority also comprise the initiation of partnerships with companies specialized in clean energy in order to meet the current and future needs of energy, water and gas, necessary for consumption and socio-economic development.⁸²

The Sustainable Schools Initiative

This initiative was launched in 2009 by the Environment Agency in Abu Dhabi in collaboration with the Abu Dhabi Education Council and it was supported by the BB Petroleum Company. The “Sustainable Schools Initiative” succeeded in finding solutions for the environmental impacts resulting from the daily operations management integral to the control of the production of waste and water consumption in schools which participate in the initiative besides the use of mass transit facilities in order to instill eco-friendly behavior among young students since childhood. This process aims to instill eco-friendly values and behaviors in the future generations. It also aspires to create a stimulating and supportive generation capable of protecting the country’s green economy.⁸³

Conclusion

The future of economic growth, and the establishment of the society of prosperity and well-being which promotes human value and enhances the prospect of investment in the Emirati citizen simultaneously requires the investment in innovative ideas, which contribute to the production of knowledge mainly renewable energy. In this scenario some significant and pivotal issues should be given more attention as follows:

- The preservation of the United Arab Emirates leadership in the region, as a model, requires more concentration on innovative education in order to prepare a qualified generation of Emirati citizens, capable of knowledge production, and the development of the renewable energy sector in the future.
- The great support, provided by the Government of the United Arab Emirates represented by the instructions of the Emirati President, Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed and the rulers of the Emirates, members of the Federal Supreme

Council necessitate the making of tremendous efforts on the levels of individuals, companies and civil society institutions which should play a role in the energy conservation programs. All the UAE residents and institutions are also required to introduce constructive ideas across a range of positive behaviors that promote the value of national identity to keep the leadership of the UAE as a model to be emulated by other countries in the region. The UAE citizens are supposed to participate in the sustainable development efforts, based on their innovation and creativity.

- There is an urgent need to link the research and academic institutions with the units of the private sector in the UAE to enhance scientific research and technological innovation. This policy aims to fulfill the needs of the national economy and the UAE society rather than importing technology from abroad. The UAE citizens are able to achieve miracles in the knowledge production sector and occupy leading positions in scientific centers in the GGC area, the Arab world and the entire region.
- In this context it is crucial to secure the supportive climate suitable for the entrepreneurs, the creators of innovative ideas, the emerging companies working in the field of renewable energy and the companies dealing with the marketing and commercialization of new technologies associated renewable energy to contribute to the growth of the UAE economy. This process inevitably leads to the creation of new jobs, the accumulation of wealth for future generations and the maintenance of social peace in the UAE community, characterized by its high levels of prosperity and well-being.

Notes

- ^{1.} Jamal Sanad Al Suweidi. (2003). The Emirati Society: Future Vision. The Emirates Centre for Strategic Studies and Research.
- ^{2.} The issue of clean energy has been recently explored in the United Arab Emirates and the entire world. Therefore the primary sources for this study includes data and information gathered from government documents, media reports, newspapers,, television news networks and related Internet websites, supported by some of the books, which handled this issue. Additionally it is relevant to state that the interest in the clean energy question began growing during the last five years. A field survey revealed that most of the previous studies are contingent upon media reports. Hence it is crucial to document the efforts and endeavors of the UAE leadership in the field of clean and renewable Energy.
- ^{3.} The White Book. (2012). The Government of the Beijing,, China,, translated by the Chinese news agency (Xinhua),, in October 2012. The book is about China's investments policies in the new and renewable energy, p. 12.
- ^{4.} The International Renewable Energy Agency (IRENA), “Renewable Power Generation Costs in 2012: An Overview”, report, January 2013, and “Renewable Energy Country Profiles for the Middle East”, report, November 2012.
- ^{5.} Mohamed Jaratli.(2011). The importance of Renewable Energy in the preservation of human health and the Environment. Green Studies Series : Environmental Studies and Research. Aleppo: Syria, 2nd of November.
- ^{6.} Report about the “Renewable energy financing case studies: lessons to be learned from successful initiatives”, A report for 6, the Commission for Environmental cooperation, Montreal, Quebec, Canada. See also, Ariel Bergmann, Nick Hanley, “The costs and benefits of renewable energy in Scotland”, Report to the Expert group on environmental studies, Government Offices of Sweden – Ministry of Finance, May 2012, p. 21-28.
- ^{7.} The global spending on renewable energy exceeded 350 billion in 2012 and “ ISESCO is looking forward to the results of Manama”. Al Wasat Daily Newspaper,, Manama - Bahrain,, No.4099, Wednesday, November 29, 2013.
- ^{8.} Fatah al-Rahman Youssef (2013). Saudi Arabia : Renewing its Calls for Strengthening the Trend to Invest in Renewable Energies – The regional investments in this sector amounted to 2.7 billion dollars. Asharq Al Awsat Daily,, London - United Kingdom,, No. 12920,, September 6.
- ^{9.} See the Annual Statistics Report issued by the UAE National Bureau of Statistics,, on June 2,

- (2012). Global Competitiveness Report 2012-2013, Geneva - Switzerland. 10 Klaus Schwab, World Economic Forum.
- ¹⁰. Global Competitiveness Report 2012-2013, Geneva - Switzerland. 10 Klaus Schwab, World Economic Forum.
- ¹¹. Emirates in the Group of Twenty - an official document : clean energy and energy efficiency „, known as the” white paper “Ministry of Environment,, the Government of Abu Dhabi,, the United Arab Emirates,, p. 1-2.
- ¹². United Arab Emirates, Renewable Energy Country Profile, International Renewable Energy Agency IRENA, Abu Dhabi, UAE, 2013, p. 1-2.
- ¹³. See Masdar city electronic website:<http://masdarcity.ae>
- ¹⁴. Report on “ the reality of today’s energy future „, issued by Masdar city, one of Mubadala companies, Abu Dhabi - UAE, the second edition,, May 2011,, p. 2-19.
- ¹⁵. Ibid. p.20-27.
- ¹⁶. Masdar City Exploration Guide, Masdar is one of Mubadala companies, Abu Dhabi - UAE, the second edition,, January 2011,, p. 21-01
- ¹⁷. “Within the comprehensive plan to diversify the economy in all areas of sustainable development, Masdar city established Abu Dhabi as a global capital of energy for the future”, Al Bayan Daily Newspaper. Economic Appendix,, December 12, 2011
- ¹⁸. See Masdar City Exploration Guide. Second Part,, p.32-44.
- ¹⁹. The Future Energy Summit reflects the global leadership of Abu Dhabi in the energy sector. “The total UAE investments in the clean energy sector by 2015 will cost twenty two billion dollars”. The Gulf Daily Newspaper, Economic Supplement, 19 January 2012.
- ²⁰. Within a comprehensive plan to diversify the economy in all areas of sustainable development,“ Masdar established Abu Dhabi as the global capital of energy for the future „, Op. Cit.
- ²¹. Statements made by Sultan Al Jaber,, CEO of Masdar city to The Sky News / The Arabic Channel,, Photographed Report : Masdar is looking forward to investing in Saudi Arabia. September 11, 2012.
- ²². Masdar City Exploration Guide. op. Cit.,, P. 27.
- ²³. The Emirates and Irina are partners in the efforts to promote the renewable energy sector,, “ The Court of The Ruler’s Representative in the Western Region”,, the Government of Abu Dhabi - UAE, November 27, 2013.
- ²⁴. Ibid.

- ^{25.} The world selected Abu Dhabi as the headquarters of Irina. “ Ministry of Foreign Affairs - the United Arab Emirates,, June 30, 2009.
- ^{26.} Ibid.
- ^{27.} “The UAE Ecological Footprint”, Supplement issued in cooperation between the UAE Ministry of Environment and the Environment Agency of Abu Dhabi,, EWS WWF, Global Footprint Network, Abu Dhabi, UAE. 11th of October 2010. P.2.
- ^{28.} Salman al-Dossari. “ The UAE launched a National Initiative Called the Ecological Footprint “. London-based Asharq Al Awsat Newspaper, No.10552. 19 October 2009.
- ^{29.} In a lecture organized by the Emirates Environmental Work Group, “The ecological footprint per capita in the UAE is higher than the global average “. AlIttihad Daily Newspaper, September26, 2013.
- ^{30.} The Second National Communication Report of the United Arab Emirates submitted to the Framework Agreement of the United Nations Convention on Climate Change (2010) Ministry of Energy,, UAE
- ^{31.} The Environmental Awareness Programs, the Abu Dhabi government,, the website of the Environment Agency - Abu Dhabi,, United Arab Emirates Champions Website,, and the website of the Emirates Environment Group.
- ^{32.} Consider the model of the project with costs amounting to 12 billion dirhams : Mohammed bin Rashid opened “ the Solar Energy Park “ in Dubai,, Al Ittihad Newspaper, January 10, 2012.
- ^{33.} Ibid.
- ^{34.} TheEmirates is a new center for solar projects : The launching of Shams 1 Plant in the Western Region of Abu Dhabi heralds a bright future for the renewable energy sector in the region”. Masdar Times Bulletin,, Issue no.9, p. 1.
- ^{35.} Omar Khalil Arabi. Dubai is getting ready to apply the “ solar geyser.” The joint project shared by Masdar and Abu Dhabi Electricity Authority begins with 11 buildings : UAE invests in “The Sun “ as substitute for the “oil power “. 1- 2, the Emirates Today Newspaper, December 31, 2011.
- ^{36.} Ibid.
- ^{37.} “Abu Dhabi and Spain inaugurated first concentrated solar power plant in the world”. Middle East Online, 4 October, 2011.
- ^{38.} Ibid.
- ^{39.} “The Solar power plant in Masdar city achieved its operational objectives and successfully

entered its third year “. Masdar City Media Centre for, 8 June, 2011.

- ⁴⁰. Mohammed bin Rashid inaugurates the first phase of,” The Mohammed bin Rashid Al Maktoum Solar Park Project “,, The Emirates Today newspaper,, October 22, 2013.
- ⁴¹. “With a total cost of 12 billion dirhams the Ruler of Dubai inaugurated the first phase of the Mohammed bin Rashid Al Maktoum Solar Park Project “. Riyadh Daily Newspaper. No. 16558. 24 October, 2013
- ⁴². The Electricity and Water Authority starts the implementation of the first phase in the Mohammed bin Rashid Al Maktoum Solar Park project in Dubai,, op. Cit.
- ⁴³. The Emirates is a new center for solar projects : the launching of Shams 1 plant in the western region of Abu Dhabi heralds a bright future for the renewable energy sector in the region.
- ⁴⁴. Ibid.
- ⁴⁵. Hani,, Okal. “Symposium titled : The Water and Food Security Linkage and the Good management for the Water Sources Sustainability”. the Gulf Daily Newspaper, April 5, 2013.
- ⁴⁶. Majida Malawi. “the Abu Dhabi Environment Constructed 22 Solar-Powered Desalination plants across the UAE“. Al Bayan, May 12, 2013.
- ⁴⁷. “The Solar Energy is pumping fresh water in Abu Dhabi”. Middle East Online November 19, 2010.
- ⁴⁸. ‘Masdar for Energy strengthened its position in the global market for clean energy “, 24 May,, 2011, info AME
- ⁴⁹. The Al Jazeera Channel News Network: “ The Emirates opened largest solar power plant”,, 17 March,, 2013.
- ⁵⁰. Agence France-Presse,, “ AFP “. “ The Emirates opened the largest concentrated solar power plant in the world”,, 17 March, 2013.
- ⁵¹. Abdul-Fattah Muntasir. “ At a cost of 2.2 billion dirhams and the production will begin in 2012, Abu Dhabi accomplished 45% of the largest solar power plant in the world”. Al Bayan Newspaper,, Economic Supplement,, 25 May, 2011.
- ⁵². The use of the outputs of the first experiment in the company’s offices : “ Masdar “ is working towards the use of solar energy for cooling buildings”. AlIttihad newspaper, Economic Supplement,, 26 September,, 2010.
- ⁵³. Christopher M. Blanchard, Paul K. Kerr, The United Arab Emirates nuclear program and proposed U.S. nuclear cooperation, Congressional research service, December 20, 2010, p 1-4.

- ⁵⁴. Imad Abdul Bari.” A community forum for the UAE nuclear energy “ in Ras Al Khaimah : Nuclear power constitutes 25 % of electricity needed by 2020 “. AlIttihad newspaper Economic Supplement,, October 11, 2013.
- ⁵⁵. Hatem Farouk. “The International Conference on Nuclear Energy starts its Activities. Al Mazroui : 40 thousand megawatts of energy requested by the Emirates by 2020 “. The Economic Vision Newspaper / Alroiya AlEqtesadiyya Newspaper. 12 November, 2013.
- ⁵⁶. Agreement for Cooperation Between the Government of the United States of America and the Government of the United Arab Emirates Concerning Peaceful Uses of Nuclear Energy, U.S. Government Printing Office, Washington. 2009..
- ⁵⁷. Azad Aysho. “ Al-Qahtani : the probability of an accident in the reactor is once every half a million years : The UAE nuclear program provides 25 % of electricity needs.” Emirates Today,, the economy pages,, December 26, 2012.
- ⁵⁸. “UAE diversifies resources, invests in nuclear, renewable energy”. Khaleej Times, October 15, 2013.
- ⁵⁹. Mohammed Al Tunaiji. “Report : Emirates Nuclear Energy Corporation is helping to diversify supplies and ensure the future of energy security “. Emirates News Agency “WAM”,, November 26, 2013.
- ⁶⁰. Moshe Tredman. “ The launching of the Green Economy Initiative of the United Arab Emirates “. Arab Environment Gate. January 2012.
- ⁶¹. “Report: The United Arab Emirates and IRENA are partners in the efforts to promote the renewable energy sector, AlIttihad newspaper, Economic Supplement,, November 27, 2013.
- ⁶². Jerry Yudelson. Green building trends: Europe. Island press, The Centre for Resource Economics, Washington DC. This book is (159 pages) is of the leading books in dealing with the phenomenon of green cities in Europe,, and the associated construction, green engineering. It also dealt with the same phenomena in the United Kingdom and Germany and studied the challenges facing the cities in the future despite the innovative technologies they own..
- ⁶³. “The International Labor Organization ILO incorporated the UAE’s Green Economy Initiative within the environmental sustainability initiatives: 21 countries adopted the UAE GEI”. Al Bayan Newspaper,, Economic Supplement,,17 June, 2013.
- ⁶⁴. Media Centre of The World Future Energy Summit (WFES) 22 - 24 January 2014, Abu Dhabi National Exhibition Centre.
- ⁶⁵. Dubai Municipality educate the public about green building codes in “ The Big 5 “,, Al

- Bayan Newspaper,, Economic Supplement,, September 24, 2013. See also “ during the Big Five Exhibition : Dubai Municipality organizes seminars on green building laws,” AlIttihad newspaper, Economic Supplement September 24, 2013.
- ⁶⁶. Amir Alalfi. “ Converting 1500 old buildings in 2012 to Green Building. These Green Buildings save 70 % of the energy in the UAE”. the Emirates Today newspaper, the economic section, 28 November, 2012.
- ⁶⁷. “Commission to develop a system of green buildings in Dubai “. AlIttihad newspaper, the UAE,, September 27, 2013.
- ⁶⁸. Vesela Todorova. “UAE leads Gulf countries in renewable energy, expert says”. The National, October 24, 2013
- ⁶⁹. Ibid.
- ⁷⁰. Green Buildings were praised by the senior leadership: “ Green buildings in Abu Dhabi Police Complex is a pilot environmentally friendly project across the Emirates “. Al Bayan, 3 September 2013.
- ⁷¹. “15% is the ratio of the Green Buildings in the UAE.” Al Bayan Newspaper,, Economic Supplement,, 25 April, 2012.
- ⁷². “Abu Dhabi Vision 2030 “,, the Abu Dhabi Council for Urban Planning. See also : “ Sustainability “: A model for the sustainable development of Abu Dhabi. Abu Dhabi Government Portal.
- ⁷³. Maktoum bin Mohammed attends the launching of Dubai Sustainable City,, The fruit of the Investment Promotion Center in the territory of Dubai.” Dubai Real Estate Gate,, Department of Land and Property - Dubai, 3October, 2012. See also: Muzaffar Rizvi, “Dubai Sustainable City construction starts in July”. Khaleej Times, May 1, and Parag Deulgaonkar. “Dubai Sustainable City: Home owners will not pay service fees : Diamond Developers to hand over”, and : “Dubai - A City Without Community?”,100 villas by December 2014”, Emirates24/7, October 7, 2013, Sustainable Cities Collective, January 24, 2013.
- ⁷⁴. Mushreq Ali Haider. “The first in the world and it includes the University,, schools and residential villas on an area of two million square feet : Dubai launches a sustainable city costing one billion dirhams”. AlBayan Newspaper Supplement economic April 28, 2012.
- ⁷⁵. Amjad Qassim. “Alternative Energy and the Preservation of the Environment at the Top of the Concerns of the Emirate of Sharjah.” The Scientific and Educational Horizons Magazine. July 2, 2011
- ⁷⁶. “The University of Sharjah offers the Bachelor of Engineering in Alternative Energy”. The Gulf News daily newspaper Casablanca,, November 2, 2010.
- ⁷⁷. “Cooperation in the field of renewable energy between the University of Sharjah and Afaq /

- Horizons for investment “. The Gulf News daily newspaper. May 31, 2012.
- ⁷⁸. Tahrir AlAmir. “ A look at the Robot Project accomplished by UAE Arabic-speaking students who speak Arabic and dance the Youla : Sultan Al Qasimi inaugurates two laboratories for the examination of X-rays and renewable energy at the University of Sharjah.” Ittihad daily newspaper,, United Arab Emirates,, November 25, 2013.
- ⁷⁹. Salama Al Ketbi. “ Two Projects including Water Desalination and air heating by Clean Energy were accomplished by six students from the University of Sharjah”. Emirates Today newspaper,,1 March, 2013.
- ⁸⁰. The deliberations of the Conference of the Arab Forum for Environment and Development : A Call for the transition to a sustainable Arab energy sector”. the site of the Arab Forum for Environment and Development,, October 29, 2013.
- ⁸¹. The conference was organized by the Research and Studies Center at the University of Sharjah,, and Dr. Abdullah Abdul Aziz Al-Najjar was director of the center at that time. He is the current Chairman of the Arab Foundation for Science and Technology. Also see: “Sharjah Solar Energy Conference”. WREN News. (World Renewable Energy Network). London, UK, and “Under the patronage of Sultan Al Qasimi : the Sharjah World Conference of solar energy was inaugurated. 75 countries participated in the and 391 research papers were presented. Al bayan, 20 February, 2001. Conference
- ⁸². “Sultan Al Qasimi issued a decree related to the Sharjah Electricity Authority. Al Bayan,, 15 June, 2008.
- ⁸³. Emirates News : “ The Abu Dhabi Environment Agency – launches the Sustainable Schools Initiative in its New Version”. 16 September, 2014.

References

- Abdul Bari Imad.” (2013). A community forum for the UAE nuclear energy “ in Ras Al Khaimah : Nuclear power constitutes 25 % of electricity needed by 2020 “. AlIttihad newspaper Economic Supplement,, October 11.
- AlAlfi Amir. (2012). “ Converting 1500 old buildings in 2012 to Green Building. These Green Buildings save 70 % of the energy in the UAE”. the Emirates Today newspaper, the economic section, 28 November.
- AlAmir Tahrir. (2013). “ A look at the Robot Project accomplished by UAE Arabic-speaking students who speak Arabic and dance the Youla : Sultan Al Qasimi inauguates two laboratories for the examination of X-rays and renewable energy at the University of Sharjah.” Ittihad daily

newspaper,, United Arab Emirates,, November 25.

- Al Dossari, Salman.(2009). “ The UAE launched a National Initiative Called the Ecological Footprint “. London-based Asharq Al Awsat Newspaper, No.10552. 19 October.
- Al Ketbi, Salama. (2013). “ Two Projects including Water Desalination and air heating by Clean Energy were accomplished by six students from the University of Sharjah”. Emirates Today newspaper,,1 March.
- Al Suweidi,, Jamal Sanad. (2003). The Emirati Society: Future Vision. The Emirates Centre for Strategic Studies and Research.
- Al Tunaiji Mohammed. (2013). “Report : Emirates Nuclear Energy Corporation is helping to diversify supplies and ensure the future of energy security “. Emirates News Agency “WAM”,, November 26.
- Arabi, Omar Khalil.(2011). Dubai is getting ready to apply the “ Solar Geyser.” The joint project shared by Masdar and Abu Dhabi Electricity Authority begins with 11 buildings : UAE invests in “The Sun “ as substitute for the “oil power “. 1- 2, the Emirates Today Newspaper, December 31.
- Aysho Azad. (2012). “ Al-Qahtani : the probability of an accident in the reactor is once every half a million years : The UAE nuclear program provides 25 % of electricity needs.” Emirates Today,, the economy pages,, December 26.
- Blanchard Christopher M. and Paul K. Kerr. (2010). The United Arab Emirates nuclear program and proposed U.S. nuclear cooperation, Congressional research service, December 20. p. 1-4.
- Farouk Hatem. (2013).” The International Conference on Nuclear Energy starts its Activities. Al Mazroui : 40 thousand megawatts of energy requested by the Emirates by 2020 “. The Economic Vision Newspaper / Alroiya AlEqtesadiyya Newspaper. 12 November.
- Haider Mushreq Ali. (2012). “The first in the world and it includes the University,, schools and residential villas on an area of two million square feet : Dubai launches a sustainable city costing one billion dirhams”. Al Bayan Newspaper economic Supplement April 28.
- Jaratli, Mohamed. (2011). The importance of Renewable Energy in the preservation of human health and the Environment. Green Studies Series : Environmental Studies and Research. Aleppo: Syria, 2nd of November.
- Malawi Majida. (2013). “the Abu Dhabi Environment Constructed 22 Solar-Powered Desalination plants across the UAE “. Al Bayan,, May 12.
- Muntasir Abdul-Fattah. (2011). “ At a cost of 2.2 billion dirhams and the production will begin in 2012, Abu Dhabi accomplished 45% of the largest solar power plant in the world”. Al Bayan

Newspaper,, Economic Supplement,, 25 May.

- Okal,,Hani. (2013). “ Symposium titled : The Water and Food Security Linkage and the Good management for the Water Sources Sustainability”. the Gulf Daily Newspaper,, April 5.
- Qassim Amjad. (2011). “Alternative Energy and the Preservation of the Environment at the Top of the Concerns of the Emirate of Sharjah.” The Scientific and Educational Horizons Magazine. July 2.
- Rizvi, Muzaffar. (2013).”Dubai Sustainable City construction starts in July”, Khaleej Times, May 1.
- Schwab, Klaus. (2012-2013). Report : World Economic Forum, Global Competitiveness, Geneva – Switzerland.
- Todorova Vesela. (2013). “UAE leads Gulf countries in renewable energy, expert says”. The National, October 24.
- Tredman Moshe. (2012). “ The launching of the Green Economy Initiative of the United Arab Emirates “. Arab Environment Gate. January.
- Youssef, Fatah al-Rahman. (2013). Saudi Arabia : Renewing its Calls for Strengthening the Trend to Invest in Renewable Energies – The regional investments in this sector amounted to 2.7 billion dollars. Asharq Al Awsat Daily,, London - United Kingdom,, No. 12920,, September 6.
- Yudelson,, Jerry. (2009). Green building trends: Europe, Island press, The Centre for Resource Economics, Washington DC.

Chapter Eleven

Future Visions

A large, abstract graphic element occupies the bottom left corner of the page. It consists of several overlapping, thin, light-grey diagonal bands that slope upwards from left to right. Within this band system, there are several solid, darker-grey triangular shapes of varying sizes and orientations, some pointing upwards and others downwards. The overall effect is a sense of depth and movement.

Chapter Eleven

Future Visions

Dr. Mohamed Salim Al Mazrouei

Introduction

This chapter explores the UAE visions of the future through an analysis of the philosophy and foundations of the Emirates Vision (2021) and the vision of Abu Dhabi (2030). Consciously, both visions demand the preparation of meticulous plans regarding future expectations for the country and its citizens. Any nations or states which do not plan for the future risk losing the achievements of the present. These nations will not possess the power to meet the requirements of future development. Further, their future will be contingent upon unforeseen circumstances and unpredictable developments, phenomenon which may affect their security, stability and, indeed, their social fabric.

The “vision” in the general sense is an expression of a dream of the future in which major ambitions and aspirations are achieved. However, this “vision” should not be either a dream woven purely of imagination or a form of the impossible. The realization of the national vision is tightly linked to the obligation to highlight the strengths of the present, especially those that relate to the tremendous achievements of the UAE which have lifted the country into the ranks of the advanced nations. This process is clearly indicated by the Emirates Vision 2021 and the vision of Abu Dhabi 2030. It aims to ensure the success of development processes in the Federal State and the Emirate of Abu Dhabi. Apparently, the consequences of current development triggered both visions of the future. Both emerged as manifestations of present contributions and aspirations for the future in order to safeguard the gains of the past

and to keep apace with the requirements of global development.

The visions under consideration in this chapter do not rely solely on the foundations of the present, but are entrenched in the heritage and values of the past. These visions are inherent in the religious and national traditions advocated by the founding fathers. These visions aim to ensure that future development will not undermine the coherent and prevalent social fabric upholding and underpinning the UAE community.

Any vision of the future requires in-depth thought as well as preparation and careful consideration until the achievement of its targets. The most important characteristic of the UAE future visions is the clarity of the objectives, and the faith in the powers of the country's human and material potentialities to achieve the goals. Additionally, the study of the nature of future challenges and the readiness to deal with emerging risks is integral to the success of the visions.

There is no doubt that the Emirates Vision 2021 and the Abu Dhabi Vision 2030 have been created as part of strategic planning for the future success, distinction and excellence of the country. This prospect is emphasized by both visions. Based on the reports of international indicators regarding the present successes of the country, the Emirates Vision 2021 plans to transform the UAE into one of the best countries in the world. Likewise, the Abu Dhabi Vision 2030 plans to formulate a comprehensive economic perspective in order to make Abu Dhabi a distinctive global center of development. This vision is built on great material & human potential expressing itself efficiently in a series of contributions and accomplishments.

Such forward-looking visions and challenges aim to secure the potential to deal with opportunities likely to be offered us in the future. In this regard, I borrow what the world famous scientist Albert Einstein said on a similar occasion. When

asked about his interest in planning for the future, he uttered his famous statement: “simply because we’re going to there.” Because many countries of the world have paid much attention to future-planning, an independent discipline, “futurology,” has recently emerged. It deals with future studies and attempts to predict the future in light of the authenticity of present history in order to achieve certain objectives.

The visions under consideration in this chapter are characterized by accurate objectives which take into account the potential of the UAE. The two visions were created within the framework of a comprehensive construct with integrated policies able to reach new horizons and achieve future goals. In this context, this chapter has been divided into three main sections:

The first section explores the rules and the basics of the future visions by investigating the philosophy of each vision and the mechanisms of public action required to achieve this philosophy.

The second section probes the prospects of the future visions especially with regard to the achievement of the concept of “state development.” Since the development issue constitutes the ultimate goal of both visions, it is inevitable to identify the pre-conditions of development, the elements required for its achievement and how the concept of development is integrated into the two visions. This section also involves the complications embedded in the general frameworks of the visions. Moreover, this section includes the role of the UAE citizen in implementing these visions as an active partner in the future-building process.

Finally, the third section highlights and identifies the basic pillars of the visions. These pillars reflect details pertaining to the pivotal areas of work mentioned in the two visions.

The Rules and Basics of Future Visions

Since a nation's present is the product of its past, the future is a reflection of the fixed and changeable realities of their present. Consequently, any aspiration toward the future should be based on the visions and plans of a successful strategy which sets the goals these nations want to fulfill in accordance with their potential. In this scenario, the future vision of the UAE as stated in the Emirates Vision 2021 and the economic vision of Abu Dhabi 2030 is based on an ambition armed with the achievements of the present and is stimulated by a sense of pride in an ancient past. Initially, the philosophy of each vision should be identified in order to define the rules and the basics of these future visions.

The Philosophy of the Emirates Vision 2021:

The year 2021 was selected as a timeframe to achieve the Emirates Vision because 2021 will be compatible with the golden jubilee of the establishment of the United Arab Emirates. This vision is inspired by the future prospects of the national action program initiated by the UAE president, HH Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed Al Nahyan. The national action program was also adopted by Their Highnesses the rulers of the Emirates and members of the UAE Supreme Council.¹

The basic philosophy of the vision relies on the unity and determination of the UAE citizens (leadership - Government - people) to achieve their ambitions and build a glorious future in which the UAE becomes one of the best countries in the world. This philosophy is achieved through a set of mechanisms as follows: safeguarding and maintaining the UAE Federal Union as a societal and collective responsibility. The Emirati federation is a renaissance project and a continuous work program. This policy should be accompanied by the empowerment of citizens because the UAE

citizens constitute the powers stimulating and driving future development. Therefore the UAE citizen should be brought up in the framework of coherent and stable Emirati families who take pride in their national identity.

The philosophy which aims to realize the goals of the vision is contingent upon the sovereignty of security and justice in UAE society and the predominance of the values of volunteering. Further, it aims to encourage initiatives on the part of the citizens to push forward the development process. Integral to this philosophy is the establishment of a modern educational system. The availability of advanced health-care services, a knowledge-based and sustainable economy, modern infrastructure, sustainable environment, protected natural resources and a distinguished global status are crucial to the aforementioned philosophy.

If that the preceding option is what we want to reach fifty years after the establishment of the Union, what is the basic and appropriate mechanism which is able to achieve the UAE objectives? In this respect, the UAE president, HH Sheikh Khalifa bin Zayed Al Nahyan identified two major mechanisms² as follows: (1) Effective communication between the UAE citizens and their government in the planning process or the choice of future targets or current decision-making. This method reflects the characteristics and attributes of modern upheavals in knowledge affiliated with various mass communication dynamics and social networking tools. For this purpose, the government of the UAE gave priority to national issues, including the innovation of the tools of communication and technology. (2) Expanding popular participation and considering it as part and parcel of the political empowerment program for the future of the UAE. The Federal National Council elections personified this policy due to the increasing number of electoral bodies which participated in the elections. Their

number increased from 6000 male and female voters in 2006 to 1,350,000 voters of both sexes in 2011.

In order to confirm the value of popular participation, a major political empowerment program was established to implement a variety of actions including the election of half of the members of the Federal National Council, which comprised 40 members in 2006. Other steps were taken such as the creation of a ministry to be concerned with the development of parliamentary work. Thus, the Ministry of State for Federal National Council was established. In a related context, on February 10, 2009, the Supreme Federal Council endorsed some constitutional amendments to expand the powers of the Federal National Council and enable it as legislative and supervisory authority to participate in the consolidation and development of the participation process.

The Philosophy of the Abu Dhabi Vision 2030

The year 2030 is selected as a timeframe to fulfill the Abu Dhabi vision, because the estimates and indicators of growth confirm that Abu Dhabi in 2030 will achieve realistic results regarding the trends of economic diversification through the following: promoting the economic environment and the business climate by linking the economy of Abu Dhabi with the global economy, facilitating the export of capital through the establishment of thoughtful and secure investments with global partners, developing social and human resources through the availability of high-quality education and health services, enhancing the labor force in order to ensure full employment for UAE citizens, renovating and preserving the infrastructure through the implementation of a full and comprehensive urban plan of the UAE capital until the year 2030, promoting and advancing the government performance by increasing the

efficiency of government departments and authorities, reviewing and strengthening the legislative frameworks and processes to achieve maximum efficiency.

Through its multiple facets of Abu Dhabi Vision 2030, this philosophy represents a long-term road map for economic progress in the Emirate. It also includes a general framework for aligning all policies and plans for a comprehensive economic vision. In fact Abu Dhabi's vision is not only a dream for the future, but it also includes a preparation of plans and programs to achieve this dream. In its formulation, this vision adopted the Abu Dhabi public policy agenda for the year (2007-2008)³, which was based on specific pillars to achieve a safe community, open economy and institutionalized activity. **These pillars are as follows:**

- **Providing High Quality Education and Health Services in Addition to Well-developed Infrastructure:** This pillar represents the basis of human resources development given that the UAE citizens are the ultimate goal of the visions of the future. These active citizens contribute to the building of their homeland through their capabilities, educational potential and good health conditions, supported by well-developed infrastructure able to provide them with the needed elements of development.
- **Supporting an Active and Influential Private Sector:** This element reflects the global development associated with the globalization revolution which transformed the world's governments from sponsoring governments, namely overseeing the affairs of their peoples, into guardian governments guarding the progress, growth and creativity of their citizens by turning them into shareholders in all spheres of development and progress. The private sector has become the locomotive for the growth of most of the countries through its

contributions to national production, industrial and agricultural innovations in addition to the trading of services. By providing a wide range of competitive opportunities, the private sector is capable of accommodating the aspirations of the UAE citizens.

- **Establishing a Sustainable Economy Based on Knowledge:** Regardless of its competitiveness and technological development, any economy has become in dire need of sustainable knowledge and advanced science which is capable of absorbing the latest scientific innovations without interruption. This approach is the only way to harness infinite economic potential, through the promotion and development of scientific activities and the integration of technology and scientific knowledge with the plans and strategies integral to social and economic development.
- **Maintaining an Efficient and Transparent Legislative Environment:** The efficient legislative environment has become a key element in progress and development, as it reflects a state in which the rule of law is omnipresent to reassure investors and individuals of the safety of their rights and interests.
The legislative environment gives confidence to the external world about the country's commitments to safeguard human rights, and comply with the international standards of monitoring and evaluation. Moreover, the existence of an efficient and transparent legislative environment protects countries against corruption and deviation from internationally recognized standards aiming to achieve the visions of the future.
- **Enhancing Safe Stability on the Domestic and the External Levels:** The concept of stability signifies the state's ability to employ its institutions to

make necessary changes in order to bring about the satisfaction of citizens. Furthermore, safe stability means that the state is making use of its full potential to fulfill the aspirations of its citizens without surrendering to any external threats that may affect its future development.

- **Reinforcing Solid Relations with the Rest of the World at Various Levels:**

This approach has remained constant in the UAE foreign policy. The preservation of excellent relations with various countries throughout the world is based on the respect of the principles of international conventions, international law, and the fulfillment of its obligations according to the international agreements in addition to the respect of the Charter of the United Nations, particularly with regard to non-interference in the internal affairs of other countries and the non-use of threat of force in international relations. The same approach also includes the respect of good neighborliness based on mutual benefits and common interests, and non-aggression on the border and national sovereignty of other states as well as cooperation with the countries all over the world in matters of international issues with global common interests.

- **Developing the Resources in the Emirate of Abu Dhabi:**

The concept of the development of resources means the achievement of maximum advantages of resources in the light of improving the utilization of resources in order to realize the desired goals. This process is part of the diversification of national income resources in order to reach the best level in development.

- **Promoting the Values , Culture and Heritage of Abu Dhabi:**

Values constitute the rules which determine the behavior of individuals in society.

Whereas values set the criteria which distinguish between good or evil, culture reflects the peculiar features that distinguish a specific nation from other nations. This means that the future development of the UAE will be built on Arabic-Islamic traditions and the deeply-rooted values inherited from the ancient past.

- **Participating in the Continuous Endeavors to Consolidate the Union among the Emirates:**

The work towards the achievement of closer Union among the seven UAE Emirates is no longer an option, but a national duty, and an imperative necessary to face the challenges of the future.

Historically, the seven Emirates have fused into a single unified state through the UAE Constitution, which defined the terms of reference for the federal state and its constituent Emirates. Currently, the convergence of the wills of the seven Emirates regarding the consolidation of the union has become more urgent in the light of regional and international developments, where unions, entities and blocks are expanding and growing due to overwhelming economic, intellectual, cultural, communicative and political globalization. These radical upheavals on the regional and international paradigms require solidarity and collaboration to confront common threats and challenges.

The Prospects of Future Visions (State Development):

In their planning for the future, the Emirates Vision 2021 and the Abu Dhabi Vision 2030 relied on the fundamental concept of The Federation Unity which fused all parts of the State into an integrated whole. **This Federal Union concept could be highlighted through the following:**

State Structure:

The Emirati Union in the motherland, the United Arab Emirates, derives its legitimacy (the general satisfaction about the Union) **from three main sources as follows:**

- **The Past:** The past means the date on which the UAE State was originated as a Federal Union in accordance with the free contract approved by the rulers of the Emirates, and subsequently the constituent Emirates of the Federation waived part of their absolute rights for the interest of the Union.
- **The Charismatic Personalities** of the founding fathers of the UAE Federal Union who have employed all their efforts and endeavors to create the federation. Since the UAE citizens had an absolute confidence in the good wills of the founding fathers, they fully supported the establishment of the Union.
- **The legal legitimacy attributed to the Federation by the UAE constitution issued in 1971.** The constitution was an expression of the will of the free contract especially with regard to the functions of the federal authorities and the terms of reference allocated to the local authorities, in addition to the multiple laws issued in the wake of the constitution and until the present concerning the advancement of the interests of the Union.

State targets:

The unity between the citizens and their homeland is crucial because the nation will achieve no progress without efficient and active citizens. Likewise, the citizens will fail to realize their aspirations without a stable and secure homeland. Therefore, the two visions, mentioned above, focused on the development of the citizens by providing

them with education and health services in addition to an infrastructure able to secure with basic services they need. Simultaneously, the two visions concentrated on the development of the homeland through the implementation of knowledge economy and the diversification of national income resources. The development of both citizens and homeland are intricately interconnected in the two visions.

The combination and intersection of all interrelated elements of development provides momentum to the development process in the country. For instance, human development is determined and reinforced by the potential resources of economic development. In other words, there is no education without health. Further the basic purpose of economic growth is to achieve the happiness and satisfaction of the citizens. Ostensibly, the elements of development interrelate in order to formulate an integrated development process. In this context, the Emirates Vision advocates the following slogan: “United in Ambition and Determination.” Further, the availability of a set of solid elements which would provide the driving power for this vision is an imperative in order to change dreams into reality and achieve the purpose of future development in the light of this philosophy. **These elements are as follows:**

- **The Human Resources Potential:** These resources include an advanced infrastructure, education, health and coherent family structure. These elements help the citizen to achieve creativity and innovation.
- **The Economic Resources Potential:** Diversifying the sources of income for the national economy, and taking into consideration that knowledge and innovation as bases for the foundation of a competitive economy in addition to maintaining a sustainable UAE environment. Nevertheless, a couple of questions arise: are the sources and elements inherent in the two visions

sufficient to reach expected prospects and future aspirations? What is the relative value of each source to achieve the targets of these visions?

It is obvious that each source or element embedded in any of these two visions only formulates a relative added value or constituent part of the total plan. Consequently, each element is employed for the benefit of the whole vision. It is difficult to build a strong and safe federal union without developing a competitive economy based on knowledge. In its turn the knowledge-based economy will not be able to achieve its objectives without the support of a unified society adhering to its national identity and the availability of a sustainable environment securing good health conditions for the citizens.

A scrutinized study of the two plans reveals common and joint interests. Definitely, the Emirates Vision aims to transform the UAE into one of the best countries in the world by 2021, and the vision of Abu Dhabi aims to formulate a comprehensive economic strategy leading to economic diversification in the capital Emirate by 2030. There is no doubt that development is the ultimate objective of both visions. Unquestionably, development means that the country is in pursuit of a mega future project which transcends accidental and haphazard planning and is integrated into a methodological future vision.

It is explicit that both visions adopted innovation, creativity, knowledge and education as pivotal and systematic bases in order to achieve their goals. However, this approach is not sufficient to realize the expected objectives unless the vision itself is realistic and applicable. Each vision should proceed gradually within the framework of calculated and accumulative plan to reach the peak of its objectives according to a specific time-line. This process constitutes the major challenge for the

two visions. In order to fulfill their goals, the two visions should overcome internal and external hurdles encountered on the way toward the achievement of the future development of the UAE.

It is apparent that future visions are not fulfilled either only by laws or presidential or ministerial decisions, but by planning and implementing appropriate policies. Therefore the economic, social, political and cultural changes targeted by the two visions are contingent upon integrated work-plans and qualified administrations able to confront future challenges.

Ostensibly, the two visions include scientific, technical, economic, social, environmental and humanitarian aspects in addition to the existential dimension integral to the continuation of the Federal Union. This means that the two visions embrace an innovative renaissance project that aims to achieve a large-scale and overarching development plan. Thus, each element embedded in the two visions should be scrutinized in an objective manner. In other words, the strengths, weaknesses, challenges, opportunities and work mechanisms needed to achieve the objectives of the visions should be thoroughly examined. Nevertheless, the meticulous investigation of each element comprising the two visions aims to ensure that these elements are integrated together to achieve the common goals inherent in the national development plan. The integration of the elements of the two visions will enhance the common intellectual infrastructure of the UAE citizens and the common national culture. It will also promote indigenous cultural inheritance, religious values, and the Emirati family traditions implemented by the founding fathers.

The achievement of the objectives of the two visions is contingent upon the integration between these objectives and other crucial elements, including well-

planned preparation and formulation of the strategic and operational plans in addition to related work policies. **This integration should be implemented according to the following standards:**

- **Horizontal Integration:** It means the communication, coordination and cooperation between federal and domestic authorities as well as relevant ministries regarding the policies and plans crucial to the accomplishment of the goals of the two visions. For example, the strategy of education is integrated with other related mechanisms such as the human resources strategy.
- **Vertical Integration:** It means that each element of the aforementioned strategies or action policies must be integrated with other elements contained in the same strategies. This is what it is called “the correlation of the development process.” It means that the achievement of the objectives of the two visions is not only a governmental responsibility. Though the accomplishment of these objectives heavily rely on governmental policies, plans and programs, it still requires the efforts of the UAE citizens in all Emirates. Explicitly, the UAE citizen is an integral part of the development process, and it is difficult to separate the development of the country from the development of its citizens. For example, it is hard to construct a modern advanced education system without relying on cohesive UAE families proud of their national identity. The interaction between UAE citizens and the governmental authorities, as well as relations of trust and confidence between both sides, is also crucial to any development or progress. The bottom line in this context is that the two visions did not aim to thrust the UAE into a new era in (2021-2030), but rather

to open up to the future through the present investment potential and through the evolution of the historical awareness of the inevitability of progress in the light of the country's ancient and glorious past.

Frameworks of the State Development in the Two Visions:

Regarding the bases for any future vision, it is necessary to have a general framework that defines the intellectual and political essence of the vision in addition to identifying its structural elements. In this context a question arises: What is the general framework of the future of the UAE in the light of the Emirates vision (2021) and Abu-Dhabi vision (2030)?

The General Framework Consists of Six Perspectives:

- 1.** The Intellectual and Philosophical Perspective relying on future-planning and this perspective is based on the achievements of the present. Obviously, it is crucial for any successful state to have a future project. Nevertheless, the status of future vacuum (lack of planning) means the failure of intellectual insight about the future of one's homeland. Thereupon, the two visions incarnate a well-defined intellectual framework that provides a road map for the future of the country. This framework is determined by a well-established strategy that prioritizes the interests of the UAE citizens and copes with the latest developments in the world.
- 2.** The Historical Perspective: The two visions have taken into account the historical aspects crucial to the foundation of the UAE, linking the deeply-rooted values of the ancient past with the contributions of the present and using them as a basis of departure toward achieving the aspirations of the

future. The two visions are obviously inspired by genuine inherited traditions. Consequently, they comply with domestic and religious conventions and are contingent upon the national cultural ethos.

3. The Political Perspective: Both visions reflect the capabilities and resources of the UAE at present without ignoring potential challenges. The civilized vision of the future relies on the construction of some solid pillars at present. These pillars include the rule of law, transparency, accountability, achieving welfare for the citizens, advocating an open-door policy and making use of the latest developments in technology. Since these pillars constitute the major frameworks of the UAE policies at the present time, the country is politically eligible to develop its own future project that aims to push forward the boundaries of achievements.
4. The Strategic Perspective: This perspective is a personification of the texts which reflect the contents of the two visions. In this context, it is noted that the strategic perspective underpinning the two visions sought to utilize the potential and resources of the country, and create the internal and external environment to achieve the objectives of the visions based on material, strategic and moral means. While the Emirates vision includes economic elements and human resources, the Abu-Dhabi vision embraces cultural and social dimensions. This policy means that the instruments and mechanisms required to achieve the strategy reflect the possibilities available to the UAE in the past and at the present time.
5. The Socio-Cultural Perspective: It is known that the social and cultural

structure of the state determines its economic, scientific and technological frameworks. Since the cultural and social structure is an expression of the distinction of the UAE citizen and the peculiarity of the UAE society, there is a mutual interaction between the citizen and his/her homeland. In other words, the development process pursued by both visions did not only depend on the available material, economic, scientific and technological progress achieved by the country, but also takes into consideration the significant role played by the Emirati citizen. Further, the cultural perspective underpinning the preceding visions aims to encourage international economic competitiveness and integrate both visions with other world civilizations in order to reinforce the UAE status in the global arena.

6. The Self-Perspective of the Two Visions: The two visions revolve around empowerment engaging the self-mobilization capacities, whether physical or human, to reach the targeted objectives. This is what we notice in the strategy embedded in the two visions which revealed a great interest in educational development, economic diversification, sustainable environment, and rehabilitation of human resources in order to mobilize the country's capacities and consequently move forward with fixed steps toward the creation of a better future. It is also observed that the mobilization of the country's full capacities (material, physical and human potential) to create the future is manifested clearly in the Emirates Vision through its title (United in Ambition and Determination). Moreover, the pivotal aspects of the vision reflect the meanings signified by the word "United" which emphasize that the state and the citizen will cooperate in order to achieve such unity.

The Role of the Emirati Citizen in Both Visions:

It is not enough to weave plans or visions or future strategies without taking into consideration the most prominent and the most decisive role of the UAE citizen. The citizen will play a pivotal role in changing dreams into reality and in the implementation of all ambitious plans. The citizen has a responsibility and a duty in the consolidation of the major components of the two visions.

Scrutinizing the two visions, it becomes apparent that they include fundamental constituents related to the citizen's role and responsibilities that can be summarized as follows:

- Since the Emirati citizen is proud of his/her national identity and since he/she is proud of belonging to the UAE, this sense of pride obliges the Emirati citizen to accommodate thoughts of the future. The UAE citizen constitutes the main pillar of the infrastructure for the visions of the future.
- The awareness and realization that the world around us is changing rapidly in a stunning and constant movement. This change is multiple and diverse in its trends, stages and fields. But this does not mean the imitation or simulation of every change or development or progress because the process of development may have caveats, particularly with regard to the interruption of the link between past and future or between tradition and modernity. The two visions collect between tradition and modernity, between commitment to modernized development, growth and progress of our society and the right to refuse or accept the forms of development that may collide with our fundamental traditions, values and moral infrastructure.

- The accomplishment of the goals of the two visions does not mean the achievement of a kind of growth based on some designated westernized concepts, or the development of the country's material potential and physical resources without investing in the energies and potential of the UAE citizen. Thereupon, it is the citizen's responsibility to unite with the fate and the future of this country through intellect, knowledge and work. These three dimensions constitute the true pillars - either in theory or in practice - underpinning the foundations of these future visions. The slogan "man makes his own history" should dominate the thinking, the knowledge and the work of the citizen.
- The adoption of scientific methods as a way of life in achieving the goals of the two visions. Obviously, the measure of the progress and advancement of nations and communities is estimated by their products in terms of scientific research in all areas and walks of life.
- Taking advantage of foreign expertise is part of achieving the objectives of the visions. But this does not imply a loss of confidence in the potential of the UAE citizens. The fundamental responsibility of every citizen involves the adaptation of foreign experience and knowledge to serve domestic purposes including the development of intellectual capacities. Apparently, the UAE citizen is the key factor in the country's development according to the two visions. Therefore the UAE citizen should make use of the latest achievements in all fields of knowledge, communication and scientific applications.
- The UAE citizen carries the fundamental responsibility of defending the

national identity, culture and moderate Islamic values as a personification of the authenticity of the Emirati personality.

- The UAE citizens should be equipped with genuine moral values in addition to the spirit of creativity and initiative. These aspects constitute the basis for the efficiency and effectiveness pursued by the Emirati citizens.
- Sustaining domestic traditions and keeping the UAE family coherent and stable. Maintaining the inherent values and deep-rooted traditions sanctioned by religion.

The Role of the State in Achieving the Goals of the two Visions could be Summarized as Follows:

- Maintaining the development and modernization of the armed forces, and providing it with the latest high-tech weapons, because a strong armed forces will be capable of protecting a safe and stable Union.
- Enhancing investment in advanced technological infrastructure to accommodate the latest developments resulting from postmodern revolutions in science, knowledge and technology.
- Promoting the production of knowledge in the economic, technological and scientific fields and encouraging innovation and development in order to suit national priorities regarding research development and funding.
- Disseminating the spirit of initiative among the UAE citizens, because national initiatives constitute the icon of the two visions.

Pillars of the Future Visions

Examining the philosophy and the pillars of the UAE Vision 2021, and the vision of Abu Dhabi 2030, it is noted that both visions have adopted systematic strategic planning to answer key questions regarding the expected future of the UAE in the light of the country's potential and resources. Thereupon, both visions identified a long-term view regarding the future of the state and the citizen after an assessment of current contributions on the political, economic, social and cultural levels.

The Emirates Vision 2021

Unquestionably, the ultimate goal of the Emirates Vision is to transform the UAE into one of the best countries in the world in 2021. In order to achieve its central goal, there is no doubt that the Emirates Vision is contingent upon specific key aspects which could be identified in the following table :

Table (1)
The Elements Embedded in the Goals of the Emirates Vision 2021

Type of Organization	Year 2012
Elements	3
Women	8
Professional	30
Popular Art	28
General / cultural	33
Humanitarian/Charitable	19
Theaters	12
Foreign Communities	15
Total	145

Elements	Mechanisms
Responsibility	<p>Responsibility could be implemented by a citizen who is confident of himself and his abilities, a citizen equipped with noble moral values , a citizen who shares the responsibility of building his/her homeland. This element also involves the preservation of the cohesion of the UAE family; its values, customs, traditions, and principles of moderate Islamic ethics. Responsibility must be strengthened by social cohesion and the solidarity integral to our culture deeply rooted in the values of progress and national loyalty. In a related scenario, we have to maintain the Arabic language and the UAE national heritage, as essential components in the responsibility element.</p>
Joint Destiny	<p>No state is able to thrive in the future unless its citizens have strong and solid sense of their joint destiny. If the UAE aspires to become one of the best countries in the world in 2021, the federal union should remain strong and secure. The UAE should also follow the footsteps of the founding fathers and recall their sacrifices during the establishment of the great State of the Union. Under the umbrella of the federal state, there is no conflict between local and federal governments. The federal state is an epitome of the integration, coordination and coherence of what is local and what is federal in favor for the public interests of the state. These interests necessitate the rule of justice, the dominance of the values of equality, the preservation of equal opportunities, and the implementation of an effective judicial system in order to achieve security and justice to all citizens. On the top of that, the permanent and continuous development of the armed forces is essential to the achievement of public interests because the armed forces is the basic mechanism able to defend the existence of the great federal state</p>

The Pursuit of Knowledge and Science

It is apparent that the standards of progress and achievement in the world of today and tomorrow will only be determined through the acquisition of knowledge and science. Therefore, the Emirates Vision gave great importance to the Emirati human capital by encouraging and stimulating UAE citizens to pursue knowledge and science, and by attracting the best international expertise for the training of the citizens in order to be able to build a knowledge economy characterized by high productivity, diversity and sustainability.

Empowering the Citizen to Possess the Basic Aspects of Modern Life

This can be achieved through a health and therapeutic system which is equivalent to the best international standards. This element can also be fulfilled by considering the medical process including the treatment and curing of patients as a top priority in the state's strategic plan, in addition to doubling the state's preventive efforts in combating emerging diseases resulting from improper life style.

In a related context, the educational system should be developed and updated. Explicitly, the disruption of the modern lifestyle is essentially related to a backward education system depending on memorization instead of promoting the concepts of critical thinking as well as practical abilities and acquiring the basic skills and knowledge, in addition to the expansion of vocational education and training.

Finally, the possession of the basic components of modern lifestyle as emphasized by the Emirates Vision is reinforced by other projects provided by the state, including the establishment of world-class infrastructure, the preservation of outstanding governmental services, the protection and the sustainability of the environment for future generations who will inherit a strong and modern state

The Abu Dhabi Vision 2030

The aims of the Abu Dhabi Vision have been identified and manifested in the formulation of a long-term comprehensive economic strategy with specific objectives, including the continuation of achieving the economic successes accomplished in the Emirate of Abu Dhabi which are expected to bring about tangible results and lead to more economic diversification. To this end, **the Vision of Abu Dhabi adopted specific aspects clarified in the following table:**

Table (2)

The Elements Embedded in the Goals of the Abu Dhabi Vision 2030

Elements	Mechanisms
Achieving a Stable and Sustainable Economy in the Emirate of Abu Dhabi	Building a sustainable economy will be fulfilled through the diversification and expansion of the business base within the various sectors. The construction of a sustainable economy will also be realized by taking steps to improve the competitiveness of the domestic economic sectors, stimulating the small and medium-sized enterprise sectors, promoting innovation in value-added sectors and focusing on sectors with heavy use of capital targeting the development process. As for building a balanced economy, it will be accomplished through the development of national resources, particularly by empowerment of young people and their preparation for the work market. This process pre-requisites the reviewing of the curricula and encouraging young people to work on a part time basis. It also requires the promotion of vocational education opportunities, the economic empowerment of women, the polarization of foreign skilled expertise, and the acceleration of the pace of development in remote areas.

**Policies and
Plans Required
to Build a
Sustainable
and Balanced
Economy in
Abu Dhabi**

In order to construct a sustainable and balanced economy, several policies and plans should be activated. These policies will operate on an open and available business frontier. Thereupon, the establishment of an effective business environment through efficient coordination on all federal and local levels is essential to the success of these policies. Furthermore, the existence of a transparent judicial system and modern investment legislation in addition to the promotion of the image of the local business environment on the international investment arena and the facilitation of the government's procedures are integral to the success of the future economic policies mentioned above.

In the same vein, the basics of the future plans for the establishment of a sustainable and balanced economy necessitate the control of financial procedures by securing a variety of sources and financial revenues, and by achieving optimal government spending policies. These policies will be activated through the principle of institutional planning and the financial development of the bond market in cooperation with major international institutions, in addition to providing active and influential regulatory and supervisory frameworks for the banking and insurance sectors. Integral to this policy is the development of new and long-term investment mechanisms to redirect surplus liquidity towards the financing of development projects in the Emirate, in addition to controlling inflation levels through more effective monetary policies.

Moreover, the labor policies aiming to build a sustainable and balanced economy will work towards attracting increasing numbers of skilled hands and foreign expertise without undermining the domestic policies which seek to accelerate the participation of the UAE citizens in the labor force, especially in the private sector, through increased investment in education and training.

Furthermore, the labor and residence policies will be linked to periodical assessments of the actual needs of the labor market, and the labor policies will depend on the development of the educational paradigm to achieve optimal use of the employment-oriented education sector.

Constructing a sustainable and balanced economy requires the existence of a strong and developed infrastructure able to keep up with expected economic growth in addition to the implementation of policies to ensure energy security in the future. Likewise the development of infrastructure in the field of transport, especially in airports, harbors and roads, in addition to providing highly efficient structures with regard to communication and information technology, and taking into account the issue of environmental sustainability.

Diversification of Economic Engines in the Future	Abu Dhabi's Vision depends on diversifying the Emirate's economy through the development of a number of sectors which are expected to grow at an annual rate higher than 7.5%, such as the energy sector (including oil and gas), and the sectors of transport, petrochemical industries, minerals, aviation, aerospace, defense, pharmaceutical industries, biotechnology, tourism, trade, logistics, finance and media. According to current plans, the coming two decades will witness a reduction in the dependence on the oil and gas sector.
The Emirati Human Capital as a Basis and Value	Abu Dhabi's vision depends on raising the productivity levels of the citizens, through the development of a solid education policy to ensure full employment of the citizens. Integral to this process is the attraction of external expertise and foreign labor equipped with special skills to maintain the vitality of the economy. At the same time, the numbers of employees with a university degree or its equivalent will be doubled in the work market, in addition to a focus on specialized and applied education.

Reading through the basic elements contained in the Emirates Vision 2021 and the Abu Dhabi Vision 2030 as expressed in the brief description in the aforementioned tables, it becomes accurate that the two visions seek to emphasize eight points constituting the fundamental pillars underpinning the construction of the UAE future, **as follows:**

- **Centralizing national identity, culture and moderate Islamic values:**

The two Visions are primarily concerned with the promotion of the values of loyalty and belonging to the Emirati homeland, the preservation of Arabic language and moderate Islamic values in addition to the authentic and peculiar traditions of the UAE in terms of personal privacy and excellence.

- **Establishing modern armed forces equipped with the latest sophisticated weapons:** The two Visions reached the consensus that the protection of the interests of the homeland and its citizens requires the preparation of the armed forces at the level of the trained human cadres, armaments and equipment in order to maintain the achievements of the people of the UAE and deter enemies who plan to cause harm to the country or jeopardize its sovereignty.
- **Following the footsteps of the Founding Fathers:** The agreement on complying with the goals and values set by the founding fathers and following their approach in institution-building and abiding to their faith in the solidarity and cohesion of the Federal Union state.
- Taking responsibility for homeland development and upholding the status of citizenship, in addition to adopting the bases and tenets pertaining to the vision of the founding fathers which should be considered as fortress and sanctuary for all.
- **Responsibility Partnership:** The agreement on responsibility partnership on multiple levels, including the commitment to the constitution as a final reference to the authorities and jurisdictions at the federal and local paradigms. The agreement on the continuation of mutual coordination between federal and local authorities, which gave the Union an advanced status since its foundation, will be preserved in the future.
- **The Planning and Preparation for the Future Require the Construction of Empowerment and Development Programs:** The empowerment, updating and development programs which reflected the continuous progress of the Union are endorsed by the two visions. Further, the empowerment program

initiated by His Highness, the president of the UAE, which was launched in 2005 and the ten-year plan besides the federal government strategies combined with the Abu Dhabi plan, in addition to development programs in educational and health fields as well as all other services are future-oriented projects utilizing the planning policy as an approach to reach comprehensive development.

- **Establishing a Modern Homeland Equipped with Sophisticated Technological Basis and Efficient Infrastructure:** Both Visions aspire to establish a modern and sophisticated homeland based on an advanced and cutting-edge technological infrastructure and relying on Emirati achievements in this regard during the past.
- **Establishing an Effective Judicial System to Achieve Sovereignty and the Rule of Law:** Both visions agree on the importance of securing an efficient legislative environment through which people feel confidence in the justice of the judicial system. The judicial system's legislations should keep pace with the latest developments in the area of law enforcement in order to enhance the status of the UAE as a state of law. Both visions also agree to improve the governance of the judicial system and the judiciary services in addition to the development of related regulations and procedures to ensure the rights of individuals and institutions.
- **The Optimal Investment of the Homeland's Human Potential and Material Resources:** Both visions agreed on the necessity of the optimal investment of the revenues and potential natural and mineral resources of the UAE. The two visions also recommend the investment of the unique and

strategic location of the country in addition to its trained and qualified human potential who will contribute to a strong and stable country in the future.

Finally, the state development basically means the development of the citizen because the citizen is an integral part of the state. Likewise the state sponsors its citizens, and safeguards their rights. The state is also entrusted with the constitutional freedoms of its citizens. Alternately, the citizen is the most important entity in the structure of the state. Therefore, the citizen is responsible for the defense of the state's territory and the preservation of its independence, and the affirmative interaction with its growth and development.

Notes

- ^{1.} The word of H. H. Sheikh Kalifa Bin Zayed Al Nahyan, president of the UAE on the occasion of the 40th National Day on 1 December 2011. The word is available on the website of the UAE President on the following link: <http://www.uaepresident.ae/AR/TheLeader/Speeches/Pages/Union40.aspx>
- ^{2.} The United Arab Emirates, the Executive Council of the Abu Dhabi Emirate, the public policy agenda 2007-2008. The agenda is available on the website of the Executive Council of the Abu Dhabi Emirate.
- ^{3.} The Executive Council of the Abu Dhabi Emirate: <http://gsec.abudhabi.ae/Sites/GSEC/Content/AR/PDF/Publications/policy-agenda-2007-08,property=pdf.pdf>

References

Government Documents and Publications:

- ^{1.} The United Arab Emirates, The UAE Vision 2020, the official website of the vision on the Website. [ads/UAЕ-
http://www.vision2021.ae/downloVision2021-Brochure-Arabic.pdf](http://www.vision2021.ae/downloVision2021-Brochure-Arabic.pdf)
- ^{2.} [http://gsec.abudhabi.ae/Sites/GSEC/Content/AR/PDF/Publications/economic-vision-2030-
fullversion, property=pdf.pdf](http://gsec.abudhabi.ae/Sites/GSEC/Content/AR/PDF/Publications/economic-vision-2030-fullversion, property=pdf.pdf)
- ^{3.} The UAE Constitution, articles (89-90-91).
- ^{4.} The General Secretariat of the National Federal Council: the Rules of Procedure, Articles 106 and 116, Abu Dhabi.
- ^{5.} [http://gsec.abudhabi.ae/Sites/GSEC/Content/AR/PDF/Publications/policy-agenda-2007-
08,property=pdf.pdf](http://gsec.abudhabi.ae/Sites/GSEC/Content/AR/PDF/Publications/policy-agenda-2007-08,property=pdf.pdf)
- ^{6.} http://www.moca.gov.ae/?wpfb_dl=9
- ^{7.} The UAE Official Gazette, Decree of the Supreme Council of the Union no. (3) for 2005, No. (442) January 2004.
- ^{8.} The UAE Official Gazette, Federal Law no. 7 for 2009 regarding the cancellation and amendments of Federal Law no 7 for 1993 regarding the establishment of the Federal Environment Authority, No. (498) September 2009.
- ^{9.} <http://www.uaepresident.ae/AR/TheLeader/Speeches/Pages/Union40.aspx>
- ^{10.} UAE, Ministry of Economics, Social and Economic Developments Report (2005-2010), Abu Dhabi 2012.

- ¹¹. The General Secretariat of the National Federal Council, The UAE President's Speeches, Abu Dhabi 2003.

Books and Newspapers :

- ¹. Mohamed Bin Huweiden, The UAE Federal System: Theory, Reality and Future, Emirates Center for Strategic Studies and Research, 2010.
- ². Mohamed Kamel Obaid, Government Systems and the UAE Constitution: Analytic and Comparative Study of the UAE Constitution, In the Light of General Constitutional Rules and Contemporary Governmental Systems, Dubai, 1998, Al Bayan Press.
- ³. Mohamed Younis, "The UAE Environment Protection Experience," Emirates Center for Strategic Studies and Research, Strategic Studies Series, No. (142) Abu Dhabi, 2009.
- ⁴. The Reality of Education and Future Prospects for Its Development in the UAE, Emirates Center for Strategic Studies and Research, Abu Dhabi, 2011.
- ⁵. Al Khaleej Newspaper, 2013.

Global Indicators:

- ¹. http://hdr.undp.org/en/media/HDR_2013_AR_complete.pdf
- ². The Global Gender Gap Report 2013: http://www3.weforum.org/docs/WEF_GenderGap_Report_2013.pdf
- ³. The Global Competitiveness Report 2013–2014: http://www3.weforum.org/docs/WEF_GlobalCompetitivenessReport_2013-14.pdf
- ⁴. KOF Index of Globalization 2013: http://globalization.kof.ethz.ch/media/filer_public/2013/03/25/press_release_2013_en.pdf
http://globalization.kof.ethz.ch/media/filer_public/2013/03/25/rankings_2013.pdf